

MAJOR ROLIN G. WATKINS

HISTORY OF

Monterey and Santa Cruz Counties, California

CRADLE OF CALIFORNIA'S HISTORY AND ROMANCE

Dating from the Planting of the Cross of Christendom upon the shores of Monterey Bay, by Fr. Junipero Serra, and those intrepid adventurers who accompanied him, down to the present day.

MAJOR ROLIN G. WATKINS
Editor.

VOLUME I
Illustrated

NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

Chicago
The S. J. Clarke Publishing Co.
1925

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
707242 A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1934 L

NEW YORK
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

FOREWORD

By Major Rolin G. Watkins

I happened to glance at the calendar this evening and noted that this was the fourth anniversary of the first of a series of trips with my old friend "Sunny Jim" Robinson, for many years chief deputy sheriff of Monterey County, during the course of which he showed me many of the beauties of my new home, and told me many interesting things of the country when it was younger, more sparsely settled, more "in the raw" than it is today. We were bound for King City, "The Little City by the Big Bridge," down in the southern end of the county, there to meet with a party of "Sunny's" cronies for an evening's pleasure. As we passed down the Salinas Valley, past Chualar, Gonzales, Soledad, Rancho Los Coches and finally down that long sweep of wonderful valley below Greenfield, where the orchards are now taking the place of the wheat and barley fields, my companion told me stories galore of interesting men he had met in his long tenure of office at the county seat. Tiburcio Vasquez, the terrible, was but one of those whom he had known. And he told me of the time when he and Judge "Davy" Wallace, two barefoot boys, met that worthy up on the hills above Corral de Tierra. Told how "Davy," now dispenser of justice in the city courts at Salinas had boasted of what he would do to Vasquez if he should come across him. And then of their meeting with the man of mystery, and the final culmination of the adventure, when they went scampering off down the hills with the Vasquez threat to "cut off their ears" if they told of his whereabouts ringing in their ears.

"Sunny" also told me of another manner of man—of the one who came to Monterey, a penniless cabin boy, and who lived to be one of the greatest in all the county, both in money and in power. These and many others were introduced to me, through the medium of the man who had been born, had lived,

and is still living, (although quite an old man), in this beauty spot of the golden state of California.

This trip was but one of many of the same. To Watsonville, to Castroville, to Spreckels, where stands the largest beet sugar mill in the world; to Santa Cruz, and still later, in company with my friends Cleveland and Fitspatrick, to dear old Monterey, "Where the West Began," whose streets have known the foot prints of men of three nations—the Spaniard, the Mexican and the American; where Fremont, the great "Pathfinder" came on his first visit to California, to pave the way for America's entry; where Robert Louis Stevenson, after having been picked up tired, famished and half delirious along the road by old Jules Simoneau, spent many a day, planning his masterpiece, "Treasure Island," than which there is no greater story for American boyhood.

As I listened to the stories of my old friend there came this query to my lips: "I wonder if it would be possible to write a history of this section, that would live for the future generations to quote as being authentic of the past?"

The opportunity came, in time. Whether or not I have succeeded is not for me to say. The history, such as it is, is to me a living, breathing record of events which have led from the dim and misty past, when the padres strode over the hills from Monterey to Mission del Rio Carmelo, down to the days of the Beauty Pageant in Santa Cruz, Apple Festival in Watsonville, the justly famous California Rodeo in Salinas, and our own annual Spanish Fiesta here on Monterey Peninsula.

There is much of the early history of Monterey and Santa Cruz counties, so interwoven with the history of the entire golden state, that the historian faces an unusual task in cutting out this or leaving in that, which may, or may not be pertinent. It is safe to say that no other counties of California furnish such a problem to the historian. Not even San Francisco, with its "Vigilante Days," or the Mother Lode counties, with the romance of the "Days of old, Days of Gold, Days of '49."

Hence, it is that, from an amazing wealth of detail collected by my secretary, Mr. Nelson Valjean, I have selected that which I thought best, and have, to the best of my ability, woven it into a compilation which I hope will be accepted by my readers as the best effort of one who feels that better hands than mine, a

better intellect than mine, would have been beset in the undertaking.

Much of that which would have been what we newspapermen call "interesting reading" had to be eliminated from the text in favor of the actual facts which form the history of the counties. How well would I have liked to have told herein many of the stories which I have heard during my brief stay in this section. Stories both interesting and amusing, but which had to be dropped from consideration in order to get all the necessary facts into the document, so that a connected story of the two counties, in their relation to the history of the entire state might be given the reader. Probably many a so-called "old-timer" might have written a better history; a more interesting one. Mine deals wholly with historical fact, which, after all, is what the publishers wished.

In making up this compilation it has been necessary to quote, at some length, from various histories. To retell the stories of others it would be presumptuous on my part to attempt to improve upon the telling. To such of those works from which I have quoted I pay due respect. Herewith I submit a list of same, after first asking the pardon of the authors for making use of far better material than I could manufacture:

"California, Its History and Romance," John Stephen McGroarty.

"Chimes of Mission Bells," Maria Antonia Field.

"Handbook of Monterey," Bacon & Company.

"History of California—The American Period," Robert Glass Cleland.

"History of California—The Spanish Period," Charles E. Chapman.

"History of Santa Cruz County," E. S. Harrison.

"History of Santa Cruz County," Edward Martin.

"Historical Sketch of Santa Cruz County," Wallace W. Elliott & Company.

"History of the State of California," J. M. Guinn.

"In and Out of the Old Missions," George Wharton James.

"Missions and Missionaries of California," Fr. Zephyrin Englehardt.

"The Architectural History of Mission San Carlos Borromeo," Frances R. Smith.

The newspapers of both counties were also most kind. The following gave me access to their files, and assisted in every way possible to make this volume a creditable one:

Watsonville Pajaronian.
Peninsula Daily Herald, Monterey.
Monterey Cypress.
Pacific Grove Review.
Salinas Index.
Salinas Journal.
Salinas Valley Rustler, King City.
San Andraes Independent.
San Francisco Bulletin.
San Francisco Examiner.
Santa Cruz News.
Santa Cruz Sentinel.
Watsonville Register.

I have quoted from the files of all the above. In addition I have taken the liberty to re-quote some pertinent press dispatches of the United Press Associations.

Libraries also contributed their part. Those who aided are:

Monterey City Library.
Monterey County Library.
Salinas City Library.
Santa Cruz City Library.

The chambers of commerce in all the principal towns all lent a hand.

There were many individuals upon whom either myself or Mr. Valjean called, and to some of whom I must pay my respects for a great assistance. They are:

G. P. Anderson, Santa Cruz.

Mrs. Anna Geil Andresen, who supplied data under the headings of "Convent," "Presidio," and "Viscaino-Serra Tree."

C. E. Bulmer, Watsonville.

Harry A. Greene, Monterey.

A. C. Jochmus, Pacific Grove.

Maria Antonia Field, Monterey.

But this note of explanation would be far from complete were I to omit my very great thanks to Mr. Valjean for the splendid research work performed by him, largely as "a labor of love." I have every reason to vouch for every detail of the ma-

terial he gathered for me, and feel sure that his data will pass muster under the most inquisitive eye. Without him and his effort this work would have fallen far short of what I think it has attained.

And so, with this introduction, let's leave the world of generalities behind, and start down El Camino Real, "The Kings' Highway," which leads to Monterey, where the curtain of civilization first arose on the shores of the Pacific.

CONTENTS

MONTEREY AND SANTA CRUZ COUNTIES

		Page
FOREWORD		5

PART ONE

Chapter		
I.	Meet the Counties	17
II.	A Contrast of the Times	19
III.	Before the White Man Came	41
IV.	The Early Chinese in California	49
V.	An Era of Changes—The Coming of the "Whites"	52
VI.	The Lure of Spain	53
VII.	The First Sight of Monterey	61
VIII.	England Takes a Hand	65
IX.	Spanish Landing at Monterey	68
X.	Father Junipero Serra—His Life	72
XI.	Father Serra Arrives at Monterey	81
XII.	Removal of Mission San Carlos to the New Site	90
XIII.	San Carlos Mission—Yesterday and Today	92
XIV.	The Function of the Mission	105
XV.	The Continued Work of Father Serra	114
XVI.	Juan Bautista de Anza	120
XVII.	Felipe de Neve	132
XVIII.	A Colorful Yet Quiet Era	138
XIX.	Commemorating Father Serra's Death	146
XX.	Father Serra's Successors	154
XXI.	Contemporary Developments	164
XXII.	More Changes—The Beginning of Discord	172
XXIII.	Under Mexican Rule	192
XXIV.	Forerunning the Bear Flag Revolt	228
XXV.	The Bear Flag is Raised	239
XXVI.	Victorious America	266
XXVII.	Nuggets of Gold	280

PART TWO

XXVIII.	Monterey County—City of Monterey	285
XXIX.	Present Day Monterey	312
XXX.	Points of Interest in the Old Capital	339
XXXI.	Sister Cities of Monterey	372

Chapter		Page
XXXII.	The County Seat	379
XXXIII.	Promising Communities of Monterey County	389
XXXIV.	Santa Cruz County	403
XXXV.	Present Day Santa Cruz Contrasted With That of Yesterday	434
XXXVI.	Points of Interest in Santa Cruz City	466
XXXVII.	A Diamond in the Gem County	473
XXXVIII.	A Jaunt Throughout the County	483

PART ONE

Monterey and Santa Cruz Counties

CHAPTER I

MEET THE COUNTIES.

Blue, lapping waters of the Pacific have been kind to the California coast, not gouging great holes in it to the devastation of fertile lands nor wracking it with storm and tide, but gently caressing it with briny kiss and foam-flecked fingers. Across the United States, on the Atlantic seaboard, the ocean has been crueler, making more coves, bays and islands, it is true, but threshing and bubbling during stormy seasons like a great cauldron, often doing untold mischief to life and land.

Along the peaceful California coast line, however, the sea has, in its fickle moments, blessed a few sections with harbors and peninsulas that even the Atlantic cannot better as places of shelter for ships and for seamen. Among these favored spots are the Monterey Peninsula and the beach city of Santa Cruz, twin guardians of the Monterey Bay and strategic points for both Santa Cruz and Monterey counties. You can cover the ordinary map of these counties with the palm of your hand and still have room enough for a sparkling portion of the Pacific.

If your nature cries for great vistas of rolling desert, this section may not intrigue your fancy. But pause, study this territory in relation to neighboring lands and to the currents of the Pacific. You will learn that ships, if left to themselves, naturally drift here and that here, in the quiet waters of the Monterey Bay, pirates of old, adventurers and settlers found an irresistible call. Now, if you wil pocket your map and set out on foot to study this region, you will find it actually abounding in stirring history, no less than in a natural, rugged, and in

places, a rare and fragile, beauty. Could such a place not win a little corner of appeal in the hearts of the coldest? This, then, is the scene of our history, the Spanish land of yesterday, the American country of youth and of promise today.

CHAPTER II

A CONTRAST OF THE TIMES

By studying the two counties as they exist today, we can proceed with their historical development with a clearer understanding than would otherwise be possible. We can vision the great changes, the development, that came about from the time Indians overran the country to the present, when the white man is supreme, improving the country, bringing it to a high degree of civilization. In looking at it as it exists today, therefore, we can profitably turn to "A Ramble through Monterey County," as prepared by the Monterey Board of Supervisors:

Whales, apricots, golf, alfalfa, cheese, grapes, sugar, polo, cypress, beans, apples, pears, gooseberries, oaks, strawberries, salmon, porkers! Mountains, valleys, the ocean, bench lands, white sand dunes, jagged coasts, pastoral landscapes, sunshine! Where does one start to tell about it?

Monterey County—the county of a thousand and one surprises; the land where at every turn a new surprise awaits you; a valley where knickerbockered sportsmen rub elbows with working men; a playground and a work shop; a land of abundance; of fat cattle and waving grain fields; of unbelievable landscapes; a myriad of strange lands, all rolled into one community.

A county, whose sea-scapes and marine views and coast-line are renowned the world over—proud of its justly famous Monterey Peninsula. It is vain of its history, steeped in romance, landmarked by the outposts of early civilization. It is the mecca of thousands of tourists who, like the writer, go away filled with the wonder of this panorama, that unrolls itself with all the color and romance and beauty of the fabled tales of the Arabian Nights.

I have sunburned the roof of my mouth gaping at the Palisades of Broadway. I have barked my shins on the rocky boulders of Colorado's mountain park-ways. I have braved the buck brush of Maine. I have basked in Miami's tropical laziness and

shivered in Medicine Hat's blizzards. I have sweated and toiled in the smoke and grime of the coal country and bustled and rustled on Michigan Avenue's wind-swept lake-front, and searched the Creole towns of the border. Roll them all into one, minus dirt and grime, sans ice and snow, pick out the beauties of all of them, leave behind the ugliness, and still there lacks description of the beauties of Monterey County.

Monterey County lies on the Pacific Coast about midway of San Francisco and Los Angeles. It is a land of romance and history, a land of scenic beauty and a land of fat production which is yet to be brought forth to its greatest fulfillment.

Did you ever see sixteen hundred acres of healthy young fruit trees about to come into bearing, all in one magnificent orchard? Did you ever see sweet peas of every imaginable hue grown in ten-acre lots? You eastern housewives who pet along that straggly line by the back-yard fence and feel proud of the blossoms you get from it every other day, can you imagine what it would look like to see acre after acre, gleaming masses growing as rank and luxuriant as fields of clover? First a strip of purple (a strip hundreds of feet wide and a half mile long), then a heavenly blue, then a pink, then a white, then a crimson, then a black carmine, then the variable colors, so speckled, streaked and changeable as to defy the color classifications.

Did you ever see one hundred and forty acres of strawberries stretched out in shiny, clean rows at the base of a Maxfield Parrish mountain, glorious in its blues and golds? Did you ever see alfalfa raked up, nose high, waiting to be stacked and the ground it rests upon nearly ready for the next cutting? Did you ever see hundreds of clean, black and white Holsteins, knee-deep in June, sleek and contented because food was abundant and flies were non-existent? Did you ever see clean, cool, sparkling artesian water bubbling up out of the earth to flow down innumerable rows of almond and olive, apricot and apple, pear and grape and what-not?

You dwellers in the flat places, you toilers in the muck and dirt of steel cities, you settlers on the prairies who look out on the same endless leveled monotony, day after day,—listen. Imagine a home in a valley where you can look up from your plow or desk and see mountains and oceans of color and change, every minute of your day.

Do you look forward to your day of rest, which means, possibly, cranking up your car only to rattle out to a slight change of the same? Can't you see the wonder of days of sunshine, of crops that grow like scandal, of cool, ocean breezes and sleepful nights three hundred and sixty-five times in the year? Here you can leave your plow and, in an hour's time, battle a monstrous salmon for supremacy. Your holidays can all be different. This day on the bay, that one in the mountains, the next one in the city, the next one back in some secluded arroyo, ideal for picnicking and just the spot for a home for some fellow who is looking for his heart's desire.

Jutting out into the Pacific Ocean where the currents of five tides meet and struggle, is that promontory known as Monterey Peninsula. Sweeping to the north of it is the crescent-shaped Monterey Bay, and to the south of it Carmel Bay, each a feast of color that no artist can mix on his palet. One famous writer says of it: "Here is a strip of coast which is one of nature's unique gifts. Here are rugged headlands against which the blue Pacific waters are breaking in never-ending fantasies of white spray; sheltered pools and lagoons between cliffs where clear, restless water assumes the marvelous, almost irridescent hues of rocks and sea-life—ochre, sienna, madder, viridian, and darkest bottle green; tree-mantled hills that follow the shore, now withdrawing from the sea behind idyllic stretches of level greensward, now advancing to the very brinks of the cliffs. This forest is composed in large part of two trees which are renowned to this spot, the Monterey cypress and Monterey pine. The cypress is among the hardiest and most adventurous of growing things. It sends its roots down into crevices in the rocks and clings to wind-swept promontories where it may almost catch the storm's spray. It is among the oldest of living things; the fantastic forms of its bleached branches and heavy mat of black foliage bespeak ages of endurance. The pine is perhaps more approachable, more human, but no less picturesque. Young trees, or those in the protection of the forest, are fresh in hue and full in form. In isolated groups or groves its forms and massing become superb. The pinetas of Del Monte are in no way inferior to the far-famed Italian ones of the Borghese Gardens on the outskirts of Naples. From the hillside forest commanding Pebble Beach and Carmel Bay, one overlooks a view equal to any of

those famous foreign ones which have become parts of tourist tradition. Through and over ranks of descending trees one glimpses the white curve where sea meets land, along the cliff tops an emerald margin (the loveliest of golf links), and up and down the coast long blue promontories that reach out into bluer waters.

It is an orthodox tradition that holds there exists no scenic rival to that strip of French and Italian shoreline known as the Riviera. Some day it will be realized that it is no idle, provincial boast to set on a footing of equality, the California coast from Del Monte, through Monterey and Carmel, and to the cliffs below Carmel Bay; above all, perhaps, the region of Pebble Beach along the famous "Seventeen-Mile Drive."

Perhaps you wonder if there is anything to the Monterey Peninsula other than scenery. Absolutely! On this Peninsula you will find the old and new towns of Monterey, Pacific Grove, Seaside, and Carmel-by-the-Sea. In Monterey you will find the San Carlos Mission, and near Carmel-by-the-Sea is the famous Carmel Mission. And Hotel Del Monte, possibly the best known and certainly the most beautiful pleasure resort, known throughout the civilized world, is but a short distance from the city.

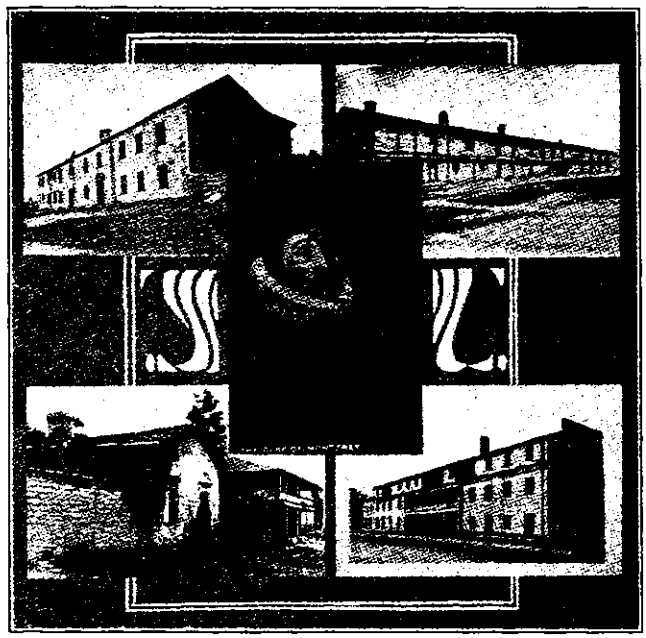
It is easily accessible to San Francisco, by train, motor and water. It has schools of the highest standard and churches that are a credit to the community. Fathers and mothers looking for school facilities for their growing brood can rest assured that Monterey County Schools offer them the best that can be found.

Monterey is boastful of its seaside climate. There is a mean temperature of 56.6 degrees during the twelve months of the year. Records from the United States Weather Bureau show a mean temperature for four successive years as ranging from 50 to 59 degrees.

Monterey has several up-to-date hotels and the finest of cafes, and the lover of sea foods can find them in great variety.

Monterey has ever been the mecca of artists and those of the literary world. Many of national repute make their homes in the vicinity and many more spend their vacations there throughout the summer.

Here you will find the first theater ever built in California, where Jenny Lind appeared in concert. Then there is the Sherman Rose cottage, where W. T. Sherman marched into the heart

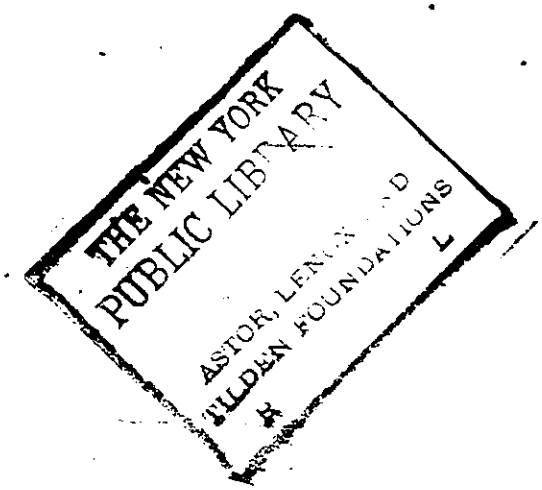


Old Convent Old Quarters
Duke of Monterey
Sherman and Halleck Headquarters Washington Hotel



First House in California
Senorita Bonifacio

Sherman Rose Cottage
Custom House


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

of Senorita Bonifacio. Here you will find the quaint, adobe, flower-entangled homes of ancient days that housed the proud and arrogant Spanish families. And just a step distant will be the newer buildings of modern business activities. It is here that you will start the famous Seventeen-Mile Drive.

The Seventeen-Mile Drive begins and ends at Del Monte Hotel and encircles the whole Peninsula. It runs through Monterey, Pacific Grove, Pebble Beach, and back to the hotel. It passes through a seven-thousand-acre park, a park now divided into villa sites, reached by a system of driveways all enjoyed by the public under reasonable restrictions. The scenic effect continually shifts as you round each curve. Now you are in a forest of Holy Land trees, next you feel that you are in Pennsylvania, then you drop down into Illinois, back into California, then into another country as different from the last as the first was from anything you had ever seen before.

Seaside (of which we shall later speak in detail) is a neighboring community to Monterey, nestling down on the opposite side of the bay. This, of necessity, must be the future factory and industrial district of the Peninsula. When the projected harbor developments are matters of accomplishment, Seaside will be a hive of industry. Already far-visioned men have seen this and are planning for the culmination of such projects.

This community has already earned a commendable reputation as a poultry-raising center. Because of the non-alkalin character of the soil, which has a beneficial effect upon poultry, it has been found that eggs produced in this region will keep for a much longer period in cold storage than those coming from any other part of the United States.

Monterey stands high in commercial fishing. Such famous fisheries as Booths, whose products are distributed throughout the world, here pack the best of their products. As an indication of the importance of this industry, 850,000 cases of sardines were packed at Monterey in 1919, or about 70 per cent of all sardines packed on the Pacific Coast. The value of the fish pack of Monterey in 1920 was approximately $5,500,000, or one-fourth of the pack value of the entire State. 68,000,000 pounds of sardines were taken in that year at Monterey. The packing season extends over several months and sardine fishers go but a very short distance from the shore-line to their fishing fields. In other

fishing centers the pack will last but thirty or forty days each year.

Monterey county controls its own water-front, which cannot be said of any other community on the Pacific Coast, and even now gigantic water-front and harbor plans are being contemplated that will make it one of the main seaports of the United States. Already important pipe lines have been run into Monterey. California's famous state highways link Monterey with the rest of the State, and the new Sky-line, Coast-line highway, now under construction, will find Monterey a mid-way point between Los Angeles and San Francisco.

One of the most important industries on the south shore of Monterey Bay is the sand and gravel industry. Giant deposits of pure white sand abound throughout the region, and each year finds an increasing number of carloads of both white and common sands and clean gravel being shipped to distant points for construction work.

Close to Monterey, also on Monterey Bay is the "Winter Paradise." One of the main points of interest in Pacific Grove is the marine gardens, which can be viewed from glass-bottom boats. Hotels, apartments and beautiful homes help to make the city the beautiful place it is. Pacific Grove also has been called the "Dahlia City," because of the immense dahlia raising industry that three first found root. Pacific Grove is one of the first points of interest on the famous Seventeen-Mile Drive. Temperature, climate, recreation facilities, business activities, are on a par with those of Monterey. There is splendid fishing in the bay at Pacific Grove, and one can get sardines, abalone, rock fish, mackerel, boccaccio, squid, smelt, cod, blue fish, halibut, sanddabs, mussels, perch, sole, sea bass, flounders, salmon, skate, and if you like that kind, octopus.

Then there is that famous pleasure resort, Hotel Del Monte, in the center of the one hundred and twenty-six-acre floral park. Because of its famous golf course, California State golf championships have been held here every year. Here polo is played extensively; trap shooting, fishing and hunting are available for the guests. The property in the total is 18,000 acres, claimed to be the largest resort in the world.

Twenty-two miles southwest of the hotel, at the junction of Carmel River and the San Clement Creek, is a dam constructed

at a cost of $1,000,000, which assures the people of the peninsula an abundant supply of cool mountain water at all times.

Pebble Beach faces Carmel Bay and is on the Seventeen-Mile Drive, five miles distant from Monterey and Pacific Grove. It is an ideal home site and happy is the man who can build a home there.

Carmel-by-the-Sea lies just south of Carmel Bay. In the Carmel region it is never colder than 55 degrees nor hotter than 65 degrees. Carmel-by-the-Sea has become nationally known as an artists' colony. The greater part of the residents of the town have devoted their lives to the aesthetic arts. Here are college professors, artists, writers, poets, who make play out of work, and love of the beautiful and distaste of the conventional is easily seen as one views the public buildings or golf course and the miles of excellent walks throughout its scenic wonders.

As you go back into the interior of the county, between the Santa Lucia and Gabilan Mountain ranges, one begins to leave the purely scenic beauties behind. Is there anything more beautiful than waving grain fields, sleek cattle knee-deep in alfalfa; glossy, green orchards, hundred-acre berry fields, backed by cloud-crowned mountain ranges? The interior is a section devoted to the growing of things other than trees and rocks and marine views. I should call this part of the county the more commercial end of it.

Salinas Valley is the largest of the inter-mountain valleys of the coast regions, being about one hundred miles long by from six to ten miles wide. A great body of bottom land lies below and northward from the Salinas hills, extending up to the extreme south end of the county, an area of approximately five hundred square miles, broad and level, and so fertile that it has been spoken of as "The Valley of the Nile."

The soil varies from decomposed granite to heavy, rich, black adobe, but includes a greater part of the light and heavy sandy loams. It is substantially a delta region, and delta always means production. The soil depth is very great, the water level is close to the surface, assuring land owners of a constant and undiminishing water supply.

This valley can be well divided into three classes of land: The rich bottom land, the mesa, table or bench lands, and the uplands or foothills, all tillable to a greater or lesser extent, producing

all known California crops with the exception of oranges and citrus fruits.

The rainfall averages fifteen to eighteen inches during the winter. Because of the underground flow of the Salinas River, many sections are farmed by very slight irrigation. Perhaps 20,000 acres are now watered by gravity ditches and others by means of pumps or wells. Most of the land needs irrigation but once a year. In this connection there is promise of Government irrigation, which is needed by the valley farmers, and it is obvious that he who comes now will be in an enviable position when Salinas Valley has come into its own as a thickly settled, up-to-date community.

The Salinas River is the largest submerged stream in America and a report made to the United States Geological Survey declares that the water flow of this river "properly distributed, is sufficient for the needs of winter and spring irrigation." Three dam sites have been selected for their practical development—the Arroyo Seco, the Currier Reservoir, and the Mathews Reservoir, aggregating 94,000 acre feet of water. There is possibly no valley in the country that can be completely irrigated at such a small expenditure of money as the Salinas River Valley country. The land itself is easily drained and the soil is of such character that there is little waste of water.

The Salinas is a warm valley, but because it lies between the two mountain ranges, a continuous draft is blown inward from the sea, so there is always a cool sea breeze reaching clear to the innermost depths of the valley. The growth of vegetation is practically continuous and any one who farms in the East, with its short growing period, can realize what it means here, where you are given good soil, plenty of moisture and eternal warmth. Here you can plow and plant from November to April, grow grain, fruit and live stock. You can cut alfalfa five times a year and after the last cutting have sufficient pasture for the stock throughout the winter, and of course, winter here does not mean frost and snow and northeasters. There is no waste season in California.

Prominent among the industries in the Salinas Valley is that of dairying and its sister industries, the making of butter and cheese and the manufacture of condensed milk. Monterey County cheese is recognized as the standard of excellence. Plenty of

forage is provided for either dairy or beef herds. Alfalfa grows to the tune of five cuttings a year. Barley is another of the heavy crops, oats grow over your head, beans come up to your armpits, all of which means that the man with the gang plow has independence awaiting him in Monterey County.

It is hard to say which is the leader in Monterey County, dairy herds or the breeding of live stock for the market. Because of the climatic conditions here, cattle mature earlier than in colder climates, and it is safe to say that the average two-year-old beef is greater in weight than a three-year-old in other states.

The days of immense land holdings are past and all the large tracts of land are gradually being broken up into small units. There is many a square mile of land available for grazing in the county, which in addition to the best pulp available from the sugar mills, assures cattle raisers of plenty of food for either beef or milk herds.

The breeding of thoroughbred horses is one of the industries in Monterey County. Sheep and goats also come in for a goodly standing.

It has been estimated that a dairy herd can be handled here for 60 per cent of the expense encountered with the same size herd in the East where hard winters cut down production and increase cost of feeding. While there are some very wonderful dairy farms, with all the latest improvements, as silos, overhead litter carriers, steel stanchions and concrete floors, there are many smaller dairies where such modern equipment is not seen but which, nevertheless, are very profitable to their owners. Monterey County is dotted with the many creameries within its boundaries, in addition to several evaporated cream plants. In the vicinity of Gonzales the great development of this industry is seen in the plant of the Alpine Evaporated Cream Company, with an annual output of nearly a quarter of a millon cases. Such a production takes the output of thousands of cows within the Gonzales radius.

The acreage devoted to alfalfa in Monterey County is increasing each year because of the ideal growing conditions in California. While the average yield amounts to five cuttings a year, many farmers succeed in getting six and seven, and not infrequently eight, with an average yield of one and a half tons per acre cutting. Alfalfa is always in demand and because of

the easy checking of the ground and the simple drainage problems to be met, it is a crop profitable in many ways.

The growing of sugar beets is also a big feature in the commercial activity of this section. The largest sugar beet factory in the world with a capacity of 4,300 tons a day, is located a short distance from Salinas, the county seat. This sugar beet factory holds the world's record for the cutting of sugar beets and the production of refined sugar. Five thousand tons of sugar beets were cut in one day, 18,000 sacks of sugar produced in one day.

The Salinas Burbank potato is the prize tuber of California. Production has grown to 14,000 tons annually. As high as 400 bushels can be raised to the acre and a constant demand for this particular variety makes it profitable to handle.

Annual shipments of potatoes from Monterey county in 1915 aggregated $1,500,000. Thousands of acres are given over to the Salinas Burbank potato.

Monterey County is ideal for the growing of any type of fruit with the exception of citrus fruits, although in isolated cases oranges and lemons have been grown, but not with any commercial importance. Back from the coast in the hills everywhere are locations for apricots, peaches, grapes and figs. In the Pajaro Valley you will find large plantings of apples, which have become one of the big industries of the county as a whole. Here the very finest kind is produced and is finding its way into the markets of the world. There are many locations throughout the county where walnuts and almonds are proving prolific and profitable. The strawberries grown here are unexcelled. In the Salinas and Carmel valleys prunes and cherries find the right type of soil for their profitable culture. Apricots and peaches, quinces and olives, are fast being planted throughout the valley. It has been proven within the last year or two that the cultivation of pears, particularly the winter variety, is a profitable undertaking. Sections are being prepared now and divided into small pear orchards. Undoubtedly these will be of immense value to the present-day buyer when they come into bearing.

Small fruits, such as blackberries, raspberries, strawberries, currants, gooseberries, and such, are being planted to more and more acreage each year. The vicinity around King City is fast becoming a gooseberry center, and large tracts of these have already paid their owners a handsome profit.

The Pajaro Valley, part of which is located in Monterey County, is said to be the largest producer of apples in the world. Just that part of it which comes into the boundaries of Monterey County brings in a gross income running into the millions of dollars. Co-existent with the apple industry are the hundreds of packing houses, evaporating plants, cider, vinegar and canning establishments.

Monterey County has been declared by the experts to be the best locality in the country for bees and the production of honey. The foothills as well as the valley afford splendid location for stands, and any one who knows the splendid quality of sage honey will realize what it means for these stands to be located where the wild sage grows in such loose profusion. At this writing there are over eight thousand hives of bees in the county producing close to one-half million pounds of honey a year.

Poultry raisers know that a warm, even, temperate climate is the most suitable for poultry. Monterey County is a veritable paradise for poultry, not only in the raising of fowls for the market, but in egg production. In such a climate, inexpensive housing can be provided, and California in itself is such a tremendous market for all poultry products that chicken raisers never need fear an over-production in this line. Ducks, geese, turkeys and pigeons thrive as successfully as chickens.

Salinas, the county seat of Monterey, is located on the Southern Pacific main line, one hundred and eighteen miles south of San Francisco. While Salinas is an inland city, it has a port of landing at Moss Landing, ten miles distant, where vessels land and discharge and load freight for distant ports. Salinas is a commercial city in every way. The largest sugar beet mill in the world is but three miles from the city's center, and the surrounding territory for miles is made up of the richest acreage in all that section of California. There are good hotels, large business blocks, banks, homes, theaters, churches and several factory enterprises in Salinas. The streets are well paved and a new high school has recently been completed at a cost of over a half million dollars. This, as well as the other schools in the county, is accredited to the University of California. Salinas always has a Big Week annually. This is one of the big attractions of the West and the week is a conglomeration of old rodeo days combined with other entertainment features.

Salinas is growing because the country back of it is growing. This is a rich country, but there is still plenty of room for more farmers, more ranchers, more dairymen, more stockmen and more fruitmen.

Just recently land owners around Salinas have gone into the production of early and late varieties of lettuce for the California market. An indication of the splendid quality of this crop is evidenced in market quotations. The Salinas lettuce is classed as Northern California lettuce. The market quotation on Northern California is $4.75, while Southern California lettuce drops to $2.25. Growers often net from $350 to $400 per acre from this one crop. Rivaling it in productivity and profit is the marketing of artichokes. The rich quality of the soil, the absence of frost, makes this section the best available for these crops in the whole State of California. The entire territory from Pacific Grove to Salinas is adaptable to the growing of bulbs, such as friezias, gladioli and dahlias, and this is rapidly becoming one of the big enterprises of Monterey County. The largest nursery in the world is located near Salinas.

Chualar, one of the smaller towns, is situated in the dairying and grain country, but the last few years have proven that fruit can grow here as profitably as in any other part of the county.

Gonzales is possibly the largest of the dairy centers. Alfalfa is grown throughout the territory and thousands of milk cows dot the pastures. The milk supply is used by the different milk factories, prominent among them being the Alpine Evaporated Cream Company, which maintains a large plant here.

Soledad is also a dairy center and in addition a sugar beet community. Irrigation is well advanced here and during the week that the writer visited the town, approximately $250,000 worth of new building was started or being planned.

Greenfield is bound to grow at a rapid rate because of the richness of the soil in the community and the adaptability of it to the growing of diverse products. Large seed farms are located here, raising onion, radish and cabbage seeds. Large fruit plantings have justified their owners' vision and are bearing heavily. Many beautiful apricot and peach orchards are scattered throughout the Greenfield region and in almost any part of the district one will find large fields of gooseberries. This one product alone is assuming a very respectable size in market returns.

King City is as progressive, if not as large, as Salinas. Excellent hotels and cafes, beautiful homes, broad paved streets, and its location on the new $18,000,000 State Highway makes King City a place of worth-whileness. King City is justly proud of her lighting system, her good water and her schools. Adjacent to the new High School building is the City Auditorium, an imposing structure which does much toward bringing together the community interests in a way that is reflected in the rapid growth of King City. King City is a grain shipping center, as well as a producer of gypsum from the near-by gypsum mines.

San Lucas is in the center of a large area devoted to grain and cattle raising and general farming. The adjoining district to San Lucas is amazingly rich and several small valleys such as Peach Tree, Jolon, Long and White Horse valleys are included in this territory. It is from here that the famous San Lucas horses come, and San Lucas horses in any market in California bring a good price.

San Ardo can be spoken of in the same terms as San Lucas. It is the distributing point for a large portion of the Salinas Valley, and for the products of the Poncho Rico and Pine valleys and Sargent's Canyon, which swell the shipments that go out from this center.

Bradley centers itself in a grain country, but this does not mean that fruit and stock raising cannot be successfully carried out here. This means only that Bradley, as well as the other communities, has not possessed itself of the fullest possibilities, and the only reason it has not is because population in the contingent territory is needed to bring out these wonderful money-making proclivities of the various sections.

Moss Landing has been mentioned before as the seaport for Salinas, but from present indications Moss Landing will be a shipping and industrial center of itself. It is a regular port of call for several steamship lines and a big tonnage of freight is being handled here annually.

At Moss Landing is the only whaling station on the Pacific Coast south of Alaska. The whaling season extends from February to October, and on the average, five whales per week are caught and refined into commercial products here. One of the by-products of this station is fertilizer, and the use of this is being taken advantage of throughout Monterey County. Here,

too, we have gigantic salt works devoted to the manufacture of salt from sea water. This salt, amounting to many thousands of tons annually, is used up and down the coast in packing and fishing industries.

The small home owner or the man who wants a small truck farm will find his hopes best realized in the northern end of the county in the Pajaro district. Adjacent to Aromas are scores of small farms devoted to poultry raising and the production of bush berries, such as loganberries, raspberries, blackberries, etc. Potatoes grown in this region are excellent. Possibly the Pajaro region is best known by its famous apple and apricot orchards. Production here is enormous and Pajaro fruit is in strong demand in all the markets at all times.

Castroville is another center of the dairying and fruit country, as well as being situated in a vegetable belt, where the famous Salinas Burbank potato is planted in large sections.

Watsonville Junction is happy in being in the center of the great apple country and is an important shipping center, being headquarters for a division of the Southern Pacific Railroad.

Spreckels, as its name implies, is the city of workers who are employed, for the most part, in the gigantic sugar mills located here.

Jolon is coming to the front quickly, possibly because of the fact that here vast territories of rich, undeveloped lands are obtainable at very low prices.

Fort Romie is surrounded by large alfalfa growings. It is the home of one of the community farm colonies conducted by the Salvation Army. A century or more ago this region was cultivated by the fathers of the Mission Soledad and the remains of their irrigation system are still seen. In fact, the new irrigating canals closely follow the ones built by the old fathers. It is also a good honey, poultry and dairying vicinity. Fruits do well here. All Fort Romie needs is more people.

In Southern Monterey County is perhaps the best opportunity for home seekers that the county affords, in that intensified production has not yet cramped the size of individual holdings as much as will be found in may parts of Southern California. In the rolling hill sections many have gone in for the production of almonds, and their foresight has proved they have chosen their location wisely. The soil has natural drainage characteristics

and it is only a matter of a short time until Monterey County will be among the biggest producers of almonds. The numerous small valleys scattered throughout this southern part are especially desirable for the growing of grapes. Muscats and seedless varieties particularly are profitable here. Both the southeastern and southwestern sections of the county and those territories adjacent to Parkfield, Jolon, Lockwood and Pleyto offer an abundant opportunity to the newcomer who is seeking quick returns from the land.

Here, too, we find the better wheat lands of the entire county. At this writing the wheat crop is unusually heavy and will run according to present estimates at the rate of 25 bags to the acre. Wheat growers should investigate this territory because here the last big holdings of cattle ranches are gradually being broken up. There still remain large holdings of individual ranches of 35,000 to 40,000 acres each. As increased demand comes for farming lands, this will be divided into smaller units, and the man who buys here now could not find a better place for his start than in this particular section. Bartlett pears, tomatoes, mellons, etc., are proving to be profitable crops in southern Monterey County also.

Scattered throughout this region are numerous quicksilver mines producing grades of this product that are fast becoming recognized as a valuable resource of the county.

It is perhaps a surprise to the people in the eastern regions of the United States, particularly the coal producing regions, to know that California is a coal producing state. Nevertheless coal does exist in California in tremendous deposits of commercially valuable quality. In the southern end of Monterey County are large deposits of coal, and a visit to the Stone Canyon coal mines will astonish the visitor who sees the thousands of tons of coal deposits close at hand. California has fuel in plenty and of good quality; natural gas, oil, wood or coal, and Monterey County is one of the few coal regions in the state of California.

In the San Antonio Mission section, which adjoins the National Forest Reserve, sportsmen will find a paradise in the abundance of hunting and fishing that exists here. Coupled with the fact that Monterey County annually stocks her streams with trout and other varieties of the finny tribe, this particular section is the center of interest to all California sportsmen. Deer, doves

and quail abound here, and each season finds increasing numbers of sportsmen coming to this section for these activities.

It is well again to refer to the harbor project contemplated in Monterey Bay, as this is an indication of how big capitalists are regarding Monterey County and its adjacent territory as a strategic point for big shipping and big commerce by way of sea. Monterey Bay is one of the largest, most available and deepest harbors on the Pacific Coast. The entire Pacific Fleet has anchored here close inshore because of the immense depth of water. It can furnish anchorage for the largest liner the world ever saw. In this respect Monterey Bay is equal to Puget Sound, and it is considered the naval key to the Pacific Coast. Railroad lines of but a few miles in length can run from this port to tap the richest territories of California. Already the surveys have been made for trunk lines tapping the fertile San Joaquin Valley. Congress has already appropriated $800,000 for the building of a break-water. Large industries and gigantic financial interests already are surveying and studying the possibilities of Monterey Bay territory as a shipping, as a manufacturing, and as an industrial seaport.

That Monterey County realized her possibilities is reflected in the money spent on her highways. Millions of dollars have gone into the building and upkeep of splendid boulevards that connect the county with the large cities to the north and south of it. That Monterey Bay will some day be a fortified harbor is no idle dream, unless the idealistic plans of present-day pacifists succeed in disarming the entire world from self-preservation.

That the Government realizes the importance of the harbor is evidenced in its acquisition of over fifteen thousand acres of land a few miles from Monterey city for military purposes. The Presidio of Monterey is famed throughout the country as being one of the largest and best appointed of the nation. Centered in the town of Monterey itself, this military post, rich in romance and history, is the center of interest to all tourists and visitors to the city. Vast amounts of money have been spent by the Government for upkeep and maintenance. The beauty and healthfulness of the Peninsula itself brings in, as home builders, men of great wealth who have abandoned their eastern opportunities and businesses and homes to round out the best years of their lives here.

Monterey County is fortunate in the important resorts and the natural playgrounds that are here. Hotel Del Monte is famous the world over for its beauty, its cuisine, its sports and the opportunity it offers to those who come to play, but who remain to live in this vicinity.

There are other resorts in Monterey County, prominent among them being Tassajara Hot Springs, Paraiso Hot Springs, and Slates Hot Springs. There has been a legend handed down in Indian tribes that must have some basis of truth in it. It is worth repeating. The Creek Indians, whose habitat was in the Missouri Valley, tell about their people making the long trek overland to a wonderful spot by the "Big Waters," where healing hot springs cured their aches and ills and where jewels grew in the sea. It has been found that the hot springs in Monterey County were the healing waters that they traveled thousands of miles to bathe in; that the beautiful jewels were the abalone shells from which they made their wampum, a string of which today will bring fabulous prices from art collectors.

Tassajara Hot Springs is situated at the head of the waters of the Carmel River. Here are bubbling twenty springs, some of them with a temperature of 160 degrees. These springs contain sulphur, sodium magnesium, iron and phosphates equal to the famous springs of Arkansas, and according to experts, superior to the famous French Lick in Europe. The climate is mild and equitable here, and the resort is splendidly situated in the wild coast hills. Large trout streams lure the lovers of the finny tribe, and wild turkey are here for the sportsman.

Paraiso Hot Springs are tucked away in a canyon up on the side of the hills near the ruins of Soledad Missions. The resort dates back to 1791 and the springs were given the name of "Eternal Paradise" by the Mission fathers. These waters are of the sodium, sulphur and iron variety. Its elevation is over 1,400 feet above sea level.

Slates Hot Springs are unique in their environment. Twenty-five streams of mineral water gush from the earth at a temperature varying from 110 degrees to 160 degrees. Here no cold shower is needed, as you but step from hot water into the cool Pacific for the cold plunge, if you want it. The resort is in the center of a game preserve of 4,500 acres.

Vancouver Pinnacles are on the extreme eastern line of the

county, within a few miles of Soledad. Two hundred and eighty acres have been set aside by the President, making it one of the four national monuments in California.

There is a vast deposit of iron ore and deposits of coal that are extensive enough to assure the valley of a plentiful supply of those commodities. On this point, though, any one interested in coming to Monterey County should not worry about the fuel supply, as there is an abundance of wood which seems never to diminish. Since so little fuel is needed for heating purposes, very little is used. Gypsum is found in great quantities and is being marketed. Large beds of white sand, 96 per cent silica, are being drawn upon for the manufacture of glass and brick. Some of the bigger sand companies are located on the peninsula, and this sand, which is almost pure white in color, is coming more and more in demand because of its purity and whiteness.

The Southern Pacific coast line runs through the county, connecting it with San Francisco and Los Angeles. It gives ideal shipping connections with allied railroads throughout the nation. As mentioned earlier, it is only a matter of time until railroads will have been built connecting the Monterey seaport with the San Joaquin Valley. Even at the present time Monterey is the only port of call on the Pacific Coast for ships of the British Navy.

Generally speaking, land prices throughout the county are based on production. That means, of course, a given area of ground in a given section must be the equal of its neighbor in production, and from such production figures the land value is easily obtained. Naturally the bottom lands are the most desired and the highest in price. Many settlers are making small fortunes in the roughest part of the county by raising goats. Some of the hill sites are very desirable for apple culture, for pears and poultry and for dairying. Barley lands are available at low prices. Much land in the county is for rent. Any man coming here and preferring to rent before buying will find that with a small capital he can get a good start under these conditions.

There are the remains of four of the oldest missions in California in Monterey County. Possibly the best-preserved of these is the Mission Del Rio Carmelo, situated on the road to Point Lobos. It was here that Padre Junipero Serra, titular head of the Franciscan missions, lived, labored and died and was buried. Mission De San Carlos Borromeo, founded in 1780, is within the

limits of Monterey city. One of the interesting characteristics of the mission is the paved walk in front of the building made up of whale bone. Soledad Mission was a large edifice and doubtless represented the labor of many men to construct. Today, it is a molding ruin of adobe walls. Mission San Antonio is reached from King City by one of the most beautiful drives, other than the Seventeen-Mile Drive, in the county. This mission is still in a very good state of preservation. The old winevats and underground irrigation tunnels are still in evidence. Here you will find pear trees, heavily loaded with fruit, that are as nearly as can be estimated, in the neighborhood of one hundred and fifty years old.

So much for the Monterey County of today. Let us direct our attention next to the county of Santa Cruz.

Apples, climate, beauty pageants, schools, churches, big trees, more apples, pears, peaches, coal, strawberries, lettuce, artichokes, bulbs, grapes, civic pride, progress, cattle, bathing beaches, beautiful women, and still more apples! This county, too, presents the problem of just where one should start to tell of natural advantages.

Santa Cruz County—the gem county—has as diversified scenery as it has natural products. It has many, in fact, most of the natural advantages of Monterey County that have already been enumerated. There are exceptions, of course, as there are exceptions to every rule. But what it lacks of the advantages of Monterey County it makes up in other ways—in advantages that are distinctly its own. Santa Cruz County has no Salinas Valley, but it does have the larger portion of Pajaro Valley. We have already told you of the products of the Pajaro Valley on the Monterey side. The same holds true of the Santa Cruz side. And for the man who is looking for a home site or a business, this valley, either end of which he chooses, offers advantages that could not be bettered elsewhere. There are business opportunities in the cities of Watsonville and Santa Cruz that are awaiting the man of enterprise.

The seeker of health could do little better than to invade the mountains of Santa Cruz County, for these mountains are dotted with resorts too numerous to mention at this point. They are tabulated in Part Two of this work and are given detailed space. The pleasure seeker, too, can be gratified in Santa Cruz County, noted for its summer tourist patronage. The beaches—some of

the finest swimming places in all the world—are right at the city's elbow. The Big Trees are points of interest that will awe the most blasé.

Indeed, to tell of all the advantages and attractions of Santa Cruz County would take a volume in itself. Therefore, as a short cut, simply accept the resources of Monterey County, with a very few exceptions, and add a dash more of progressive spirit, a sprinkling of Big Trees, and you have Santa Cruz County. This county, as well as that of Monterey, is, as said, dealt with in greater length in Part Two.

CHAPTER III

BEFORE THE WHITE MAN CAME

Hundreds of years before the white man came to America or dreamed of its existence, California basked in a mild sunshine, dozing in comparative peace, awaiting the turbulent times for the Spaniards to come, followed by the uprisings of the Mexicans, and then the activities of the "Gringo," when the country would be given over to conquest and no little bloodshed. Lizards and horned toads blinked upon the rocks; seagulls circled, screaming; plumaged birds of countless varieties fluttered through the forests and along the sand dunes. Indians docilely worked, played and propagated. Hundreds, perhaps, thousands, or years rolled by with little human advancement. History, then, awaited the arrival of the white race in a serene and, it cannot be denied, a somewhat drugged fashion.

The early Indians—supposedly the first human inhabitants of California—however, were more advanced than the Indians of some other parts of America. The claim of a number of modern writers that this race was more degraded, low and stupid than their fellowmen in other sections, has been belied by much proved historical data. Perhaps the accounts rendered by Sebastian Viscaino—who was probably the first white man to set foot upon the soil of what is now Monterey and of whom we shall presently have much more to say—gives as clear a record of the Indians of this territory as can be found. The information recorded by him over three hundred years ago is as follows:

"The Indians are of good stature and fair complexion, the women being somewhat less in size than the men and of pleasing countenance. The clothing of the people of the coast lands consists of the skins of the sea-wolves (otter) abounding there, which they tan and dress better than is done in Castile; they possess also, in great quantity, flax like that of Castile, hemp and cotton, from which they make fishing-lines and nets for rabbits and hares. They have vessels of pine wood very well made, in which they go

to sea with fourteen paddle men on a side, with great dexterity, even in stormy weather."

Miguel Constansó, who accompanied Portola's expedition—the first exploration of the main land of California—one hundred and seventy-seven years after Viscaino had visited the coast, wrote of the Indians of the Santa Barbara Channel, whose traits were somewhat similar to those of the Indians around Monterey and Santa Cruz:

"The dexterity and skill of these Indians is surpassing in the construction of their launches made of pine planking. They are from eight to ten varas (twenty-three to twenty-eight feet) in length, including their rake and a vara and a half (four feet three inches) beam. Into their fabric enters no iron whatever, of the use of which they know little. But they fasten the boards with firmness, one to another, working their drills just so far apart and at a distance of an inch from the edge, the holes in the upper boards corresponding with those in the lower, and through these holes they pass strong lashings of deer sinews. They pitch and calk the seams, and paint the whole in sightly colors. They handle the boats with equal cleverness, and three or four men go out to sea to fish in them, though they have capacity to carry eight or ten. They use long oars with two blades and row with unspeakable lightness and velocity. They know all the arts of fishing, and fish abound along their coasts, as has been said of San Diego. They have communication and commerce with the natives of the islands, whence they get the beads of coral which are current in place of money through these lands, although they hold in more esteem the glass beads which the Spaniards gave them, and offered in exchange for these whatever they had like trays, otter skins, baskets and wooden plates. * * *

"They are likewise great hunters. To kill deer and antelope they avail themselves of an admirable ingenuity. They preserve the hide of the head and part of the neck of some one of these animals, skinned with care and leaving the horns attached to the same hide, which they stuff with grass or straw to keep its shape. They put this said shell like a cap upon the head and go forth to the woods with this rare equipage. On sighting the deer or antelope they go dragging themselves along the ground, little by little, with the left hand. In the right they carry the bow and four arrows. They lower and raise the head, moving it to one

side and the other, and making other demonstrations so like these animals that they attract them without difficulty to the snare; and having them within a short distance, they discharge their arrows at them with certainty of hitting. * * *

"They live in pueblos whose houses are of spherical form in the fashion of half an orange, covered with rushes. They are up to twenty varas (fifty-five feet) in diameter. Each house contains three or four families. The hearth is in the middle and in the top of the house they leave a vent or chimney to give exit for the smoke. In nothing did these gentiles give the lie to the affability and good treatment which were experienced at their hands in other times (1602) by Spaniards who landed upon those coasts with General Sebastian Vizcayno. They are men and women of good figure and aspect, very much given to painting and staining their faces and bodies with red ochre.

"They use great head dresses of feathers and some panderellas (small darts) which they bind up amid their hair with various trinkets and beads of coral of various colors. The men go entirely naked, but in time of cold they sport some long capes of tanned skins of nutrias (otters) and some mantles made of the same skins cut in long strips, which they twist in such a manner that all the fur remains outside; then they weave these strands one with another, forming a weft, and give it the pattern referred to.

"The women go with more decency, girt about the waist with tanned skins of deer which cover them in front and behind more than half down the leg, and with a mantelet of nutria over the body. There are some of them with good features. These are the Indian women who make trays and vases of rushes, to which they give a thousand forms and graceful patterns, according to the uses to which they are destined, whether it be for eating, drinking, guarding their seeds, or for other purposes; for these peoples do not know the use of earthern ware as those of San Diego use it.

"The men work handsome trays of wood, with finer inlays of coral or of bone; and some vases of much capacity, closing at the mouth, which appear to be made with a lathe—and with this machine they would not come out better hollowed nor of more perfect form. They give the whole a luster which appears the finished handiwork of a skilled artisan. The large vessels which

hold water are of a very strong weave of rushes pitched within; and they give them the same form as our water jars.

"To eat the seeds which they use in place of bread they toast them first in great trays, putting among the seeds some pebbles or small stones heated until red; then they move and shake the tray so it may not burn; and getting the seed sufficiently toasted they grind it in mortars or almireses of stone. Some of these mortars were of extraordinary size, as well wrought as if they had had for the purpose the best steel tools. The constancy, attention to trifles, and labor which they employ in finishing these pieces are well worthy of admiration. The mortars are so appreciated among themselves that for those who, dying, leave behind such handiworks, they are wont to place them over the spot where they are buried, that the memory of their skill and application may not be lost.

"They inter their dead. They have their cemeteries within the very pueblo. The funerals of their captains they make with great pomp, and set up over their bodies some rods or poles, extremely tall, from which they hang a variety of utensils and chattels which were used by them. They likewise put in the same place some great planks of pine, with various paintings and figures in which without doubt they explain the exploits and prowess of the personage.

"Plurality of wives is not lawful among these peoples. Only the captains have a right to marry two. In all their pueblos the attention was taken by a species of men who lived like the women, kept company with them, dressed in the same garb, adorned themselves with beads, pendants, necklaces and other womanish adornments, and enjoyed great consideration among the people. The lack of an interpreter prevented our finding out what class of men they were, or to what ministry they were destined, though all suspect a defect in sex, or some abuse among those gentiles.

"In their houses the married couples have their separate beds on platforms elevated from the ground. Their mattresses are some simple petates (mats) of rushes and their pillows are of the same petates rolled up at the head of the bed. All these beds are hung about with like mats, which serve for decency and protect from the cold."

Although inferior to the eastern Indians in warfare, the western Indians were their equals if not their superiors in hunting,

fishing and in the mechanical arts. The general inferiority so widely attributed to the Pacific Coast Indians is no doubt due, in a large measure, to their peaceful resignation to mission rule and their easy subjection by the Spaniards.

Unlike the Indians east of the Rocky Mountains, those of the Pacific Coast and the interior valleys had no great tribal divisions, but belonged to the same general families. Each village devoted its time to its own territory, not infringing upon the territory of others when hunting, fishing or gathering foods of the earth.

Unfortunately, but comparatively meagre records were kept by the early Spanish settlers and the padres of the mode of life and traits of the Indians of Santa Cruz and Monterey counties. However, accounts of neighboring Indians, those of Southern California, are more complete in detail, and by borrowing from them we can glean a fairly clear idea of the form of government, religious beliefs, marriage rites, and general mode of living as practiced, in part, by the Indians in central and northern California.

In letters written by Hugo Reid, a Scotchman who married an Indian neophyte of the San Gabriel mission, Dona Victoria, many important traits of the aborigines of Southern California are recorded. The letters were published by the *Los Angeles Star* in 1851-52, and are now in the possession of the Historical Society of Southern California. Excerpts from these papers follow:

"Before the Indians belonging to the greater part of this country were known to the whites they comprised, as it were, one great family under distinct chiefs; they spoke nearly the same language, with the exception of a few words, and were more to be distinguished by a local intonation of the voice than anything else. * * * Being related by blood and marriage, war was never carried on between them. When war was consequently waged against neighboring tribes of no affinity it was a common cause. * * *

"The government of the people was invested in the hands of their chiefs, each captain commanding his own lodge. The command was hereditary in a family. If the right line of descent ran out they elected one of the same kin nearest in blood. Laws in general were made as required, with some few standing ones. Robbery was never known among them. Murder was of rare occurrence and punished with death. Incest was likewise puni-

shed with death, being held in such abhorrence that marriages between kinsfolk were not allowed. The manner of putting to death was by shooting the delinquent with arrows. If a quarrel ensued between two parties of distinct lodges, each chief heard the witnesses produced by his own people, and then, associated with the chief of the opposite side, they passed sentence. In case they could not agree an impartial chief was called in, who heard the statements made by both and he alone decided. There was no appeal from his decision. Whipping was never resorted to as a punishment. All fines and sentences consisted in delivering shells, money, food and skins. * * *

"They believed in one God, the Maker and Creator of all things, whose name was and is held so sacred among them as hardly ever to be used, and when used only in a low voice. That name is Qua-o-ar. When they have to use the name of the supreme being on an ordinary occasion they substitute in its stead the word Y-yo-ha-rory-nain, or the Giver of Life. They have only one word to designate life and soul. * * *

"The world was at one time in a state of chaos, until God gave it its present formation, fixing it on the shoulders of seven giants, made expressly for this end. They have their names, and when they move themselves an earthquake is the consequence. Animals were then formed, separately from earth and ordered to live together. The man's name was Tobahar and the woman's Probavit. God ascended to Heaven immediately afterward, where he receives the souls of all who die. They had no bad spirits connected with their creed, and never heard of a 'devil' or 'hell' until the coming of the Spaniards. They believed in no resurrection whatever. * * *

"Chiefs had one, two or three wives, as their inclination dictated, the subjects only one. When a person wished to marry and had selected a suitable partner, he advertised the same to all relatives, even to the nineteenth cousin. On a day appointed the male portion of the lodge brought in a collection of money beads. All the relations having come in with their share, they (the males) proceeded in a body to the residence of the bride, to whom timely notice had been given. All of the bride's female relations had been assembled and the money was equally divided among them, the bride receiving nothing, as it was a sort of purchase. After a few days the bride's female relations returned the compliment by

taking to the bridegroom's dwelling baskets of meal made of chia, which were distributed among the male relatives. These preliminaries over, a day was fixed for the ceremony, which consisted in decking out the bride in innumerable strings of beads, paint, feathers and skins. On being ready she was taken up in the arms of one of her strongest male relatives, who carried her, dancing, towards her lover's habitation. All of her family, friends and neighbors accompanied, dancing around, throwing food and edible seeds at her feet at every step. These were collected in a scramble by the spectators as best they could. The relations of the bridegroom met them half way, and, taking the bride, carried her themselves, joining in the ceremonious walking dance. On arriving at the bridegroom's (who was sitting within his hut) she was inducted into her new residence by being placed alongside of her husband, while baskets of seeds were liberally emptied on their heads to denote blessings and plenty. This was likewise scrambled for by the spectators, who, on gathering up all the bride's seed cake, departed, leaving them to enjoy their honeymoon according to usage. A grand dance was given on the occasion, the warriors doing the dancing, the young women doing the singing. The wife never visited her relatives from that day forth, although they were at liberty to visit her. * * *

"When a person died all the kin collected to mourn his or her loss. Each one had his own peculiar mode of crying or howling, as easily distinguished the one from the other as one song is from another. After lamenting awhile a mourning dirge was sung in a low whining tone, accompanied by a shrill whistle produced by blowing into the tube of a deer's leg bone. Dancing can hardly be said to have formed a part of the rites, as it was merely a monotonous action of the foot on the ground. This was continued alternately until the body showed signs of decay, when it was wrapped in the covering used in life. The hands were crossed upon the breast and the body tied from head to foot. A grave having been dug in their burial ground, the body was deposited with seeds, etc., according to the means of the family. If the deceased were the head of the family or a favorite son, the hut in which he lived was burned up, as likewise were all his personal effects. * * *

"Animosity between persons or families was of long duration, particularly between those of different tribes. These feuds des-

cended from father to son until it was impossible to tell of how many generations. They were, however, harmless in themselves, being merely a war of songs, composed and sung against the conflicting party, and they were all of the most obscene and indecent language imaginable. There are two families at this day (1851) whose feud commenced before the Spaniards were ever dreamed of and they still continue singing and dancing against each other. The one resides at the mission of San Gabriel and the other at San Juan Capistrano; they both lived at San Bernardino when the quarrel commenced. During the singing they continue stamping on the ground to express the pleasure they would derive from tramping on the graves of their foes. Eight days was the duration of the song fight. * * *

"From the bark of nettles was manufactured thread for nets, fishing lines, etc. Needles, fishhooks, awls and many other articles were made of either bone or shell; for cutting up meat a knife of cane was invariably used. Mortars and pestles were made of granite. Sharp stones and perseverance were the only things used in their manufacture, and so skillfully did they combine the two that their work was always remarkably uniform. Their pots to cook in were made of soapstone of about an inch in thickness and procured from the Indians of Santa Catalina. Their baskets, made out of a certain species of rush, were used only for dry purposes, although they were water proof. The vessels in use for liquids were roughly made of rushes and plastered outside and in with bitumen or pitch."

CHAPTER IV

THE EARLY CHINESE IN CALIFORNIA

Numerous indications point to the fact that Chinese had come to the shores of California at least a thousand years before Columbus discovered America. Many historians, for one reason or another, have forgotten or have chosen to overlook the early travels of this race through what is now California. Whether or not these historians feel that credit given to the Orientals for their early visits to California (coming before the Caucasian race) would be going a step too far in favor of the Orientals, is purely a matter of speculation. The Orientals deserve credit, no doubt, for making their early trips. But their voyages were trivial in comparison with those of the Spaniards of a later year. By studying the sea route from China to North America, it will be seen that the trip can be made in an almost direct line (from China to California) without ever being far from land, with the exception of that stretch between Komondorski Islands and the Aleutian group, which measures about two hundred miles of sea. In all the rest of the voyage land is no farther away than one hundred miles. Now contrast this with the extensive ocean travels of the men of Spain in which they traveled weeks, months, without sight of land.

Although the Chinese visited California at a very ancient date, they did not follow up their early opening and try to secure a foothold. Perhaps one of the strongest reasons for the Chinese not attempting to colonize California was the long survival of feudalism which forever clutched at their lives. The individual rule and the diversified desires and ambitions of different princes made the development of a strong unitary government almost an impossibility; and without a unified government the task of colonizing a land across the waters was, in turn, made distinctly unfeasible. Another factor inhibiting their founding California for themselves (if the notion, indeed, had ever taken them) was the

traditions that surfeited China, binding each inhabitant with such conservatism that a project of this kind was almost unthinkable.

Now, you ask, what is there to show that the Chinese ever reached the shores of Western America before the white man came? Perhaps one of the most intangible, and yet one of the more important signs, are the many traditions among the Indians that are recognizable as Chinese in origin. Also the linguistic affinities, and many of the customs of the more progressive Indian inhabitants of America (for instance those of the Mayas, Incas, and the Aztecs) show a noticeable similarity to the Chinese. Among the religious practices of the two races there were many similarities. Some of the Indian hieroglyphics resembled those that the Chinese put in use. Other similarities recorded by Charles E. Chapman in his "History of California, The Spanish Period," are "Such institutions and beliefs as the transmigration of souls, the highly developed monastic system (in Mexico), religious festivals, household gods, the use of incense and chantings, of charms and amulets, cremation, the preservation of ashes in urns, and the idea that an eclipse was produced by a celestial dragon devouring the sun were common to both China and the American Indians. There were many similarities in architecture. A notable instance was that of the rope-like bridges in Peru, made of twisted willow branches, almost exactly like the twisted bamboo bridges of certain parts of China. Many other customs of the two lands were peculiarly alike—political, marital, and industrial. In China the emperor used to plough a furrow annually with a yellow plough. This ceremony is said to be nearly four thousand years old. In Peru the same ceremony was performed by the Inca monarch, but there the plough was of gold."

Other indications of a more tangible nature of the early Chinese in America are old Chinese relics that have been unearthed in comparatively recent times. A bronze fan, emblazoned with ancient Chinese characters, was found at Victoria, British Columbia, and some brass coins, reputed to be over three thousand years old, were dug up near Cassiar, B. C. Ancient Chinese implements have been unearthed from time to time in the Pacific northwest, all of which form the strongest kind of evidence of the early Oriental travels through this section.

Literary evidences, although scarce, relate to the Chinese'

knowledge of a land called "Fusang," which have been identified by some historians with the Pacific Coast of North America. In the Chinese encyclopedia, as well as in other Chinese writings, this land is referred to. In the Chinese encyclopedia the story related by Hwui Shan, a Buddhist priest of 499 A. D., in which he, Hwui Shan, made a trip to the kingdom of Fusang, giving distances and directions that would locate Fusang where California or Mexico lies. He also related incidents and wrote descriptive passages that further linked Fusang with America.

Although the Japanese did not leave the early traces in California which the Chinese did, they, at one time, had an opportunity of coming to this land, engulfing it, making it their own. Their disbelief in Christianity, however, deprived them of becoming a dominant power in the Pacific—barred them from mixing with the whites—and this phase of what might have been a different history is dissolved.

CHAPTER V

AN ERA CHANGES—THE COMING OF THE "WHITES"

The history of the Monterey Peninsula—which is the opening chapter to the history of Monterey and Santa Cruz counties, and incidentally the history of California—is singularly marked with ever-changing conditions. Until 1770 this point of land had, on numerous occasions, been fairly within the grasp of the white man, only to be lost again and almost forgotten in the rush of other worldly activities. Explorers had caught sight of its beautiful wooded coast, thinking to return, and then failed to do so. Men had set out to colonize it and had trod its very soil unknowingly, losing sight of it forevermore. The Monterey Peninsula has indeed been much as a ball juggled by the Fates—it has been firmly clutched one moment and then let drop for hundreds of years.

It seems strange to the student of history or to one interested in the caprices of fortune that here the Monterey Peninsula remained, dozing in a riot of verdure and natural wealth, for centuries, unsought, unwanted. Then came the Spaniards in conquest of gold and with the hope of establishing new trade routes. It was left, however, to the noble influence of Father Serra to make their dreams become a reality, to put the first foot forward in the actual settling and christianizing of this region. His work, thoughtful in execution, peaceful in effect, marked the dawn of a new area. In a comparatively short time the Mexicans uprose, intent upon having this land for themselves. And finally the Americans deemed the country their own and annexed it to the United States. Since this last formative stage, the land has progressed more than in all other times, not alone flourishing with trade, commerce, industry, but with the arts as well.

In order to see what led to the actual discovery of the Monterey Peninsula, hence to Monterey and Santa Cruz counties, we must turn back the ledgers of time to those adventuresome days when Spain, surfeited with myths of strange islands abounding with pearls and gold, sent out expeditions to explore, to conquer, and to return with harvests of treasure.

CHAPTER VI

THE LURE OF SPAIN

Christopher Columbus, in proving the existence of a new world beyond the Atlantic, crystallized the dreams that had circulated through Europe for centuries—the dreams that land lay somewhere in the vast stretches of ocean westward from their own shores. Following the explorations of Columbus, activities in the Old World became more fervid than ever. Adventurers who had talked of penetrating the mysteries of distance, actually rigged their ships preparatory to doing so. Some few of them got under way with intrepid crews, fearless men who, for the sake of glory, of wealth, and of the wishes of their country, traveled over the glistening carpet of the sea with eyes strained for sight of land. Oftentimes the sea's briny carpet became so ruffled with storm, so ragged and torn and billowy with wind and rain, that these men were forced to return. Many of them even dropped from sight, never to be seen or heard of again.

Ponce de Leon was one of the more successful. Lured by the fabled fountain of youth, he trudged through the wilds of Florida, discovering, not the elixer of life, but a land rich in fertility and natural resources that was to make life for following generations well worth living. It was Ponce de Leon and his handful of followers who planted the first settlement ever made within the boundaries of what is now the United States.

To Hernando Cortés, who made a gallant gesture of life, braving the unknown with a fearlessness bettered by none, daring all for the sake of Spain, dying an unthanked, disheartened, impoverished man, goes the great credit for the explorations of the northwest coast of North America. Following a brilliant career and a spell of what appears to have been sheer good luck, he established a shipyard at Zacatula on the Pacific Coast in 1522, nearly a century before the Pilgrims landed on Plymouth Rock. Now, for the first time, fortune seemed to abandon him. Materials for the ships he intended to build (with which he hoped

to explore the northern coast of the Pacific, then known as the "South Sea") caught fire and all, including his entire plant, was destroyed. However, in 1527 he finally succeeded in launching four ships, three of which were pressed into service in the East Indies by orders of the king. The fourth and smallest voyaged a short distance up the coast, under the command of Maldonado. When Maldonado returned, imagining that he had seen traces of gold and silver, but bringing none of it with him, he gave colorful accounts of a rich country he had discovered.

The remaining days of the brilliant life of Cortés have been so vividly and tersely set forth in Professor J. M. Guinn's "History of the State of California", that we can profitably turn to its authoritative pages. Of Cortés, Professor Guinn says:

"In 1528 Cortés was unjustly deprived of the government of the country (Mexico) he had conquered. His successor, Nuno de Guzman, president of the royal audiencia, as the new form of government for New Spain (Mexico) was called, had pursued him for years with the malignant charges of his enemies. He was received at court with a show of high honors, but which in reality were hollow professions of friendship and insincere expressions of esteem. He was rewarded by the bestowal of an empty title. He was empowered to conquer and colonize countries at his own expense, for which he was to receive the twelfth part of the revenue. Cortés returned to Mexico and in 1532 he had two ships fitted out, which sailed from Acapulco, in June of that year, up the coast of Jalisco. Portions of the crews of each vessel commanded by Mazuela and the other vessels, commanded by Hurtardo, continued the voyage as far as the Yaqui country. Here, having landed in search of provisions, the natives massacred the commander and all the crew. The crew of the other vessel shared the same fate lower down the coast. The stranded vessel was afterwards plundered and dismantled by Nuno de Guzman, who was about as much of a savage as the predatory and murderous natives.

"In 1533 Cortés, undismayed by his disasters, fitted out two more ships for the exploration of the northern coast of Mexico. On board one of these ships, commanded by Bercerra de Mendoza, the crew, headed by the chief pilot, Jiminez, mutinied. Mendoza was killed and all who would not join the mutineers were forced to go ashore on the coast of Jalisco. The mutineers, to escape

punishment by the authorities, under the command of the pilot, Fortuno Jiminez, sailed westerly away from the coast of the main land. After several days' sailing out of sight of land, they discovered what they supposed to be an island. They landed at a place known as La Paz, Lower California. Here Jiminez and twenty of his confederates were killed by Indians, or their fellow mutineers, it is uncertain which. The survivors of the ill-fated expedition managed to navigate the vessel back to Jalisco, where they reported the discovery of an island rich in gold and pearls. This fabrication doubtlessly saved their necks. There is no record of their punishment for mutiny. Cortés' other ship accomplished even less than the one captured by the mutineers. Grixalvo, the commander of this vessel, discovered a desolate island, forty leagues south of Cape San Lucas, which he named Santo Tomas. But the discovery that should immortalize Grixalvo, and place him in the category with the romancing Monk, de Niza and Sandoval of the Amazonian isle, was the seeing of a merman. It swam about the ship for a long time, playing antics like a monkey for the amusement of the sailors, washing its face with its hands, combing its hair with its fingers; at last, frightened by a sea bird, it disappeared.

"Cortés, having heard of Jiminez's discovery, and possibly believing it to be Sandoval's isle of the Amazons, rich with gold and pearls, set about building more ships for his exploration and for the colonization of the island. He ordered the building of three ships at Tehuauntepec. The royal audiencia having failed to give him any redress or protection against his enemy, Nuno de Guzman, he determined to punish him himself. Collecting a considerable force of cavaliers and soldiers, he marched to Chimatla. There he found his vessel, La Concepcion, lying on her beam ends, a wreck, and plundered of everything of value. He failed to find Guzman, that worthy having taken a hasty departure before his arrival. His ships having come up from Tehuauntepec, he embarked as many soldiers and settlers as his vessels would carry, and sailed away for Jiminez's island. May 3, 1535, he landed at the port where Jiminez and his fellow mutineers were killed, which he named Santa Cruz (not, of course, the Santa Cruz of our history). The colonists were landed on the supposed island and the ships were sent back to Chimatla for the remainder of the settlers. His usual ill luck followed him. The vessels became

separated on the gulf in a storm and the smaller of the three returned to Santa Cruz. Embarking in it, Cortés set sail to find his missing ships. He found them at the port of Guayabal, one loaded with provisions, the other dismantled and run ashore. Its sailors had deserted and those of the other ship were about to follow. Cortés stopped this, took command of the vessels and had them repaired. When the repairs were completed he set sail for his colony. But misfortune followed him. His chief pilot was killed by falling off a spar when scarce out of sight of land. Cortés took command of the vessels himself. Then the ships encountered a terrific storm that threatened their destruction. Finally they reached their destination, Santa Cruz. There again misfortune awaited him. The colonists could obtain no sustenance from the barren soil of the desolate island. Their provisions exhausted, some of them died of starvation and others killed themselves by over-eating when relief came.

"Cortés, finding the interior of the supposed island as desolate and forbidding as the coast, and the native inhabitants degraded and brutal savages, without houses or clothing, living on vermin, insects and the scant products of the sterile land, determined to abandon his colonization scheme. Gathering together the wretched survivors of his colony, he embarked them on his ships and in the early part of 1573 landed them in the port of Acapulco.

"At some time between 1535 and 1537 the name California was applied to the supposed island, but whether applied by Cortés to encourage his disappointed colonists, or whether given by them in derision, is an unsettled question. The name itself is derived from a Spanish romance, the 'Sergas de Esplandian,' written by Ordonez de Montalvo and published in Seville, Spain, about the year 1510. The passage in which the name California occurs is as follows: 'Know that on the right hand of the Indies there is an island called California, very near the terrestrial paradise, which was peopled with black women, without any men among them, because they were accustomed to live after the fashion of Amazons. They were of strong and hardened bodies, of ardent courage and great force. The island was the strongest in the world from its steep rocks and great cliffs. Their arms were all of gold and so were the caparison of the wild beasts which they rode, after having trained them, for in all the island there is no

other metal.' The 'steep rocks and great cliffs' of Jiminez's island may have suggested to Cortés or to his colonists some fancied resemblance to the California of Montalvo's romance, but there was no other similarity."

Although this was the way in which California secured its name, according to Professor Guinn, other, and equally plausible theories have been advanced by distinguished historians. Among the more logical of these theories are those of Charles E. Chapman. In his "History of California, the Spanish Period," he says:

"One of the most prized possessions of present-day Californians is the beautiful and beloved name of the state, a name which has a lure that has carried its fame perhaps farther than that of any other state in the Union. Yet the origin and application of the name were for a long time something of a mystery, and neither one nor the other is fully clear yet. California was not named for a member of the royal family in the homeland of the conquerors, as happened in the case of Virginia (for Elizabeth, the Virgin Queen), Carolina (for King Charles II), Maryland, Georgia, and Louisiana. Unlike Massachusetts, Connecticut, Texas, and others, too, it was not an Indian word or named for an Indian tribe. This being recognized, people for many years, centuries after the name was first applied, indulged in guesses as to both the origin and application, for which the evidence seemed to have disappeared. Those conjectures are now mere historical curiosities, illustrations in the extreme of the propensity of men to imagine the missing link in a chain of evidence, but as one hears these theories advanced by some even to the present day, it may be worth while to notice them. Most frequent among them has been the suggestion of a derivation from two Latin words 'Calida fornax' (hot furnace). Baja California might well have seemed to Cortés and his men as hot as a furnace, it is said, or the name might also have occurred to them in connection with the Indian temescal, or sweat-house, underground. Similarly, the Catalan word 'Californo' (hot oven) has been brought forward. 'Cal y forno' (lime and furnace, or lime-kiln) provides another guess, though 'Cal' is Spanish and 'forno' Catalan, but it is doubtful whether the Indians of Baja California had houses made of mortar in early times, thus making use of lime-kilns, though later they came to have them. Another view was that it sprang from 'Colofón' (resin), on the ground that

the Spaniards might have called out that word when they saw the resinous pine trees and decided to apply it as a name. Perhaps as 'Colofonia,' gradually corrupting it to 'California.' Another writer suggested 'Cala fornix,' based on the Spanish word for 'cove' and the Latin for 'vault,' in that there is an arch under a rock in a bay, or cove, at one place where Cortés and his men landed in Baja California. These are a few theories out of many, all of which were barren guesses, unsustained by a shred of evidence. It may be said that it was not the habit of Spanish explorers to assign Latin names, or to mix Spanish with Latin or with Catalan in such a matter. A more likely suggestion was that the Spaniards might have misunderstood some Indian word and applied it as a name, but this was a mere guess."

Following this passage, Chapman advances the theory (most likely of all), to which Guinn gives credence, that the name California was taken from the Spanish romance, the "Sergas de Esplandian."

Continuing with the life of Cortés as recounted by Guinn, we find that:

"For years Cortés had been fitting out expeditions by land and sea to explore the unknown regions northward of that portion of Mexico which he had conquered, but disaster after disaster had wrecked his hopes and impoverished his purse. The last expedition sent out by him was one commanded by Francisco Ulloa, who, in 1539, with two ships, sailed up the Gulf of California, or Sea of Cortés, on the Sonora side, to its head. Thence he proceeded down the inner coast of Lower California to the cape at its southern extremity, which he doubled, and then sailed up the outer coast of Gabo del Engano, the 'Cape of Deceit.' Failing to make any progress against the head winds, April 5, 1540, the two ships parted company in a storm. The smaller one, the Santa Agueda, returned safely to Santiago. The larger, La Trinidad, after vainly endeavoring to continue the voyage, turned back. The fate of Ulloa and of the vessels too, is uncertain. One authority says he was assassinated after reaching the coast of Jalisco by one of his soldiers, who, for some trivial cause, stabbed him to death; another account says that nothing is known of his fate, nor is it certainly known whether his vessel ever returned. The only thing accomplished by this voyage was to demonstrate that Lower California was a peninsula. Even this fact, although

proved by Ulloa's voyage, was not fully admitted by geographers until two centuries later.

"In 1540 Cortés returned to Spain to obtain, if possible, some recognition and recompense from the king for his valuable services. His declining years had been filled with bitter disappointments. Shipwreck and mutiny at sea; disaster and defeat to his forces on land; the treachery of his subordinates and the jealousy of royal officials continually thwarted his plans and wasted his substance. After expending nearly a million dollars in explorations, conquests and attempts at colonization, fretted and worried by the indifference and the ingratitude of a monarch for whom he had sacrificed so much, disappointed, disheartened, impoverished, he died at an obscure hamlet near Seville, Spain, in December, 1547."

Such was the life of one of a chain of men who played an important part in the discovery and settlement of California. The next link of this chain was Hernando de Alarcon. Of him, the "History of the State of California" says:

"With two ships he (Hernando de Alarcon) sailed from Acapulco, May 9, 1540, up the Gulf of California. His object was to coöperate with the expedition of Coronado. Coronado, with an army of four hundred men, had marched from Culiacan, April 22, 1540, to conquer the seven cities of Cibola. In the early part of 1537 Alvaro Nunez Cabaza de Vaca and three companions (the only survivors of six hundred men that Panfilo de Narvaes, ten years before, had landed in Florida for the conquest of that province) after almost incredible sufferings and hardships arrived in Culiacan on the Pacific coast. On their long journey passing from one Indian tribe to another they had seen many wondrous things and had heard of many more. Among others they had been told of seven great cities in a country called Cibola that were rich in gold and silver and precious stones.

"A Franciscan friar, Marcos de Niza, having heard their wonderful stories determined to find the seven cities. Securing the services of Estevanico, a negro slave, who was one of Cabeza de Vaca's party, he set out in quest of the cities. With a number of Indian porters and Estevanico as a guide, he traveled northward a hundred leagues when he came to a desert that took four days to cross. Beyond this he found natives who told him of people four days further away who had gold in abundance. He

sent the negro to investigate and that individual sent back word that Cibola was yet thirty days' journey to the northward. Following the trail of his guide, Niza travelled for two weeks crossing several deserts. The stories of the magnificence of the seven cities increased with every tribe of Indians through whose country he passed. At length, when almost to the promised land, a messenger brought the sad tidings that Estevanico had been put to death with all of his companions but two by the inhabitants of Cibola. To go forward meant death to the monk and all his party, but before turning back he climbed a high mountain and looked down upon the seven cities with their high houses and teeming populations thronging their streets. Then he returned to Culiacan to tell his wonderful stories. His tales fired the ambition and stimulated the avarice of a horde of adventurers. At the head of four hundred of these Coronado penetrated the wilds of Pimeria (now Arizona). He found seven Indian towns but no lofty houses, no great cities, no gold or silver. Cibola was a myth. Hearing of a country called Quivira far to the north, richer than Cibola, with part of his force he set out to find it. In his search he penetrated inland as far as the plains of Kansas, but Quivira proved to be as poor as Cibola, and Coronado returned disgusted. The Friar de Niza had evidently drawn on his imagination which seemed to be quite rich in cities.

"Alarcon reached the head of the Gulf of California. Seeing what he supposed to be an inlet, but the water proving too shallow for his ships to enter it, he manned two boats and found his supposed inlet to be the mouth of a great river. He named it Buena Guia (Good Guide) now the Colorado. He sailed up it some distance and was probably the first white man to set foot upon the soil of Upper California. He heard of Coronado in the interior but was unable to establish communication with him. He descended the river in his boats, embarked on his vessels and returned to Mexico. The Viceroy Mendoza, who had fitted out the expedition of Alarcon, was bitterly disappointed on the return of that explorer. He had hoped to find the ships loaded with the spoils of the seven cities. The report of the discovery of a great river did not interest his sordid soul. Alarcon found himself a disgraced man. He retired to private life and not long after died a broken hearted man."

CHAPTER VII

THE FIRST SIGHT OF MONTEREY

June 27, 1542, Don Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, a Portuguese by birth and a skilled seaman, under orders from Antonio de Mendoza, the viceroy, set sail from Nativadad on the west coast of New Spain, to explore the northwest coast of the Pacific. With two poorly built, illy outfitted ships, the San Salvador and the Vitoria, he ploughed through the waters of the sea. Arriving at the Gulf of California, he continued slowly up the outer coast, stopping at frequent intervals, and finally, on September 28, 1542, sailed into a land-locked harbor, sheltered from the winds and an admirable place to anchor. This harbor they named San Miguel. It was the harbor that is now known as San Diego, and its discovery brought them the credit of being the first white men to set eyes upon Alta California.

Cabrillo remained for six days in San Miguel, making friends with the terrified Indians who, firing arrows, had wounded three of his men. Cabrillo gave the Indians sundry presents, and showed them that he meant no harm. Then, sailing up the coast for a distance of about seven leagues he discovered and named two islands, San Salvador and Vitoria, after the names of his ships. These islands are now known as Santa Catalina and San Clemente.

Five days later he crossed to the mainland, arriving at San Pedro, which he called then Bahia de los Fumos y Fuegos, "the Bay of Smokes and Fires." He bequeathed this title to the section because of the heavy smokes that were discernable over the land, due, no doubt, to brush fires that the Indians had purposely or accidentally started.

Continuing farther up the coast, he anchored in the Bay of Santa Monica, then continued to a point near the present San Buenaventura, which he named the Pueblo de las Canoas. Pro-

ceeding farther north, he discovered the islands of Santa Cruz, Santa Rosa, San Miguel, and Point Conception, which he named Cabo de la Galera. The sea soon became so heavy and head winds so strong that sailing became very difficult and further traveling a slow and arduous task. However, on November 17, they found repose in the Bay of Monterey, where they anchored. Although the high seas still prevented them from landing, to Cabrillo goes the credit for being the first of the Spanish explorers to anchor in the glistening waters of what was to become one of the most historic and important bays along the entire California coast.

Continuing farther and still farther north, they reached a point on the coast reckoned as 40 degrees latitude, having passed unnoticing the Golden Gate and the Bay of San Francisco. Still the storm swept over the sea; and finally, due to the cold and disagreeable weather, he turned the prow of the ship again to the south, and on November 23 arrived once more in San Miguel. The irony of fate seems to be crystallized in this one phase of history, stirring the sympathies yet shocking the mind. The fearless explorers, tossed by storm, sick for need of shelter and fresh provisions, actually passed within a few miles of the Bay of San Francisco, acknowledged to be one of the finest sheltering places in the world for ships. Food would have been easy of attainment had they but sailed into this port. When one contrasts that early day with the present, the vividness of their hardships is heightened to a remarkable degree. Now, one leaves in a luxurious ship from San Diego, dines upon the best of foods, sleeps in an immaculate and comfortable berth, feels warm and contented at all hours, and knows, within a few minutes, of the actual time of arrival in San Francisco. What a different story had the daring explorers known but one one-hundredth of what we today know of the San Francisco Bay. But then, if they had known these things, their epochal trip would not have been the history-making event that it was.

On January 3, 1543, in San Miguel, Juan Rodrïguez Cabrillo died. His death was due to a broken arm he had received from a fall on this island in October. The sufferings he had undergone with his broken arm during his trip, the exposure, and the improper surgery, had made him an easy victim and he passed away to the great sorrow of his comrades.

Martin Fernandez Navarrete, the noted Spanish historian,

commends the life and the undertaking of Cabrillo in the following apt words:

"Those who know the coast which Cabrillo discovered and explored, the kind of vessels in which he undertook the expedition, the rigorous season during which he pursued his voyage in those intemperate climes, and the state of the science of navigation at that period, cannot help admiring a courage and intrepidity which, though common among seafaring Spaniards of that time, cannot be appreciated in our day, when the navigator is fairly dazzled by the assistance furnished him through the wonderful progress of the arts and sciences, rendering his operations easier and supplying him with advantages which, as they were lacking to the early discoverers, make their courage and perseverance, as portentous as their discoveries."

Before dying, Cabrillo issued strict orders to the pilot Bartolome Ferrelo, his successor in command, to continue his discoveries and examine the coast as far north as it was humanly possible. Therefore, on February 18, Ferrelo took command and, after a few short cruisings, resumed the work where Cabrillo left off. Setting sail, he proceeded far out to sea, rounded Point Conception, and did not draw close to shore until he had reached the northmost point to which Cabrillo had gone, Northwest Cape. Although there was little opportunity to study the coast, due to the continued bad weather, Ferrelo continued on, passing the point that is now known as the northern boundary of California and reaching, it is believed, a point opposite the Rogue River in Oregon. Here Ferrelo turned back. On February 28, a cape was discovered which Ferrelo named Mendocino in honor of the viceroy, a name that the cape still bears. On March 1st, Cape Blanco was discovered, which he named. Now continuing southward, they reached the island of San Clemente, and it was here, due to stormy weather, that the two ships became separated and lost from one another. It was not until Cerros Island was reached, that the two ships again came together, both being much the worse for the storm. Sailing from this point, the explorers reached Navidad April 18, 1543.

Due to the discoveries made by these two men, Cabrillo and Ferrelo, whose bravery and genius will live through the ages, Spain laid claim to all the territory on the Pacific coast of North America as far as the forty-second degree of north latitude. This

claim they maintained for three hundred years. The claim was an important one for Spain, as we shall see, and it still is important to Californians—it marked the era when Alta California was first discovered, a land that would make the two intrepid explorers sit up in their graves in awe, no doubt, could they see it today, when coastwise steamers sail the same waters in astonishingly less time than it took them, when airplanes annihilate the distance in but a few hours.

CHAPTER VIII

ENGLAND TAKES A HAND

Sir Francis Drake, an English navigator and often reputed to be one of the bravest men that ever lived, was the next to visit the shores of California. Through a hatred for Spain that cannot be clearly understood today, he was forever on their trail, capturing all the Spaniards that he could, killing others, persecuting them in whatever fashion was possible. This contempt for them—a contempt that seems unjust to people of this age, in view of the gallant work done by Spain through explorations, and a legitimate conquest and colonization—was incurred by an event that happened in 1568. In that year his friend John Hawkins, under whom Drake had received his early sea training, was attacked in the port of Vera Cruz. Drake was in Hawkins' fleet at this time; and, although Drake escaped capture, all his worldly possessions—some seven thousand ducats that he had staked upon Hawkins' venture—was lost. Feeling that the Spaniards had treacherously deprived him of his fortune, Drake swore vengeance, which during the remainder of his days, he effected many times over.

Traveling across the Isthmus of Panama in 1573 with a view to capturing all treasure that came in his way, he took possession of a Spanish town by the name of El Nombre de Dios. While on the isthmus, he heard of the Spanish activities along the South Pacific (or the South Sea as it was then called) for the first time, when he made his intention known that he would sail upon it in search of more Spanish explorers and settlers.

Returning to England, he told of his plans; and, although Spain and England were then at peace, he received promises from the nobility to help him in his venture. Queen Elizabeth contributed a thousand crowns, encouraging him secretly to do his utmost in this daring undertaking.

On December 13, 1577, Drake set sail from Plymouth har-

bor, England, with five vessels on a 'round-the-world-cruise. His ships were fitted up in a wonderfully rich style with ornamental furniture, many pure silver utensils for both cook-room and his own table, and a galaxy of handsomely-wrought fixtures. Also, it is said, he carried some expert musicians with him. This was done so that "the civilitie and magnificense of his native countrie might, amongst the nations whithersoever he should come, be the more admired."

In addition to the spirit of vengeance which motivated his voyage, he had the added thought of creating a "great English Empire in the Americas around the nucleus of his California discoveries."

When far out at sea some of his vessels were lost, others turned back, and when he left the straits of Magellan only one ship, the *Pelican*, whose name he later changed to the *Golden Hind*, was left. This ship, the largest, was but one hundred tons' burden—how comparatively small to the ships of today!

His passage up the south Pacific coast was one of terror for the Spanish settlers, who were despoiled and robbed of fabulous amounts of fine wares. He frequently captured ships, which he stripped of valuables and cargo, securing from one treasure ship, the *Caca Fuego*, "eight hundred sixty-six thousand pesos of silver * * * a hundred thousand pesos of gold * * * and other things of great worth. * * *"

Although there have been differences of opinion as to just what northern point up the Pacific coast Drake reached (some authorities giving the figures as high as forty-eight degrees), the contention is that he travelled as far as forty-two degrees.

Nevertheless, after sighting land, they felt the head winds too heavy to combat any farther and turned back, continuing south until they reached a "*conuenient and fit harborough.*" Here they anchored. Just what harbor this was is another matter of dispute, some authorities saying that it was Bodega Bay, while others claim that it was the Bay of San Francisco.

While here, Drake took time to have a leak in the ship repaired and moved his vessel farther into the harbor. During his stay Drake made friends with the Indians, who seemed very submissive and looked with awe upon Drake and his seamen. This was much to the liking of Drake, for one of his ambitions was to attract the natives to English rule and Protestant faith.

Drake's departure, July 23, 1579, was bemoaned by the Indians, who lighted great beacon fires on the hills in farewell salutation. They made signs indicating that they hoped the Englishmen would return some day.

On his return to England he stopped at the Farallone Islands to lay in a food supply, then continued by way of Cape of Good Hope. Arriving in England he was knighted by Queen Elizabeth and widely heralded as the most famous naval hero of his time. He believed that he had been the discoverer of a new country, New Albion, as he called it, and steps were taken to make him the governor of it. However, through political complications in Europe, this was never carried out; and it was a matter of two centuries before Englishmen again visited these shores.

CHAPTER IX

SPANISH LANDING AT MONTEREY

Sebastian Vizcaino, a successful Spanish merchant, had had visions that he believed, if carried out, would make him exceedingly wealthy. His dreams were for the fishing of pearls in the Californias. Accordingly he got together a number of his friends and with them applied to the viceroy Luis de Velasco, for a license to engage in this business. Due to a quarrel among members of this newly-formed company, execution of the contract was delayed for a time, then finally it was brought before the courts. An order that Vizcaino and his companions commence their activities within three months was then issued. Thus matters stood when the Conde de Monterey arrived in Mexico. He, in turn, amended the order, giving Vizcaino more liberal terms than he had formerly secured, granting the company the "concession to enter the Californias and reduce them by peaceful means to subjection to the crown, for which the conquerors were to have the usual vast privileges and exemptions granted to the pacifiers and settlers of new provinces." However, when the Conde de Monterey learned that Vizcaino's earlier contract called for pearl fishing only and not at all the conquest of the land, he reconsidered in a measure, and, on February 29, 1596, wrote to the king:

"I * * * found * * * that a reconsideration was necessary; for, it seemed to me, with regard to the person (Vizcaino), his quality and capital are not sufficient in connection with an enterprise which may come to be of such vast importance, and one requiring greater backing and a method of proceeding other than what is now thought and deemed sufficient; for, even looking at the matter from the utilitarian point of view, although he make the journey at his own cost and without any expense to Your Majesty, it seems to be of little moment whether he goes for gain and in order not to lose the chance of good fortune, but of great importance the hazarding of not only the repute which

would be lost among these nations of Indians if the natives of that country should repel this man and his people, but—this is the principal thing involved—that of the conscience and authority of the royal person of Your Majesty. It appeared to me to be risking much if an expedition which cannot lawfully be one of direct conquest, but one of preaching the gospel and pacification, and of bringing the people into subjection to the crown, were entrusted to a man as leader and chief whose position is obscure and who has not even an enterprise."

However, after consultation with the highest authorities in Mexico, the viceroy had another change of mind, and continued his correspondence as follows:

"And because I have deemed it meet for the service of Our Lord and that of Your Majesty, inasmuch as it was necessary to go on with the affair since it had been begun and as this man (Vizcaino) does not possess notorious defects which can rightfully excuse Your Majesty from aiding and fomenting his undertaking, in order that the persons he has enlisted and intends to put on board ship, and who in number and condition make a reasonably good showing, may esteem and respect him, I have done all that lay in my power to show him honor while here and to clothe him with authority in view of the greater danger I foresee and fear on his account, though I would not say it to him—which is some lack of respect and an overbold bearing on the part of the soldiers whom he takes with him, so that in this way they may come to disobey his orders, all this giving rise to great disorder."

Thus, after some vacillation of authorities when it looked as though Vizcaíño might not be able to carry out his plans, conditions finally became suitable to his departure, which he made in March, 1596, with three ships and a large number of men. Fifty of these men deserted him as did one friar on the trip up the coast from Acapulco. Arriving at length at the site where Cortés had visited before him, he gave the territory the name of La Paz (Peace) because of the peaceful reception accorded him by the Indians. This name still holds today. Establishing a colony here, he proceeded farther north, where he had a somewhat different experience with the Indians. When one of his soldiers "inconsiderately struck one of the Indians in the breast with the butt of his arquebus," a fight followed. Indirectly due to this fight, nineteen of his men were drowned. Returning to La Paz, he sent

most of the colonizers back to New Spain on two of his ships, and, with forty crack mariners, took the third himself, once again exploring northern waters. However, his ship lost its rudder-irons in a storm and he was forced to turn back to New Spain.

Not until 1602 did he again set forth on his explorations. In May of that year, with three ships, the *San Diego*, the *Santo Tomas* and the *Tres Reyes*, along with some two hundred men, including three Carmelite friars and an expert map maker, Gerónimo Martïnez, he sailed from Acapulco.

Crossing to Cape San Lucas, he made his way up the coast, stopping briefly at the Bay of San Diego and other points, then passed up to what is now the central part of California. The day of December 15, 1602, found the small fleet sailing on the bosom of the Pacific north of Point Conception (which they named) and they scanned the sea for a likely landing place. When the fog lifted they saw a mountain range which they named Santa Lucia. Shortly afterwards they sighted a river which they named Rio del Carmelo in honor of the Carmelite priests accompanying the expedition. Then Point Pinos was sighted! Point Pinos, landmark that was seen by Cermenco nearly seven years before and that has guided countless mariners since. It is the point of land that literally pins our history to Monterey and Santa Cruz counties. It was here—in this locality—that Viscaino was desirous of finding a harboring place for the Manila galleon which he expected would follow in later years. Sending a launch ahead in search of suitable anchorage, he waited in the outer waters. With the return of the launch, its commander said that the land was very favorable and that a quiet bay was easy of access. The next day Viscaino's ships sailed into these peaceful waters, which they named the Monterey Bay in honor of their viceroy.

Anxious of founding a settlement on Monterey Bay, Viscaino sent glorifying reports to the king. His letter, sent at a later date (May 23, 1603) from the City of Mexico, read:

"This port (that of Monterey) is sheltered from all winds, while on the immediate shores there are pines, from which masts of any desired size can be obtained, as well as live oaks and white oaks, rosemary, the vine, the rose of Alexandria, a great variety of game, such as rabbits, hare, partridges and other sorts and species found in Spain. This land has a genial climate, its waters are good and it is fertile, judging from the varied and luxuriant

growths of trees and plants; and it is thickly settled with people whom I found to be of gentil disposition, peaceable and docile. * * * Their food consists of seeds which they have in great abundance and variety, and of the flesh of game such as deer, which are larger than cows, and bear, and of neat cattle and bisons and many other animals."

On landing at Monterey, leaders and crew held a council to make plans for future activities. Many men were sick with scurvy and several had died; and in addition their food supply was running low. It was the decree, therefore, that Admiral Gomez in the *Santo Tomas* should immediately return to Spain, taking the ill mariners and official reports of the expedition with him. His trip proved disastrous in that twenty-five of the thirty-four men he had on board died.

Viscaino and his accompanying ship left the waters of Monterey, January 3, 1603 (after a stay of eighteen days) and sailed in further search of Cape Mendocino, the northern limit of his survey. Although at this point he was at liberty to turn back, storms compelled him to go somewhat farther to the north. January 21, however, he was able to turn about and start south. Weather thereafter continued good for them, but many of the ships' crew became sick unto death with scurvy and Viscaino was anxious to obtain succor. He reached Acapulco March 21, 1603.

Later he visited the King of Spain in order to obtain his permission and assistance in starting a new colony in Monterey. Finally Phillip III, in 1606, "ordered the viceroy of New Spain to fit out immediately an expedition to be commanded by Viscaino for the occupation and settlement of the port of Monterey. Before the expedition could be gotten ready Viscaino died and his colonization scheme died with him. Had he lived to carry out his scheme, the settlement of California would have antedated that of Jamestown, Virginia, by one year."

Although the credit for discovering Monterey Bay goes to Rodriguez Cermenco, the renown for being the first white man to set foot upon the soil of Monterey goes unreservedly to Viscaino. A hundred and sixty years passed after the death of Viscaino's colonization plan before the Spanish crown again attempted to make use of its enormous possessions in Alta California.

CHAPTER X

FATHER JUNIPERO SERRA—HIS LIFE

At this juncture in our history we must turn to a man who has played no part up to the present in the work of colonization of California. The man is Father Junipero Serra, whose indomitable will, whose untiring efforts, whose love of mankind no less than his love of God, performed acts nothing short of miraculous in the furtherance of Spain's foothold in California and the christianizing of this land. His life, as is the way with many men who have achieved greatness, began in the humblest of ways. Born "November 24, 1713, in Petra, a village of the picturesque island of Majorca, on the northeastern coast of Spain, and a part of the Province of fair Catalonia," he went through his earlier years in almost abject poverty. "His parents were poor people from a material standpoint, but gifted with a rich heritage of the noblest and sublimest character; qualities which make the Spanish peasant so delightful."

Turning to the beautiful descriptive passages from the "Chimes of Mission Bells," a work of Maria Antonia Field of Monterey, a lineal descendant of Spanish nobility, we read that:

"From the tenderest youth, Miguel Jose evinced an ardent desire to enter the priesthood and displayed a zealous missionary spirit. His pious parents placed no obstacle in the way of their gentle boy's vocation, and being too poor to pay for his education, the Church did it for them. At the age of sixteen, Miguel Jose left his father's small estate and began his studies in his native village, completing them at the Franciscan College of Palma, the Capital of the Island of Majorca. He made rapid progress, and a brilliant future opened before him, while his virtuous qualities were noted by all with whom he came in contact. A proof of his worth may be seen from the facts that he was ordained before he attained his majority; he also taught in different schools as professor of theology and received the degree of doctor soon after

his ordination. The fame of his eloquent preaching and persuasive oratorical powers spread not only throughout Spain but reached other European countries. Still Junipero Serra (as he was known by his choice after an humble disciple of Saint Francis of Assisi, noted for his charity) was not dazzled by his brilliant mental gifts, and his thirsting desire to evangelize the heathen savage of the New World grew apace with his fame. He declined the offer to become the Court preacher and other ecclesiastical dignities, which he would have been entirely justified in accepting, and practiced those virtues which clung to him with even more perfect maturity throughout his life; heroic virtues which enabled him to undertake wonderful things. In him too, were noted those sweet simple qualities invariably found in great and holy men and women, such as gentleness, amiability, a tender affection for children and a love for the beautiful in nature; sun, moon, stars, flowers, birds, the woods and ocean, all found responsive chords within him. In a few brief lines we have endeavored to convey an idea of Serra's character; let us now follow his steps in company with the band of heroic workers who accompanied him in his voyage across the dark Atlantic, and his apostolic journeys through Mexico and California to 'break the bread of life' to the unfortunate heathen. * * *"

Coming to Mexico, January 1, 1749, he entered the College of San Fernando. After remaining in this for a few months, he was put in charge of an Indian mission in the Serra Gordon mountains. Here he carried on his christianizing influence for nine years in company with his assistant and lifelong friend, Father Palou.

Continuing with Father Serra's life and with the historical events that happened during his time, we find, from "The History of California," by Guinn, that "Under his (Father Serra's) instructions the Indians were taught agriculture and the mission became a model establishment of its kind. From this mountain mission Serra returned to the city of Mexico. He spent seven years in doing missionary work among the Spanish population of the capital and surrounding country. His success as a preacher and his great missionary zeal led to his selection as president of the missions of California, from which the Jesuits had been removed. April 2, 1768, he arrived in the port of Loreto with fifteen associates from the College of San Fernando. These were sent

to the different missions of the peninsula. These missions extended over a territory seven hundred miles in length and it required several months to locate all the missionaries. The scheme for the occupation and colonization of Alta California was to be jointly the work of church and state. The representative of the state was Jose de Galvez, visitador-general of New Spain, a man of untiring energy, great executive ability, sound business sense and, as such men are and ought to be, somewhat arbitrary. Galvez reached La Paz in July, 1768. He immediately set about investigating the condition of the peninsula missions and supplying their needs. This done, he turned his attention to the northern colonization. He established his headquarters at Santa Ana near La Paz. Here he summoned Father Junipero for consultation in regard to the founding of missions in Alta California. It was decided to proceed to the initial points San Diego and Monterey by land and sea. Three ships were to be dispatched carrying the heavier articles, such as agricultural implements, church ornaments, and a supply of provisions for the support of the soldiers and priest after their arrival in California. The expedition by land was to take along cattle and horses to stock the country. This expedition was divided into two detachments, the advance one under the command of Rivera y Moncada, who had been a long time in the country, and the second division under Governor Gaspar de Portolá, who was a newcomer. Captain Rivera was sent northward to collect from the missions all the live stock and supplies that could be spared and take them to Santa Maria, the most northern mission of the peninsula. Stores of all kinds were collected at La Paz. Father Serra made a tour of the missions and secured such church furniture, ornaments and vestments as could be spared.

"The first vessel fitted out for the expedition by sea was the San Carlos, a ship of about two hundred tons burden, leaky and badly constructed. She sailed from La Paz January 9, 1769, under the command of Vicente Vila. In addition to the crew there were twenty-five Catalonian soldiers, commanded by Lieutenant Fages, Pedro Prat, the surgeon, a Franciscan friar, two blacksmiths, a baker, a cook and two tortilla makers. Galvez in a small vessel accompanied the San Carlos to Cape San Lucas, where he landed and set to work to fit out the San Antonia. On the 15th of February this vessel sailed from San José del Cabo

(San José of the Cape), under the command of Juan Perez, an expert pilot, who had been engaged in the Philippine trade. On this vessel went two Franciscan friars, Juan Viscaino and Francisco Gomez. Captain Rivera y Moncada, who was to pioneer the way had collected supplies and cattle at Velicatá on the northern frontier. From here, with a small force of soldiers, a gang of neophytes and three muleteers, and accompanied by Padre Crespi, he began his march to San Diego on the 24th of March, 1769.

"The second land expedition, commanded by Governor Gaspar de Portola in person, began its march from Loreto, March 9, 1796. Father Serra, who was to have accompanied it, was detained at Loreto by a sore leg. He joined the expedition at Santa Maria, May 5, where it had been waiting for him some time. It then proceeded to Rivera's camp at Velicatá, sixty miles farther north, where Serra founded a mission, naming it San Fernando. Campa Coy, a friar who had accompanied the expedition thus far, was left in charge. This mission was intended as a frontier post in the travel between the peninsula missions and the Alta California settlements. On the 15th of May, Portolá began his northern march, following the trail of Rivera. Galvez had named, by proclamation, St. Joseph at the patron saint of the California expeditions. Santa Maria was designated as the patroness of conversions.

"The San Antonia, the last vessel to sail, was the first to arrive at San Diego. It anchored in the bay April 11, 1769, after a prosperous voyage of twenty-four days. There she remained at anchor, awaiting the arrival of the San Carlos, the flag ship of the expedition, which had sailed more than a month before her. On the 29th of April the San Carlos, after a disastrous voyage of one hundred and ten days, drifted into the Bay of San Diego, her crew prostrated with the scurvy, not enough able-bodied men being left to man a boat. Canvas tents were pitched and the afflicted men taken ashore. When the disease had run its course nearly all of the crew of the San Carlos, half of the soldiers who had come on her and nine of the sailors of the San Antonia, were dead.

"On the 14th day of May Captain Rivera y Moncada's detachment arrived. The expedition had made the journey from Velicata in fifty-one days. On the first of July the second di-

vision, commanded by Portola, arrived. The journey had been uneventful. The four divisions of the grand expedition were now united, but its numbers had been greatly reduced. Out of two hundred and nineteen who had set out by land and sea only one hundred and twenty-six remained; death from scurvy and the desertion of the neophytes had reduced the numbers nearly one-half. The ravages of the scurvy had destroyed the crew of one of the vessels and greatly crippled that of the other, so it was impossible to proceed by sea to Monterey, the second objective point of the expedition. * * *

"If the mandates of King Carlos III and the instructions of the visitador-general, José de Galvez, were to be carried out, the expedition for the settlement of the second point designated (Monterey) must be made by land; accordingly Governor Portola set about organizing his forces for the overland journey. On the 14th of July the expedition began its march. It consisted of Governor Portola, Padres Crespi and Gomez, Captain Rivera y Moncada, Lieutenant Pedro Fages, Engineer Miguel Constanso, soldiers, muleteers and Indian servants, numbering in all sixty-two persons.

"On the 16th of July, two days after the departure of Governor Portola, Father Junipero, assisted by Padres Viscaino and Parron, founded the mission of San Diego. The site selected was in what is now Old Town, near the temporary presidio, which had been hastily constructed before the departure of Governor Portola. * * *

"We now return to the march of Portola's expedition. As the first exploration of the main land of California was made by it, I give considerable space to the incidents of the journey. Crespi, Constanso and Fages kept journals of the march. I quote from those of Constanso and Crespi. Lieutenant Constanso thus describes the order of the march. 'The setting-forth was on the 14th day of June (mistaken, no doubt, for July 14th) of the cited year of '69. The two divisions of the expedition by land marched in one, the commander so arranging because the number of horse-herd and packs was much, since of provisions and victuals alone they carried one hundred packs, which he estimated to be unnecessary to ration all the folk during six months; thus providing against a delay of the packets, altho' it was held to be impossible that in this interval some one of them should fail

to arrive at Monterey. On the marches the following order was observed: At the head went the commandant with the officers, the six men of the Catalonia volunteers, who added themselves at San Diego, and some friendly Indians, with spades, mattocks, crowbars, axes and other implements of pioneers, to chop and open a passage whenever necessary. After them followed the pack-train, divided into four bands with the muleteers and a competent number of garrison soldiers for their escort with each band. In the rear guard with the rest of the troops and friendly Indians came the captain, Don Fernando Rivera, convoying the horse-herd and the mule herd for relays. * * *

" 'It must be well considered that the marches of these troops with such a train and with such embarrassments thro' unknown lands and unused paths could not be long ones; leaving aside the other causes which obliged them to halt and camp early in the afternoon, that is to say, the necessity of exploring the land one day for the next, so as to regulate them (the marches) according to the distance of the watering-places and to take in consequence the proper precautions; setting forth again on special occasions in the evening, after having given water to the beasts in that same hour upon the sure information that in the following stretch there was no water or that the watering-place was low, or the pasture scarce. The restings were measured by the necessity, every four days, more or less, according to the extraordinary fatigue occasioned by the greater roughness of the road, the toil of the pioneers, or the wandering off of the beasts which were missing from the horse-herd and which it was necessary to seek by their tracks. At other times, by the necessity of humoring the sick, when there were any, and with time there were many who yielded up their strength to the continued fatigue, the excessive heat and cruel cold. In the form and according to the method related the Spaniards executed their marches; traversing immense lands more fertile and more pleasing in proportion as they penetrated more to the north. All in general are peopled with a multitude of Indians, who came out to meet them and in some parts accompanied them from one stage of the journey to the next; a folk very docile and tractable chiefly from San Diego onward.'

"Constanso's description of the Indians of Santa Barbara will be found in the chapter on the Aborigines of California. 'From

the channel of Santa Barbara onward the lands are not so populous nor the Indians so industrious, but they are equally affable and tractable. The Spaniards pursued their voyage without opposition up to the Sierra of Santa Lucia, which they contrived to cross with much hardship. At the foot of said Sierra on the north side is to be found the port of Monterey, according to ancient reports, between the Point of Pines and that of Ano Neuvo (New Year). The Spaniards caught sight of said points on the 1st of October of the year '69, and, believing they had arrived at the end of their voyage, the commandant sent the scouts forward to reconnoiter the Point of Pines; in whose near vicinity lies said Point in 36 degrees and 40 minutes north latitude. But the scant tokens and equivocal ones which are given of it by the Pilot Cabrera Bueno, the only clue of this voyage, and the character of this Port, which rather merits the name of Bay, being spacious (in likeness to that of Cadiz), not corresponding with ideas which it is natural to form in reading the log of the aforementioned Cabrera Bueno, nor with the latitude of 37 degrees in which he located it, the scouts were persuaded that the Port must be farther to the north and they returned to the camp which our people occupied with the report that what they sought was not to be seen in those parts.'

"They described that the Port was still farther north and resumed their march. Seventeen of their number were sick with the scurvy, some of whom, Constanso says, seemed to be in their last extremity; these had to be carried in litters. To add to their miseries, the rains began in the latter part of October, and with them came an epidemic of diarrhea, 'which spread to all without exception; and it came to be feared that this sickness which prostrated their powers and left the persons spiritless, would finish with the expedition altogether. But it turned out quite the contrary.' Those afflicted with the scurvy began to mend and in a short time they were restored to health. Constansó thus describes the discovery of the Bay of San Francisco: 'The last day of October the Expedition by land came in sight of Punta de los Reyes and the Farallones of the Port of San Francisco, whose landmarks, compared with those related by the log of the Pilot Cabrera Bueno, were found exact. Thereupon it became of evident knowledge that the Port of Monterey had been left behind; there being few who stuck to the contrary opinion. Nevertheless

the commandant resolved to send to reconnoiter the land as far as Point de los Reyes. The scouts who were commissioned for this purpose found themselves obstructed by immense estuaries, which run extraordinarily far back into the land and were obliged to make great detours to go around the heads of these. * * * Having arrived at the end of the first estuary and reconnoitered the land that would have to be followed to arrive at the Point de los Reyes, interrupted with new estuaries, scant pasturage and firewood and having recognized, besides this, the uncertainty of the news and the misapprehension the scouts had labored under, the commandant, with the advice of his officers, resolved upon a retreat to the Point of Pines in hopes of finding the Port of Monterey and encountering in it the Packet San José or the San Antonia, whose succor already was necessary; since of the provisions which had been taken in San Diego no more remained than some few sacks of flour of which a short ration was issued to each individual daily.

" 'On the eleventh day of November was put into execution the retreat in search of Monterey. The Spaniards reached said port and the Point of Pines on the 28th of November. They maintained themselves in this place until the 10th of December without any vessel having appeared in this time. For which reason and noting also a lack of victuals and that the sierra of Santa Lucia was covering itself with snow, the commandant, Don Gaspar de Portola, saw himself obliged to decide to continue the retreat unto San Diego, leaving it until a better occasion to return to the enterprise. On this retreat the Spaniards experienced some hardships and necessities, because they entirely lacked provisions, and because the long marches, which necessity obliged to make to reach San Diego, gave no time for seeking sustenance by the chase, nor did game abound equally everywhere. At this juncture they killed twelve mules of the pack-train on whose meat the folk nourished themselves unto San Diego, at which new establishment they arrived, all in health, on the 24th of January, 1770.'

"The San José, the third ship fitted out by Visitador-General Galvez, and which Governor Portolá expected to find in the Bay of Monterey, sailed from San José del Cabo in May, 1770, with supplies and a double crew to supply the loss of sailors on the other vessels, but nothing was ever heard of her afterwards. Pro-

visions were running low at San Diego, no ship had arrived, and Governor Portola had decided to abandon the place and return to Loreto. Father Junipero was averse to this and prayed unceasingly for the intercession of Saint Joseph, the patron saint of the expedition. A novena or nine days' public prayer was instituted to terminate with a grand ceremonial on March 19th, which was the saint's own day. But on the 23rd of March, when all were ready to depart, the packet San Antonia arrived. She had sailed from San Blas the 20th of December. She encountered a storm which drove her four hundred leagues from the coast; then she made land in 35 degrees north latitude. Turning her prow southward, she ran down to Point Concepcion, where at an anchorage in the Santa Barbara channel the captain, Perez, took on water and learned from the Indians of the return of Portola's expedition. The vessel then ran down to San Diego, where its opportune arrival prevented the abandonment of that settlement.

"With an abundant supply of provisions and a vessel to carry the heavier articles needed in forming a settlement at Monterey, Portola organized a second expedition. This time he took with him only twenty soldiers and one officer, Lieutenant Pedro Fages. He set out from San Diego on the 17th of April and followed his trail made the previous year, arriving in Monterey May 23rd. Father Serra and the engineer, Constansó, sailed on the San Antonia, which left the port of San Diego on the 16th of April."

CHAPTER XI

FATHER SERRA ARRIVES AT MONTEREY

One of the most momentous events in the history of Monterey, aside from the actual discovery of it, was that day, the 31st of May, when Father Serra arrived at its shores. It was through his efforts that California advanced at an astonishing pace, bringing the Indians to a better understanding with the white race, begetting attention from many other quarters of the world. It was through the amazing work of Father Serra (amazing in effect wrought through peacefulness) that the land advanced; minds, beclouded with superstition and fear, were swept clean of this ignorance. Doubts and misunderstandings were dispelled. Settlements were established; lands were tilled, progress was started. The mission of Spain, as brought in the gentleness of Father Serra, assumed a new significance. And for the first time the colonization of Alta California went unwaveringly forward. But for the genius of this one man, who knows but what the advancement of California might have been delayed many, many more years?

Returning to the trip of Father Serra: The *San Antonia* in her passage northward ran into heavy weather which drove her back again—as far south as the thirtieth degree of latitude. Then, continuing her way north again, she reached the Farallones, southwest of Point Reyes. Sailing from this point was far easier, and she proceeded along the coast until she rounded Point Pinos on the evening of Octave of Ascension Day, the 31st of May. All through that day Portola's men, who, it will be recalled, had arrived May 23rd, kept watch for the *San Antonia*, but to no avail. As evening drew on they lighted great beacon fires and continued their vigilance. Then, long after dusk had settled, the *San Antonia* sailed into the bay of Monterey and cast anchor. The people on shore grew excited; their cries, no doubt, surged as the tide all along the seacoast. They fired their cannon in salutation.

The following day, Portola and Lieutenant Fages and Father Crespi, who had accompanied Portola's expedition, crossed the peninsula of Point Pinos from the Carmelo, where they had established camp, and welcomed Father Serra and the entire crew "on the shore of the famous bay."

Father Crespi, who made notations of this event, wrote: "The delight aroused in all at finding themselves at last in the long-sought Port of Monterey is not easy to express in words. I therefore leave it to the consideration of him who may read about the hardships and privations and the rest that can be inferred from the account of the journey as related in the Diary. Orders were given to remove the camp from the arroyo near the Rio Carmelo to the newly discovered harbor of Monterey. The shore was closely examined, and then very near the ravine the pools of water and the oak trees were seen, especially the large one whose branches touched the sea when the tide was in, and where holy Mass was celebrated in the year 1602 when Sebastian Vizcaino's expedition was here."

On the next Sunday, Pentecost Sunday, June 3rd, formal possession was taken. Of this memorable event, Father Crespi wrote as follows:

"On the third day of June, 1770, Pentecost Sunday, when Commander Don Gaspar de Portola with his officers, subalterns, soldiers and the rest of the land expedition, Don Juan Perez, captain of the packet-boat *San Antonia*, with his sub-captain, Don Miguel del Pino, the whole crew and the rest of the sea expedition, and the Rev. Fr. Lector and Presidente of all the missions, Fr. Junipero Serra, with Fr. Juan Crespi, had assembled on the shore of the Port of Monterey, an enramada having been erected on the very spot and near the live-oak where in 1602 the Rev. Carmelite Fathers, who had come with the expedition of Commandante Sebastian Vizcaino, celebrated the holy Sacrifice of the Mass, the altar having been arranged and the bells suspended, the celebration began with the loud ringing of the bells.

"The said Fr. Presidente vested with alb and stole, all kneeling, then implored the assistance of the Holy Ghost (whose coming upon the small assembly of the apostles and disciples of the Lord the Universal Church celebrated that day), and sang the hymn of the day, the *Veni Creator Spiritus.* Thereupon he blessed water and with it the great cross, which had been constructed

and which all helped to raise and place in position, and then venerated. He then sprinkled the whole surroundings and the shore with holy water in order to drive away all infernal enemies. Thereupon High Mass was commenced at the altar upon which stood the image of Our Lady, which through the inspector-general, the Most Rev. Francisco de Lorenzana, Archbishop of Mexico, had donated for the expedition to Monterey. This first holy Mass was sung by the said Fr. Presidente, who also preached after the Gospel, whilst repeated salutes from the cannons of the bark and volleys from the muskets and firearms supplied the lack of musical instruments. At the close of the holy Mass the *Salve Regina* was sung before the lovely statue of Our Lady, and then the whole ceremony concluded with the *Te Deum Laudamus.* * *

"When this function of the Church was finished, the commander took formal possession of the land in the name of our King, Don Carlos III (whom God preserve), by raising anew the royal standard which had already been unfolded after the erection of the cross. Then followed the customary ceremonies of the uprooting of herbs, throwing of stones, and drawing up a record of all that had transpired."

The formal act of taking possession, as recounted by "Don Gaspar de Portola, Captain of Dragoons of the Regiment of Spain, Governor of California and Commander-in-Chief of the Expedition to the ports of San Diego and Monterey, situated in thirty-three and thirty-seven degrees, in accordance with the Royal Decree," reads:

"By these presents be it known that in the Camp and Port of Monterey on the third day of the month of June of this year, in fullment of the orders which I bear from the Most Illustrious Señor Visitor General Don Joseph de Galvez of the Council of the Indies, as appears from the decree which he was pleased to give me, naming me Commander-in-Chief of said expedition in virtue of his having the viceregal powers, finding among the chapters of the orders which I had to execute, that as soon as I should arrive at the Port of Monterey, I should take possession in the name of his Catholic Majesty, I ordered the officers of the sea and land to assemble, and begged the Reverend Fathers to please attend, in obedience to the said order, commanding the troops to be at arms, and notifying them of what had been thus ordered, and having made these preliminary arrangements, and having set up

the triumphant standard of the Holy Cross as the primary care of the Catholic, Christian and pious zeal of His Majesty, as is manifested by the superior orders and is known, far and wide, from the fact that his royal treasury is open for the purpose of gathering the evangelical harvest which is being undertaken for the sake of the many gentiles who inhabit this country. I proceeded to take possession in the name of His Majesty, in the form provided by the decree, going through the ceremony of throwing earth and stones to the four Winds and proclaiming possession in the Royal name of His Catholic Majesty Don Carlos Third, may God guard him, who must be recognized as sovereign of said Port of Monterey and such other lands as is right and fitting. And in order that it may be known for all time, I sign this and the officers sign it as witnesses. And since it is the duty of the sea officers to understand the affairs of ports better than those of land, I desire that the captain of the ship named *El Principe* (the *San Antonia*, the ship being known by both names), which is in said Port, Don Juan Perez and his pilot, Don Miguel del Pino, and other land officers, shall be witness in order that they may give fuller faith and credence.

(Signed) "Gaspar de Portola."

Father Crespi wrote of this event:

"With this day, therefore, divine worship began here, and the famous Port of Monterey passed into the dominion and command of our king. All the officers joined the Fathers in a repast on the bay shore, whilst the men of the land expedition and the crew of the ship enjoyed themselves similarly amid the salutes of the artillery and the musketry. * * *

"On the same day of Pentecost, June 3d, the Rev. Fr. Presidente of the missions, Fr. Junipero Serra, in the name of the king and of the Rev. Fr. Guardian and the venerable Discretory of the Apostolic College of the Propagation of the Faith of San Fernando de Mexico, established the new mission under the title of San Carlos Boromeo. Naming as principal patron of the new church the most holy Patriarch St. Joseph, he took possession of it in the name of said college, and assigned as his fellow missionary Fr. Juan Crespi, his disciple in philosophy."

On this same day Alejo Viño, the ship calker of the *San Antonia* who had died the day before, was buried, with impressive

funeral rites, at the foot of the large cross which had been erected in front of the proposed chapel.

At this juncture plans were laid for a presidio—an essential feature of the colonization work. Already a presidio had been founded at San Diego and plans had been made for three others; one each in Monterey, Santa Barbara and San Francisco. The object of the presidios was to provide headquarters for military districts. Thus, by sheltering troops, guards were available for the neighboring missions and for the pueblos, if any, in surrounding territory. Under the direction of Portola rude huts were constructed in Monterey for the shelter of the soldiers, the officers and the padres. Around the square containing these huts, a palisade of poles was erected. This palisade was later to be supplanted with walls of adobe and stone. The inclosure then measured one hundred and ten yards on each side. According to Bancroft's "History of California": "On the north were the main entrance, the guard house, and the warehouses; on the west the houses of the governor commandante and other officers, some fifteen apartments in all; on the east nine houses for soldiers, and a blacksmith shop; and on the south, besides nine similar houses, was the presidio church, opposite the main gateway."

A clearer idea of the presidio may be gleaned, perhaps, by studying the description made by Vancouver, the English navigator, in 1792, at which time he visited the presidio of Monterey:

"The buildings of the presidio form a parallelogram or long square comprehending an area of about three hundred yards long by two hundred and fifty wide, making one entire enclosure. The external wall is of the same magnitude and built with the same materials, and except that the officers' apartments are covered with red tile made in the neighborhood, the whole presents the same lonely, uninteresting appearance as that already described at San Francisco. Like that establishment, the several buildings for the use of the officers, soldiers, and for the protection of stores and provisions are erected along the walls on the inside of the inclosure, which admits of but one entrance for carriages or persons on horseback; this, as at San Francisco, is on the side of the square fronting the church which was rebuilding with stone like that at San Carlos. * * *

"At each corner of the square is a small kind of block house raised a little above the top of the wall where swivels might be

mounted for its protection. On the outside, before the entrance into the presidio, which fronts the shores of the bay, are placed seven cannon, four nine and three three-pounders, mounted. The guns are planted on the open plain ground without breastwork or other screen for those employed in working them or the least protection from the weather."

Such was the Monterey Presidio at a somewhat later date. The nucleus of this had been laid, however, with the arrival of Portola. To him goes the credit for doing lasting work in the founding of the military headquarters here. On June 15th, 1770, Portola despatched a soldier and a sailor, both of whom had volunteered, to carry his (Portola's) messages and other mail on horseback to Governor Ármona at Mission Todos Santos in Lower California. They arrived there August 2nd, and the news of the discovery of Monterey, which they brought, caused great excitement and rejoicing among the people there. Father Palou sang a High Mass of thanksgiving on the following day. Although Ármona immediately sent a ship across the gulf in order to forward the despatches to Mexico, another courier had arrived ahead. Then, as Father Crespi wrote: "His Excellency wanted the whole population forthwith to share in the happiness which the information gave him, and therefore ordered a general ringing of the bells of the cathedral and all other churches, in order that all might realize the importance of the Port of Monterey to the Crown of our monarch, and also to give thanks for the happy success of the expeditions; for by their means the dominion of our king had been extended over more than three leagues of good land inhabited by numerous heathen people who in time would submit to our holy Catholic Faith. Being a Catholic, the viceroy directed that a Solemn Mass of thanksgiving should be sung in the cathedral at which he assisted with the whole viceregal court. He moreover commanded that a short history of the expeditions should be printed and distributed."

Having received instructions from Galvez to turn the military command over to Lieutenant Pedro Fages and to proceed to Mexico, Portola soon did so, and with Constansó sailed from Monterey on the *San Antonia* July 9th. He arrived at San Blas August 1. The work of Portola was acknowledged to be deserving of promotion, and he was soon made a lieutenant-colonel. In 1776 he was made governor of Puebla, from which office, eight years later,

he was relieved to retire to Spain (at the age of sixty) with the rank of colonel.

Not finding sufficient lands suitable for cultivation nor an abundant water supply around the territory that composes the present presidio, Father Serra searched adjacent localities for a more suitable place in which to erect the proposed mission. He discovered an ideal spot in the valley of the Rio Carmelo—over the mountain ridge to the South. Here was an abundant supply of water from the river and plenty of good soil. Not long after this discovery, he received permission from the viceroy to establish the mission beside the Rio Carmelo.

Another act of Father Serra's at this time had an effect that has lasted to the present day. He suggested that De Croix establish a chain of missions up and down the coast for the purpose of facilitating communication and to aid in the conversion of the many Indians abounding in the country. "For that purpose he prayed His Excellency to send more missionaries well provided with vestments, sacred vessels, house furniture, and especially agricultural implements, so that the Indians, besides becoming Christians, might be induced to lead an industrious and civilized life, and thus learn to support themselves."

Father Serra's message took immediate effect, the viceroy resolving to establish ten new missions, in addition to the San Buenaventure and those already founded. According to Fr. Zephyrin Englehardt in his "Missions and Missionaries of California": "Five (missions) were to be located on the peninsula between San Fernando de Velicatá and San Diego, and to bear the names respectively of San Joaquín, Santa Ana, San Juan Capistrano, San Pascual Baylon, and San Féliz de Cantalicio. The other five missions were to be erected between San Diego and the Port of San Francisco, and to be known as San Gabriel, San Louis Obispo, San Antonio, Santa Clara and San Francisco. At the request of De Croix and Don Gálvez the College assigned thirty ecclesiastics to California; twenty for the old missions on the peninsula, and ten for the five new missions proposed for Upper California, in order that there might be, as the college constitutions required, two friars at each establishment."

On this matter the viceroy instructed Comandante Pedro Fages as follows:

"In order that the founding of the new missions on the coast

may not be delayed, the packet *El Principe* brings ten Fathers, abundant supplies, farm implements and other useful articles, as you will see from the invoice which the comisario at San Blas, Don Francisco Trillo Bermudez must forward and give to Don Juan Pérez. You will distribute the supplies in orderly proportion between the presidio and the Missionary Fathers. You will moreover deliver to the latter the clothing which may not be of use to the soldiers, also the field implements and carpenter tools which may not be needed at the presidio, so that the missionaries may go and teach the Indians those profitable occupations to which they can and must accustom themselves in order to be useful to themselves and the State. You will also assign of the cattle and mules, which have been brought up from Velicatá, a certain number to the Fathers. Two boxes of medicines also go along in the *San Antonia* for Dr. Prat who is to give a part of them to the Fathers, whose missions are not in the vicinity of the presidio, with necessary instructions for using them.

"If on receipt of this it has not yet been done, you will make preparations to establish Mission San Carlos on the banks of the Rio Carmelo, and you will station there a sufficient guard of soldiers. You will observe the same arrangement with regard to the other missions which are to be founded along the coast to San Diego as I herewith instruct you. For this purpose I this day give the necessary orders, so that you may obtain the soldiers whom Captain Rivera is bringing up from Loreto.

"With this understanding the said ten missionaries are sent. Eight of them are necessary to found four Doctrinas at suitable distances between San Diego and Monterey, in addition to that of San Buenaventura. Then, as soon as possible, you will by land and sea, examine the Port of San Francisco, situated much to the north of Monterey. You will place yourself in accord with the Fr. Presidente of the missions to the end that a mission may be established there, so that the said important locality may not be exposed to foreign occupation. I herewith charge you very particularly to proceed to establish said missions without the least delay as an object demanding your first attention. In order that you may execute this with punctuality, I direct the captain at Guaymas to send you twelve soldiers to replace those who have died on the voyage."

These missionaries arrived in the Bay of Monterey on board

the *San Antonia* the 14th of April, 1771, amid great rejoicing of Father Serra and Father Crespi. A solemn High Mass with deacon and sub-deacon was sung and a sermon preached in celebration of the Mystery of the Holy Eucharist on May 30th. With such a large number of priests present the ceremony was impressive with splendor. When the ceremony was concluded Father Serra assigned the missionaries to their sundry missions, although only two of them, the San Diego and the San Carlos, as yet existed.

CHAPTER XII

REMOVAL OF MISSION SAN CARLOS TO THE NEW SITE

On June 9th, 1771, Father Serra inspected the valley of the Carmelo in order to find a suitable site for the mission of San Carlos, which he had already planned to remove from the vicinity of the presidio. Finding a favorable locality, he put three sailors and four Lower Californians to work cutting timber for the edifice. Soldiers supervised the work and protected the laborers. When the work had started, Father Serra departed from the scene of activity, hastening with Fathers Miguel Pieras and Buenaventura Sitjar, three sailors, and some Lower California neophytes, to found Mission San Antonio de Padua. This they did on the banks of the Rio San Antonio (with which name Father Serra christened the river); and on July 14th the first holy Mass was celebrated here under a brushwood shelter in honor of San Antonio, the patron of the new mission. While making an address to his followers, Father Serra caught sight of a pagan Indian who "had doubtless been attracted by the sound of the bell. On the instant Father Serra remarked: I hope to God, and in virtue of the intercession of San Antonio, that this mission will be a settlement for many Christians; for we see, what was not observed at the founding of the missions thus far established, that at the first holy Mass the first-fruit from paganism has assisted. He will not fail to communicate what he has seen to the other savages." "Immediately after the holy sacrifice," says Fr. Zephyrin Englehardt, "Fr. Serra hastened over to the Indian, caressed him and gave him some little presents hoping that he would induce his people to visit the mission. The impression created must have been favorable; for from that day the gentiles would appear in crowds to see the kind of strangers, and receive the glass beads and other trinkets which they coveted. In return they brought pine-nuts, acorns, and wild fruits to the Fathers, whose language

they did not understand, but whose gentleness had won their hearts."

After remaining fifteen days, during which time the necessary buildings were constructed and instructions were given the Fathers, Father Serra retraced his steps to Monterey. He went to the Carmelo in August to hasten the work of construction on this mission, which, up to this time, had proceeded very slowly, and in December, 1771, he and Father Crespi with five soldiers moved into the new buildings.

CHAPTER XIII

SAN CARLOS MISSION—YESTERDAY AND TODAY

Before continuing with the work and life of Father Serra, we shall make a slight digression to study the San Carlos Mission in detail, not alone from the standpoint of its being the second mission in California and the missionary's headquarters, but from the point of its construction as well.

A detailed account of the erection of this mission has been supplied by Palou: "* * * * a small chapel was erected together with living quarters of four rooms, a large room for a granary, and also a house to be used as a dwelling and kitchen for the boys. All were of wood and had flat roofs and were enclosed in a good stockade. In the corner of the square there was a house, also with a flat roof, for the soldiers, and near, some corrals for the cattle and stock. As the workers were few, and progress could not be rapid because all the tools and utensils were in the old mission joining the Royal Presidio, work was not finished and the removal was not completed until the last of December of the said year of '71, in which year all was moved, the two ministers of the mission remaining to say mass at the Royal Presidio until establishment of the new mission was entirely completed.

"After its removal the mission of San Carlos was in a pleasant location, situated on a hill with a view over an extensive plain, which promises abundant crops. It extends along the Carmel River whose waters flow all the year, for although in dry seasons the water is not very plentiful, in rainy seasons no crossing can be found. The plain has many trees, willows, and other kinds, blackberry bushes, and quantities of Castillian roses. Near by on the left, at the foot of the hill, is a good lake with so much water, especially in rainy seasons, that its banks cannot hold all that it receives from the hills, and at such times the water runs off in a large ditch to the sea, which is at a distance of little more than two gun shots, in a little bay south of the Punta de Pinos; but in dry seasons the lake holds a quantity of good water, and

has some springs. In rainy seasons, a dam formed in part by the hill extending across the lake makes it easy to retain enough water for all irrigating purposes on the plain.

"The mission is surrounded by small hills with good pastures for all kinds of cattle; it has an abundance of firewood as well as timber for building purposes, such as pine, white elms, and some redwoods; and at a distance of less than a league there are many cypresses on the point called by the same name, on account of the abundance of the trees; it has a beautiful sky, although after the rains the clouds are thick; the view looks out towards the sea upon the bay mentioned above; in the vicinity of the mission there are several rancherias of gentiles who, since the founding of the mission, have begun to frequent it. * * *"

Father Serra, describing the mission buildings in 1773, said: "The first and most northerly, and consequently most remote, from this city, is the Mission of San Carlos de Monterey in the vicinity of the Rio Carmelo. This is the administrative head of the missions. It was founded Sunday, on the Feast of the Holy Ghost, 3rd day of June, 1770, but as it was for an entire year incorporated with the Royal Presidio from which it was afterwards transferred to the place it now occupies, it is referred to as being established a year later.

"They first turned their attention to the building of the stockade and dwellings. This mission has a natural advantage over the others on account of its location among an abundance of woods of various kinds, all easily obtained, and in its situation in a part where the soldiers so earnestly apply themselves to the work. To God praise be given!

"The stockade of rough timbers, thick and high with ravelins in the corners, is something more than seventy varas long and forty-three wide, and is closed at night with a key although it is not secure because of lack of nails. An entrance can easily be forced by the knocking off of the timbers. The main house is seven varas wide and fifty long. It is divided into six rooms, all with doors and locks. The walls are made of rough timbers plastered over with mud both inside and out. Those of the principal rooms are whitewashed with lime. One of the rooms serves provisionally as a church.

"Near this building on the outside is the guard-house or barracks of the soldiers, and adjoining it, their kitchen. All are

enclosed in the stockade. All of these buildings have flat roofs of clay and mud, and for most of them a kitchen has been made. There are various little houses for the Indians with straw or hay roofs. Attention was later given to a small garden which is near at hand, but for want of a gardener it has made little progress."

In the year 1774 a workshop, constructed of adobe and of palisades with thatched roof, two houses for servants, a house of a flat earth roof for the surgeon and his family, buildings for the captain of the guard and family and another for the smith and his family, were erected. Also during this year a large adobe oven for baking bread was built as well as a number of small ovens for the Indians.

Lapérouse, visiting the mission in 1786, described the place in the following terms: "After traversing a small plain covered with herds of cattle * * * we ascended the hills, and were struck with the sound of several bells which announced our arrival, of which the monks had been apprized by a horseman whom the governor had detached for the purpose.

"We were received like lords of a parish when they make their first appearance on their estate; the president of the missions, clothed in his cope, the holy water sprinkler in his hand, waited for us at the door of the church, which was illuminated the same as on their greatest festivals; he conducted us to the foot of the high altar, where the *Te Deum* was sung in thanksgiving for the happy success of our voyage.

"Before we entered the church, we had passed by a place where the Indians of both sexes were ranged in a row; they expressed no surprise in their countenances, and we were left in doubt whether we were the subject of their conversation during the rest of the day. The parish church is very neat, although covered with straw. It is dedicated to Saint Charles, and ornamented with fairly good paintings, copied from Italian originals. There is a picture of Hell, in which the painter seems to have borrowed a little of the imagination of Callot; but as it is absolutely necessary to strike the senses of these new converts with the most lively impressions, I am persuaded that a similar representation has never done more service in any country, and that it would be impossible for the protestant mode of worship, which forbids images, and nearly all the other ceremonies of our church, to make any progress among this people. I have my doubts, whether the

picture of Paradise, which is placed opposite to that of Hell, produces so good an effect on them; the state of quietness which it represents, and that complacent satisfaction of the elect who surround the throne of the Supreme Being, are ideas too sublime for rude, unpolished man; but it is necessary to place rewards by the side of punishments, and it was a rigorous duty not to allow the smallest change in the kind of delights promised by the Catholic religion.

"We repassed, on going out of the church, the same row of male and female Indians, who had never quitted their post during the *Te Deum*; the children only had removed a little, and formed groups around the missionary's house, which is in front of the church, as are also the different storehouses. On the right stands the Indian village, consisting of about fifty cabins, which serve as dwelling places for seven hundred and forty persons of both sexes, including their children, which compose the mission of Saint Charles, or of Monterey. * * *"

Under the presidency of Lasuén, whose history we shall come to anon, work went ahead to replace the temporary structures that had served as a place of worship, with stone. On July 7, 1793, the first stone was laid, starting the construction of a more durable church. In September, 1797, four years later, the new edifice was completed and dedicated for service. Its description, as supplied in the "Archives of California" was that it was well built of cut stone (canterra), roofed with tile, and presented a harmonious and beautiful appearance.

The mission quadrangle was completed, or completely enclosed, in 1815 with the construction of several buildings. In 1818 a chapel was erected adjoining the church proper. This served not alone as a place of worship but as a protection for the older buildings against the heavy south winds.

Two bells had been provided, a number of buildings painted, and numerous improvements made by 1820. Twelve crosses were placed at equal distances along the road on the approach to the mission; these represented the "Via Crucis."

January, 1831, Echeandía issued a decree of secularization, which would have organized San Carlos and San Gabriel into towns; but a change in administration whereby Manuel Victoria displaced Echeandía, forestalled this order. However, on November 4, 1834, "the act of secularization was adopted and an-

nounced by Governor Figueroa. By it San Carlos and Monterey were combined as a curacy of the first class."

But the mission by this time had declined, walls were crumbling, roofs were sagging, and the old buildings that had meant so much in the Yesterdays looked utterly deplorable now. Edmund Roberts, a special agent of the United States government engaged in diplomatic service, visited the mission in 1836; describing it as follows:

"At this time there are twenty-one missions in Upper California, all of which are in a state of decay. I visited that at Carmelo, which I found in ruins, and almost abandoned. It is about four miles from Monte-rey. The road to it is easy, and agreeably varied by hill and dale, everywhere covered by pine and other forest trees, and remarkably free from undergrowth.

"The mission building is, perhaps, a hundred yards square, one story high, and roofed with tiles. We rode through the gate, which was just ready to fall from its hinges, into the great central court, round which it is built, where we found eight or ten Indians engaged in repairing the roof. They informed us that the Padre was at the presidio, or garrison, and that there was no one to show us the church, which exteriorly was in a dilapidated state. All the windows opened in upon the court, and were heavily barred with iron, with the design of preventing the escape of the Christian neophytes, who were locked up at night in apartments to which these windows give light and air. Some of those were open. They were strewed with rubbish and filth, and, altogether, in a worse condition than the commonest stable should be."

Abel Du Petit-Thouars, the French explorer, visiting the Carmel Valley the following year, described the mission in the following words:

"Upon our arrival at the mission of San Carlos we were struck by the solitude of the place and by the state of ruin in which the buildings were found. The grounds surrounding this establishment, formerly covered with rich crops, did not offer more to the eye than a picture of the most complete sterility. Through a little door we entered a large court shaped like a parallelogram; this court is enclosed on three sides by the dwellings of the neophytes; the fourth is occupied by the storerooms for the reserve food supply. A large wooden cross still stood in the center of this en-

closure. In one of the corners of the court is the church, the principal door of which opens on the field outside of the mission, but one is able to communicate with the establishment by means of a small lateral chapel. We saw no one upon entering the court of the mission: it was deserted! the lodgings were without doors and windows and the roofs, broken in many places, were already giving way under their own weight. On visiting the part at the north of the mission we entered a large room, dark and without furniture, where we met Father *Jose-Maria del Real*, the sole surviving ecclesiastic at the mission: that religious was one of those who had been sent out from the college of Zacatecas. After a reception at first dubious, he recovered from the surprise which our appearance had caused him; he became very polite and with great courtesy showed us about the ruins: we visited with him in the ruined buildings in the midst of which he lived without society, and, judging from appearances, very miserably. Two or three families of Indians, fixed by habit, still lived in the ruins which surrounded the mission. * * * The garden of the mission, situated on the ground which stretches out in a gentle slope from the mission to the edge of the river Carmelo, offers scarcely any signs of cultivation. Formerly very fertile, the garden produced in abundance all the vegetables and fruits necessary not only for the establishment, but also for the town of Monterey and for vessels in port. At present it is entirely abandoned, the fence no longer remains, and the few fruit trees which are still to be seen here yield scarcely any produce, and that is always consumed before it attains a suitable degree of maturity.

"Afterwards we went to visit the church, entering through the lateral chapel which gives access to the church through the court of the mission. Upon entering the chapel I noticed several paintings on wood which represented subjects delineated in the holy scriptures; but my attention was particularly attracted by the sight of a large painting of *San Isidro el labrador* (patron of the laborers), which is at the left upon entering the chapel. It was hanging at an angle by one of the upper corners of the frame. In this position the saint and his plough looked upside down. Our reverend guide, after having pointed out to me the painting to the right, made three genuflections and as many signs of the cross and afterwards appeared absorbed in profound meditation from which I could scarcely rouse him. I wished to know the

reason for these particular devotions, suspecting that a little of the supernatural might well have become mingled with an event in itself perfectly natural. At last, pressed by me to declare this mystery, the reverend father, in a tone of great sorrow and in a deep voice, informed me that during an earthquake this picture had been thus disarranged and that surely this catastrophe had been the manifestation of the will of God and a definite prediction of the ruin of the mission. After these words the brother, don Jose, crossed himself again and relapsed into his pious reveries! Until recently there could be seen in the church a picture which represented La Aerouse arriving at the mission of San Carlos and the brilliant reception which was tendered him by all the mission: this picture disappeared at the time of the departure of the Spanish missionaries. * * *

"We also saw in the church a portable organ given at one time by Captain Vancouver to the president of the missions of California whom he met at the port of San Diego. That organ, of an extreme Gothic type, must have been very beautiful; it was not yet entirely out of service."

By 1841 the mission had almost entirely disintegrated; at least it was so far gone as to be no longer habitable. Duflot de Mofras, seeing it that year, spoke as follows:

"The mission of Mount Carmel, situated at the northern extremity of the Sierra de Santa Lucia and hemmed in by the mountains, is no longer a flourishing institution. In 1834 it still assembled five hundred neophytes; it had three thousand horned cattle, seven hundred horses, seven thousand sheep and harvested fifteen hundred fanegas of grain. Today all has gone; under the pretext of forming a pueblo in the vicinity, the mission was allowed to fall in ruins. The Indian population is composed of not more than thirty individuals. This establishment, as also the one at Soledad, lying nearest the seat of the government, was one of the first to be despoiled. The missionary in charge of Carmel now resides at Monterey."

The next description of importance was made ten years later, 1852, by J. R. Bartlett of the United States and Mexican Boundary Commission. This, the first description rendered after the American flag was raised over Monterey, reads:

"The Mission establishment, which consists of a church and the usual accompaniments of a large inclosure with ranges of

small buildings, stands upon a little elevation between the hills and the sea, from which it is distant only a few hundred yards. The church, which is built of stone, has two towers, containing six bells; its walls are very thick, with an arched roof, and supported by heavy buttresses. The towers, as usual, differ. The adobe buildings near, were all in a state of ruin, and tenantless; not a human being was to be seen near, while the rank grass and weeds which monopolized the ground, showed that even curiosity did not often tempt visitors to its deserted precincts. One corner of the church began to show the ravages of time; its cornice had fallen, and weeds had already taken root among its opening crevices. The remains of an orchard and vineyard, are still seen near, in a decaying state. Small pine trees cover the hills within a short distance of the church; and on its other side, the ocean rolls up its waves with a dull monotonous sound, which adds to the solitary feeling of the place."

Under the United States government full title was confirmed to the church authorities to those lands that had been given over to religious purposes; church site, burial grounds, gardens, orchards, etc. In December, 1858, an official survey was made by the United States government, and a patent was granted the authorities of the church on the 19th of October, 1859. Thus, after being in the hands of the Mexicans for a disastrous, if short, length of time, the holy properties passed back into the care of Spain.

The first attempt at restoration of the mission that is now on record was made by Father Sorentine, the parish priest, in March, 1856. Although he did little to restore the ruined buildings, he made a search for the body of Father Serra in the rock-strewn grounds. Father Sorentine, in reporting of his attempts, said:

"The next day, the 11th (of March), the dirt that was in the altar fell on the gospel side and following the traditional directions, we began to excavate and we found in this one a well sealed vault, with a coffin, in which there was a priest with a stole and good vestments. We could see by the stole that it had epaulettes of fine gold, easily recognized. This body of a priest that we found, so luxuriously vested, something that none of the others had, makes me believe that it is one we are looking for."

By 1884 nearly the entire roof and many of the walls of the mission had fallen in. Fortunately, however, by this time inter-

707242 A

est was awakened in the systematic restoration of the mission. Literally, at its last breath, it was to be brought back to life, to breathe again with religious ceremony, to be a historical landmark visited each ensuing year by thousands of enrapt spectators. Mrs. Leland Stanford and others displayed a keen interest in seeing the restoration go forward apace in this year, 1884; thus saving the historic church from utter oblivion. The work of the Very Rev. Angelo Casanova in this year of 1884 was perhaps the most important of all in the restoration work of this period, while the untiring efforts of Monsignor Ramon M. Mestres of the present day have gone far toward the correction of the mission's restored style—bringing it back to its true form.

A chapter from Maria Antonia Field's accurate and beautiful work, "Chimes of Mission Bells," is authoritative on the restoration period. The chapter reads:

"As we have remarked in the preceding chapters, the Spanish Missions of California were gradually despoiled of their wealth and beauty, by the Acts of Secularization passed by the Mexican government. These Acts of Secularization virtually meant the rapine of Mission wealth by the Mexican government, and the expulsion of the Spanish priests, even though this was accomplished slowly and tactfully. This also meant untold hardships to the Indian families around the Missions, while prominent Spanish residents who were friends of the Spanish priests and loyal to the Spanish crown, were ofttimes made to suffer. Gradually the Missions became hugh masses of ruins; until within comparatively recent years interest in the Spanish Colonial history of California has been reawakened and several movements have been started for their preservation. In many instances these movements have been undertaken by well meaning persons, who, however are not equipped with the proper knowledge of Spanish architecture, history or real sentiment—but there are, of course noble exceptions, and as is natural, the Missions who have been under Spanish priests, are the ones which are truest to their atmosphere. As we have stated, San Carlos Mission of Carmelo was the headquarters of all the Missions and the burial place of Junipero Serra, while Monterey was the capital of New Spain, and her present parish church was the chapel of the old Spanish presidio. Now, one of the most prominent and solid movements of Spanish Mission restoration existing in California today, is the one start-

ed by the Very Rev. Raymond Mestres, the parish priest or rector of San Carlos del Carmelo. Father Mestres is a native of Barcelona, Spain, and has made a life study of Spanish architecture, Colonial history and archeology, and with his committee has undertaken the stupendous task of restoring San Carlos Mission, absolutely true to its pristine lines,—this means the entire quadrangle of the Mission, which winds around several acres of land, —then while the Mission proper was restored in 1884 by the Very Rev. Angelo Casanova, the roof and vault were not restored according to the original lines, hence this will have to be changed. As this goes to press we are glad to be able to say that this work is progressing beautifully, and that the restored portion of the quadrangle which housed the Mission Indians will be used in time for one of the most interesting museums the State of California has yet possessed. The foundations have all been excavated and these have been strictly adhered to in the work of restoration and the Mission tradition has been revived. A few interesting old Indian families still live around Carmelo Valley, and every consideration is shown these descendants of the first Mission converts. Precious paintings, statues, altar vessels and other ecclesiastical objects which were sent from Spain in the early days of its foundation for the Mission, many of them coming as gifts from the royal family, are still adorning the Mission, and old Mission festivals and customs are quickly being revived, to the delight of every Californian, nay, of thousands of tourists from every part of the United States,—for while old Spanish California families naturally take the lead in the financing of the enterprise, as well as interest in the work; still our files show most courteous letters of congratulations and inquiry; and our books, donations from persons of nearly every state in the Union. August 28th of the present year, 1924, will see the solemn consecration of the magnificent sarcophagus just completed by the eminent Spanish-American sculptor, Jo J. Mora, to Junipero Serra. This is the gift of Spanish families from California and elsewhere, and stands in the Serra Memorial Chapel erected just outside of the Mission, and built from the foundations of the primitive chapel which was used by the Spanish pioneers during the first fourteen years that elapsed from the time they landed until the Mission was built, for it took that length of time to build the beautiful

and spacious Mission, with its ornate Spanish architecture, and the delays caused by the inconveniences of primitive times."

It has probably been noticed by the reader that little has been said of the interior of the mission in the foregoing accounts. As the interior of the Mission San Carlos is unique in a number of ways and not the least important of the building's many points of interest, it may prove lucrative to quote from "The Architectural History of Mission San Carlos Borromeo," by Frances R. Smith, which deals adequately with the subject. From the pages of this work, we learn that:

"The interior of the church of San Carlos Borromeo is one of the most picturesque of all the missions of California. The main chapel is twenty-eight feet, eight and one-half inches in width and measures one hundred twenty-five feet, four inches from the front wall to the first step approaching the sanctuary; from this point to the rear wall there is an additional twenty-five feet, ten and one-half inches. This area is separated from the remainder of the church by a low railing as well as being elevated several inches above the floor level.

"Subdued light is permitted to penetrate the thick walls through comparatively narrow windows, three on the left of the entrance and four on the right. A most interesting star window over the front entrance furnishes additional light to the church through the balcony.

"The beauty of the nave was enhanced by an arched ceiling, the massive tile roof being supported by arches constructed in a most skillful manner. Only at Carmel were stone arches extensively employed. * * * The spring of the arch being gradually met in the massive walls and stone pilasters. * * * From the line of the richly ornamented cornice the arch was built strictly for utility and it was the contact with the stone pilasters, the increased proportion of the upper wall, and the buttress against the same section * * * which gave the line of thrust its resistance. * * * This construction has been referred to as a nave roof of vaulted and ancient construction. So unusual is the construction that it is quite possible the principle of the catenary curve may have been used in these arches.

"In addition to the three stone arches supplemental wooden arches also helped to sustain the roof. Caps, which are still a part of the interior stone cornice, mark, it is said, the places upon

which these wooden arches rested. One stone arch has remained and is quite as perfect as the day it was constructed. Although there is but little spring, it supports the spacious balcony. * * *

"Upon entering the great doorway * * * one may turn to the right and find a steep and narrow stairway. Twenty irregular sandstone steps, measuring about two feet six inches in length, one foot two inches rise, make two complete turns around a column of stone nine inches in diameter. These steps, worn by the tramp of Indian, priest and tourist, lead to the balcony, which is lighted by the famous star window. * * *

"The baptistry to the left of the entrance is a memento of workmen skilled in stone-cutting. For it should be stated that the numerous carvings in the soft sandstone used throughout the great walls of the church, form one of its most interesting features, the granite foundations upon which the edifice is built having provided resistance against earthquake and storm. Four columns support a Gothic ceiling, the ribs of which are carefully proportioned and are constructed of short lengths of sandstone. The floor of the baptistry is paved with tiles. The entrance is an arched doorway of stone. * * * A framework of wood fitted within the stone arch held perpendicular rods which formed an open screen.

"The chapel located at the left adjoining the baptistry is reached by the most elaborate doorway in the church. * * * Although the room measures twenty-eight feet by fourteen feet in size it is lighted by one small window whose outer curves are simple and effective. These outer lines appear to have represented a halo and the window probably held a small statue. * * * Upon the wall of this chapel is a colored decoration including a prayer in Spanish. This chapel may also be entered by means of an outside door.

"As one approaches further toward the altar another door is found leading to the left into the mission court. * * * During the rebuilding the arched top (of the doorway) was made square and it is said that the sandstone carvings from the doorway of the priest's quarters, then in ruin, were transferred and inserted within this doorway of the church. * * *

"The altar of the church is approached by steps of excellent proportion which extend the width of the building, while a spacious arch in the rear wall gives added dignity. A plaque found

in the debris of the altar * * * was presented to Mrs. Leland Stanford by Father Casanova and is now in the collection of mission relics in the museum of Stanford University. This is outlined in gold paper and a circle of red pigment, probably ochre. * * * To the right within the railing is the doorway to the sacristy. * * * The irregular shape of certain walls of the sacristy makes it quite probable that this part belonged to a group of buildings erected previous to the building of the stone church. * * *

"In the sacristy is to be seen one of the well built stairways of the mission. This stairway is the approach to the pulpit, the floor of which is a solid piece of sandstone carving. The door of the pulpit is hand carved and is the same in design as that in the main doorway at San Fernando. It is probable that the designer at San Carlos worked also at San Fernando. The lavabo in the sacristy ranks as one of the finest examples of stone carving in the mission."

From this mission the work of directing all California missions was undertaken. It became the headquarters for Father Serra and other mission workers. Although official reports always referred to this mission as San Carlos de Monterey, or San Carlos alone, it has often been alluded to as Mission Carmelo because of its proximity to the Rio Carmelo.

CHAPTER XIV

THE FUNCTION OF THE MISSION

So much for the aspect of the mission and of its location. But what about the Indians under its guidance, those people for whom the missions were originally founded? What did they do during the time they were under the Fathers' guidance? How did they conduct themselves? What changes took place within them when under the christianizing influence? In answering these questions we must turn to an unquestioned authority—perhaps the foremost authority—Father Englehardt. He says:

"The principal occupation of the mission Indians was agriculture. This included the clearing of the land, ploughing, planting grain, building irrigating ditches, irrigating the soil, harvesting the crops, threshing the wheat and barley, husking corn, picking beans, peas, lentils and garbanzos, gathering grapes and fruits, etc. The implements were very primitive. The plough, which is still used in many districts of Mexico, was composed of two pieces of timber. One of these was formed of a crooked branch of such a shape that it constituted the sole and the handle or stilt. A sharp piece of iron was fitted to the point of the sole. The other piece was a beam of undressed timber long enough to reach the yoke which was fastened with thongs of rawhide to the horns of two oxen that drew the plough. This beam was inserted into the upper part of the main piece and connected with the sole by a small upright piece of wood on which it would slide, and which was fixed by two wedges. By withdrawing these wedges the beam was elevated or lowered, and by this means the plough was regulated as to the depth of the furrow. The ploughman went on one side holding the handle or stilt with his right hand and managing the goad with the left. Only a rut could be made and the soil could not be turned over deep; this necessitated crossing and recrossing the field many times. A harrow was unknown. Where wheat and barley were sown, a bushy branch was used to

cover the seed. In places a log of wood was drawn over the field. Corn was planted by hand in the rut made by the plough, and the seed was covered with soil by means of the foot.

"Harvesting was similarly primitive and laborious; but as there was no need of haste it made no difference to the Indians, and the missionaries were satisfied to see their wards acquiring habits of industry and shunning idleness. * * *

"The form of the carts was as rude as that of the plough. * * *

"Wheat and corn were ground to flour by the Indian women after their own primitive way of crushing with the pestle in a mortar or in baskets. * * *

"Many of the neophytes were set to work at the various trades, such as the needs of the community demanded. Thus in the course of time we find them making bricks, tiles and pottery, laying brick, doing carpenter and mason work, making shoes, saddles, hats, clothes, candles, soap, tanning hides, combing and spinning wool, melting tallow, shearing sheep, blacksmithing, etc. One of the chief occupations was the weaving of a kind of coarse cloth and blankets from the wool of their own sheep. The women and girls would spin, sew, grind corn, and attend to household duties. Even the children were employed to chase away birds from the orchards and vineyards, or doing the chores of which they were capable.

"Fewer men and less labor were required to care for the livestock, but as each mission possessed large herds of cattle, sheep, and horses, and some mules, a good number of men and boys were engaged in this department of the mission system. The pastures at most seasons of the year were abundant, and the domestic animals increased amazingly; but, except for those that were slaughtered for food, little advantage was obtained from the cattle beyond the value of the hides and tallow. A time was set apart at certain seasons of the year to which the Indians looked ahead as a period of feasting and relaxation. Many would come from other missions to assist at the feasting. It was the time of the *rodeo*. The cattle were rounded up in a large enclosure for the purpose of examining and counting them. On this occasion also the young would be branded with the mark of the mission. Those that were to be operated upon were forced through a gate singly, and then lassoed. When secured the iron brand was applied, and

thus marked the animal as the property of the particular mission.

"The product of the field was garnered in granaries, and the goods produced in the shops were stored in the mission warehouse for the benefit of the community. All, Indians and missionaries, shared alike in what was produced. No one received wages, because the wants of all were supplied from the common property. The missionary himself received no more. When there was an opportunity, the missionary would sell to foreign merchants what could be spared, and in turn he purchased groceries, dry goods, and especially iron and ironware. Most wearing apparel was manufactured by the Indians, so that no other expenditure was necessary. The clothing of the neophytes was simple, but well adapted to their tastes and mode of life. The men wore a linen shirt and pantaloons; they were also given a woolen blanket made at the mission shops. The overseers and expert workmen wore clothes like the Spaniards. The women wore chemise, gown and blanket or shawl, likewise manufactured at the mission. While the friars received their stipends, that is to say, down to the end of 1811, and later on when the hides, tallow, grains, wine, and olive oil, etc., had been sold at a good price to ships from abroad, the Fathers would distribute handkerchiefs, wearing apparel, tobacco, and trinkets to the members of their great mission family. The rest was devoted to embellish the churches, or to procure church goods, pictures, statues, musical instruments for the Indian bands, etc. On such occasions the missionary was only too happy to be able to make his wards happy; he shared everything with them just like the thoughtful father of a family.

"It is no wonder, therefore, that the Indians under the supervision of the missionaries felt quite contented and happy. 'Their labor is light,' Forbes acknowledges, though with much reluctance 'and they have much leisure time to waste in their beloved inaction, or in the rude pastimes of their aboriginal state.' This being so, it is amazing to find the same Forbes, Hittell, and others laboring hard to show that the convert Indians were nothing but slaves to the missionaries.

"No one, to begin with, was compelled to join the mission. Only those who voluntarily presented themselves for instruction and for the mode of life they observed at the mission, were ad-

mitted to Baptism after a period of probation. They were first induced by means of gifts and persuasion to visit the establishments and to witness the happy, care-free life of the Christians, and thus shown the advantage of it from a merely worldly point of view. The missionary then would try to make the visitors grasp the spiritual aim and the advantage of becoming Christians. The persuasion of well-fed Christian relatives operated more powerfully in favor of the mission than even the gentle manner of the missionary. To know that there would always be something to eat under the shadow of the Cross, whilst away from it there was everlasting want of food, was a powerful incentive; for a material meal would attract the savage far more effectively than any number of other reasons. It was not a noble motive, but it was as high as the low Californian was in the habit of thinking, and the only one which he could command. The better motive for staying and submitting to the conditions came whilst he received instruction. If he could not muster the courage and manhood requisite, he was free to depart; and very likely many did return to their wild ways which knew no restraint of any kind. After the candidates had once received Baptism, however, which could not be administered until the missionary convinced himself that the catechumens were in good faith and determined, then, indeed, they were not free to resume their wild and immoral life, because they bore the indelible mark of a Christian upon the soul which it was not allowed to desecrate. Such neophytes were on a level with the soldiers who had taken an oath to stand by the flag of their country which they could not be permitted to desert. Whether this appeals to the infidel or not, does not matter. Such was the situation which was well known to the convert.

"There was another, a political reason, to forbid the neophyte to return to former ways. If he rejoined his heathen tribesmen, he was a menace to the peace of the mission people and of the colonists. If he was a traitor to his Religion and the missionaries, he would not hesitate to turn against the Spaniards. The mission history of Old Mexico, New Mexico, Florida, Texas, Arizona, and of San Diego itself proved this. The runaway was, therefore, followed by the mission guards and brought back. Nevertheless, it is untrue to assert that the male neophytes were never allowed to visit their pagan relatives and friends in the

mountains or deserts. Such permission was frequently granted for a period of two weeks. During this vacation the neophyte could not safely leave their little district to go, for instance, from or, if he wished, he might go anywhere from San Diego to San Francisco, and he was sure to be treated hospitably at every mission. That was far more than the Indians could boast of in their savage state. Before the coming of the missionaries the Indians could not safely leave their little district to go for instance, from Santa Barbara to San Buenaventura, less than forty miles.

"The neophytes were obliged to lead orderly, decent and industrious lives, and infractions would be punished according to the gravity of the transgression; but that does not make a man a slave. Children are marched into the class room; at every society gathering certain rules must be observed; inhabitants of a city are held to keep within the laws and ordinances; members of labor unions submit to regulations; the very legislators follow rules; and the soldier's liberty is very much restricted, and he is ordered hither and thither; yet no one looks upon all these as slaves. Why the Indians, for being marched to divine service, to catechetical instructions, to their work, as well as to their meals, and for being governed and corrected by priests rather than by politicians or police officers, should deserve to be called slaves, and the missionaries despots and tyrants, is more than sound reason may comprehend; but that has been the fashion with a certain class of historians and newspaper scribes. * * *

"The missionaries established the missions in order to transform the savages into Christians and law-abiding subjects of the State. Like Senator Carmack, they perceived that book-learning could not accomplish that object, even if it had been possible to induce the Indians to avail themselves of it. They aimed to lead their wards to abandon brutish ways, and to 'live happily, decently and usefully.' The friars possessed common sense enough to see that what modern fad-chasers call 'education' was absolutely unfit for the purpose, just as much so as a wooden hammer is unsuitable to forge a horseshoe. It really would have unfitted the pupil for the life he would have to live after he came away from the tutelage of the Fathers. Thirty years ago the United States Government was persuaded not to be content with giving the Indian children an ordinary school knowledge, but to send them thousands of miles away to educational establishments in

Virginia and Pennsylvania for the purpose of affording them a high school education. The movement, because of the way it was inaugurated and the proselytism manifested, caused us missionaries no little worry. Those who knew the Indian predicted failure, but in vain. Well, after twenty years, the Hon. Commissioner of Indian Affairs reported: 'These pupils are gathered from the cabin, the wickiup and the tepee. Partly by cajolery and partly by threats; partly by bribery and partly by fraud; partly by persuasion and partly by force, they are induced to leave their homes and their kindred to enter these schools, and take upon themselves the outward semblance of civilized life. Here the pupil remains until his education is finished, when he is returned to his home.'

"What were the results? 'In the last twenty years,' the Hon. Commissioner confesses, 'fully $45,000,000 have been spent by the Government alone for the education of Indian pupils, and it is a liberal estimate to put the number of those so educated at not over 20,000. It is contended, and with reason, that with the same effort and much less expenditure, applied locally or to the family circle, far greater and much more beneficent results could have been obtained, and the tribes would have been in a much more advanced stage of civilization than at present. On the other hand, it is said that the stream of returning pupils carries with it the refining influence of the schools and operates to elevate the people. Doubtless this is true of individual cases, and it may have some faint influence on the tribes; but will it ever sufficiently leaven the entire mass? It is doubtful. It may be possible in time to purify a fountain by cleansing its turbid waters as they pour forth and returning them to their original source; but experience is against it. For centuries, pure fresh-water streams have poured their floods into the Great Salt lake, and its waters are salt still."

Father Englehardt then shows that the United States Government taught the Indians in much the same manner as the mission schools, but that the cost was considerably greater. Even though the missionaries imposed laborious tasks upon the Indians, which had to be done, they also developed them mentally.

"Hence it was," continues Father Englehardt, "that the missionaries offered the opportunity to read and write only to such boys as manifested a desire and aptitude to learn, whereas they

insisted on manual labor for all without exception. These boys were taught as well as time and circumstances permitted. A good number of youths succeeded at each mission and they composed the church choir. They sang Masses and psalms in Latin and they could lead at community prayers and public devotions in Spanish. Besides these singers, at all the missions a few boys assisted the priests at the altar, and most probably were able to read. The elementary branches were, therefore, not neglected, and ignorance was not encouraged; but, for the reasons stated, book-learning was not made compulsory. It would have been unwise for another reason. The white population, over which the Fathers could exercise no control, cared nothing for 'education' so called. The governors themselves failed to convince the majority of its necessity. It would then have been imprudent to compel the Indians to trouble themselves with something which the *gente de razon* declared to be quite useless. The position of the missionaries was difficult enough as it was."

Following this, Father Englehardt attempts to prove that the so-called education was not practicable in those time through the fact that there was no one who could teach. "The two Fathers had their hands full managing other more weighty temporal matters in addition to their chief duty." No one could afford to pay teachers to come from Mexico, to say nothing of buying "books and other necessary articles for the schoolroom." Thus, actual teaching of the Indians did not go forward apace under early mission rule, but "the friars wisely chose industrial pursuits as most congenial and beneficial to him (the Indian)."

"We have to touch one more feature of the mission system—" continues Father Englehardt, "the method of punishing transgressors. If on the subject of education for the primitive Indian hostile critics prove themselves unreasonable, they appear to have lost their wits when describing the means employed by the missionaries to correct delinquents. Let us see. Each mission resembled a great family of which the missionary was the head. He was so declared by the Spanish law, and therefore he might not only reward but punish. His family comprised many hundreds, often some thousands, of Indians, good, bad and indifferent. Some were firm in their resolutions, others vacillated and were easily led astray by white adventurers or by those of their own race. Some became absolutely vicious, as we shall learn from

the local annals of each mission. Necessarily disorders and excesses would occur. To prevent them, as much as possible, the friars drew up what might be called police regulations for the transgression of which certain punishments were meted out. Here is where the critics differ from the Fathers, just as on the subject of education, as to what kind of penalties would be proper and effective. Well, the missionaries employed various means to preserve order and to keep their wards industrious and virtuous. They would instruct, warn, admonish, and finally have recourse to such punishments as would impress creatures so dull, coarse, and carnal, with the gravity of a deed or neglect of a duty. The culprit would be locked up; but that was what he courted, because it relieved him of work. He was also deprived of the privilege of visiting his relatives or friends in the mountains, or forbidden to participate in a festivity or amusement. This affected him somewhat more.

"There were offenses, however, intrinsically wicked or subversive of order, which had to be dealt with in such a way that the transgressor felt the gravity of them, if he would not comprehend it. Such misdeeds were, habitual stealing, persistent indolence, stubbornness, desertion, drunkenness, immoralities, etc. For such misconduct civilized society maintains workhouses and penitentiaries, and within those institutions various kinds of punishments are inflicted. The missionaries employed some of those in use in the prisons of Mexico, such as the stocks, pillory, chain to the legs, or extra work, etc. However, the savage was thoroughly carnal, and sometimes his animal propensities would come to the surface after he had adopted Christianity. Culprits of that class, when they displayed stubbornness, needed a punishment which touched their carnal nature. As they remained children, with regard to the use of their mental faculties, they had to be treated like unruly boys of their age if other remedies failed. The lash was accordingly applied. It was the only punishment that convinced. The number of lashes which might be inflicted was laid down by Spanish laws. It could never exceed twenty-five for the same offence. The chastisement was not inflicted by the missionary, but at his direction by one of the chief Indians or an Indian official. This manner of correcting the guilty in Lower California originated with the Rev. Juan Maria Salvatierra, S.J., and Fr. Serra retained it for the Indians under

his charge. Criminals, who committed misdeeds deserving capital punishment, had to be turned over to the corporal of the guard, who in turn reported the case to the governor.

"This use of the lash, which was quite common in Old Mexico, gave the enemies the opportunity they desired for reviling the friars. They declared such punishment degrading, inhuman, cruel, tyrannical, etc. The Indian did not think so. Besides, it was in keeping with the custom of the age among white people. Even sailors and soldiers at that period, and inmates of penitentiaries, were given this remedy for their moral ailments. Boys in the public schools not so far back and for their benefit, learned the scriptural lesson, 'spare not the rod.' It was abolished, true; it was also banished from the missions; in both cases morals and respect for authority gained nothing. The Indian was an overgrown child. As such he was treated, but the stories of cruelty retailed by traducers of the missionaries were either manufactured for effect, or exaggerated out of all semblance to the truth. The Franciscans in the struggle between Indian rights and white cupidity stood on the side of the Indian. It was for this that the Californians and Mexicans had recourse to calumny when they perceived that it would be impossible to win over the friars by persuasion. * * *"

CHAPTER XV

THE CONTINUED WORK OF FATHER SERRA

Although many events occurred that bore directly upon the history of Monterey and Santa Cruz counties that were not immediately connected with the activities of Father Serra, we shall of necessity have to brush them aside for the nonce to continue with the work of the Father Presidente. When we have followed the course of Father Serra, we shall then turn back to historical pages that were made by explorers and settlers during Serra's life.

The lack of guards, desertion of soldiers, and other handicaps delayed the founding of Mission San Buenaventura, and the Mission San Louis Obispo much to the disappointment of Father Serra. Although Fages, "now styled captain," refused to sponsor the founding of these missions—which Father Serra wanted to do immediately after the founding of the Mission San Carlos —because of the shortage of soldiers, he did agree, at the urging of Father Serra, to survey the Port of San Francisco with the view of selecting a site for the proposed mission there. An expedition headed by Captain Fages and in company with Father Crespi, was made, therefore, in March, 1772. Accountable for the military commander's ready assent to this undertaking is the fact that he had received orders from the viceroy to explore the Port of San Francisco by sea or land, "and in accord with the Father Presidente to establish a mission there, lest that important place remain exposed to foreign occupation." The expedition proved successful in finding a land suitable for the mission and in discovering a good overland route to Port of San Francisco.

In the meantime, as the expedition northward had been in progress, word was received by Father Serra that delay in the arrival of the supply ships and an ever-increasing number of converts was bringing distress through lack of food upon the

missions of San Gabriel and San Diego. Provisions were dispatched to them on pack mules under a guard of soldiers from Monterey. But it was not long until the need of provisions was sorely felt at Monterey and San Antonio. Captain Fages sent a hunting expedition to the Canada de los Osos (now San Louis Obispo) and Father Serra wrote of the situation to Father Palou. The letter clearly describes the handicap under which the mission work was progressing.

Simultaneously with the arrival of this letter, Father Palou received word that the College of San Fernando had ceded all the missions of Lower California to the Dominican Fathers, thus releasing many experienced ecclesiastics who were sorely needed in the new missions.

After the founding of Mission San Louis Obispo, the fifth mission, September 1, 1772, Father Serra broached the subject to Captain Fages of founding the remaining three missions, but found that Fages was unwilling to assist. This was a blow to the Father Presidente, but he braved it, for the time, with complacency. The military commander, however, had on numerous occasions, interfered with the management of the missions, even giving "the Father Presidente to understand that this was a matter which pertained to him and not to the missionaries."

Shortly after one of Fages' bitter retorts to the missionaries, he received the following letter from Viceroy Bucareli:

"I charge Your Honor very strictly to preserve harmony with the Missionary Fathers, and to let them freely perform their apostolic work, assisting them with all the means capable of attaining, as soon as possible, the reduction of those to whom they intend to preach. It would contribute much to this end if Your Honor would readily grant them the guards and the provisions for subsistence, bearing in mind the liberal hand of the King who maintains those missions with the Catholic and ardent desire that the Gospel should be propagated. Likewise I charge Your Honor that you do all that you easily can in order to keep the missionaries in the tranquillity which they desire entirely devoted as they are to the spiritual conquest, so that they may be beloved of the Indians. Your Honor will keep me informed on this point, and report what you think expedient for the service of God and the King, so that I may intelligently give suitable orders. You will choose the most proportionate means for the

execution of those plans which are preferable for the object and advancement of the missions, the good treatment of the missionaries, the comfort of the neophytes, listening with affability and dignity to the complaints of one and all, and assisting them with whatever is necessary in order that the sovereign intentions of His Majesty may be realized."

Other unpleasant associations with Captain Fages were in store for Father Serra. On October 12th, 1772, Captain Fages deigned to inform Father Serra of a part of a letter which he (Fages) had received from the new viceroy, Don Frey Antonio Maria Bucareli y Ursúa, which read: "Your Honor (Fages) will see to it, and you will impress upon the Rev. Fr. Junipero Serra, presidente of the missions, the commendable obligations under which they are by example and persuasion to stimulate all to obey and comply with the orders of Your Honor." Adding to this, Fages wrote: "I bring all this to the attention of Your Reverence, and supplicate you to make the other religious understand it for the due accomplishment of so important an object."

Conditions in Mexico were such that alterations would have to be made if the mission work were to continue successfully. Undoubtedly misrepresentations had been made by Captain Fages and only a personal interview with the new viceroy by one of the missionaries could or would clear up the situation. Consequently, while in San Diego Father Serra consulted with the two Fathers stationed at the mission in this town, and it was resolved that Father Serra himself should make the interview. On October 20th, therefore, Father Serra sailed from San Diego on the *San Carlos*, accompanied by an Indian youth, one of the first baptized at Monterey, and arrived at San Blas on November 4th.

Sickness, both of the Father and the Indian youth, made the journey overland to the capital a slow and arduous task. The advanced years of Father Serra and his sore leg added further difficulties to the journey.

Turning once again to the pages of Englehardt's History, we learn that:

"The Father Presidente arrived at a most opportune moment. The new viceroy was unacquainted with the conditions in both Californias, but a strong party existed which endeavored to influence him against those territories. One of their schemes was that the port of San Blas should be abandoned as superfluous, be-

cause the supplies could be taken to Guaymas, farther north, about five hundred leagues from the City of Mexico, and from that port they could be brought by sea about two hundred leagues to Bay San Louis, whence by means of pack animals they might be transported to Monterey, a distance of about three hundred leagues. The promoters of this project overlooked the fact that the transportation of goods and provisions eight hundred leagues overland and two hundred leagues across the Gulf of California would consume the annual allowance of the missionaries, and would require two years' time without any security that such supplies would reach their destination. Father Serra was graciously received by the viceroy and at once stated the object of his visit. Bucareli urged him to present his complaints and recommendations in writing. Fr. Serra promised to comply, but implored His Excellency to send supplies from San Blas to Monterey without delay. The viceroy granted the request, but directed the petitioner to state in writing why the port of San Blas should be maintained. Fr. Serra then drew up his famous "Representación," in which, under thirty-two heads, he exposed the situation in California, offered recommendations and closed with complaints about the soldiers and their commander. * * *"

On March 15th Father Serra presented his Memorial to Viceroy Bucareli, and the Viceroy, in turn, referred it to the royal fiscal, Don Antonio de Areche, the following day. Then, in obedience to the viceroy's command, Father Serra prepared his arguments in favor of retaining the Port of San Blas as a base of supplies.

"The viceroy was so pleased with the Fr. Presidente's views on the subject," says Fr. Englehardt, "that he forwarded a copy of the document to the king, and gave orders that the Port of San Blas for the present should be maintained. The king eventually gave his approval and commanded that the port should remain open for the benefit of California. Thus Fr. Serra gained the first two points of his petition before the viceregal council, to whom Bucareli had referred it, assembled."

Thus, the long trip made by Father Serra proved successful, all but a few minor propositions having been granted. Furthermore, Father Serra had made a warm friend and protector of the missions in Viceroy Bucareli. Perhaps the most important decision that was rendered to Father Serra was that, in regard to

neophytes, the missionaries were to stand in the position of father towards his children, having all the rights which such a term implies. "Concerning number nine, that the government control and education of the baptized Indians should belong exclusively to the missionaries, it was declared that it should be so carried out in all economical affairs pertaining to the father of a family regarding the care of his household, and the education and correction of his children; and the governor shall be instructed to preserve harmony and to coöperate with the said missionary Fathers."

Space not permitting us to dwell upon all of the propositions that were granted Father Serra, we will turn to one of the more important, the replacement of Don Pedro Fages, commander of militia at Monterey, by another. "One of the important points in Serra's petition still remained to be settled," recounts Father Englehardt. "This was the appointment of a commander to replace Don Pedro Fages, who had proved himself an obstacle to both the temporal and spiritual progress of the missions. He had also aroused much dissatisfaction among the soldiers by his haughty and irascible nature. Fr. Serra had proposed José Francisco Ortego; but in as much as this officer only held the post of sergeant among the troops, the viceroy thought it unwise to name him. Captain Fernando Rivera y Moncada, who had for more than twenty-one years served in Lower California, and had conducted the first land expedition to Upper California, was then appointed military commander for Monterey, whilst Ortega was promoted to the rank of lieutenant and placed in command of the presidio at San Diego."

Father Serra did not leave Mexico until the middle of September, 1773, his business having been of such extent as to make an earlier departure impossible. However, his delay netted more than he had actually hoped for. In addition to accomplishing the object of his visit, he was well provided with supplies, clothing, and presents for the Indians. May 11th, of the following year, after a trip overland in which he visited the missions along the way, he arrived at the Mission San Carlos, Carmel, amid great rejoicing of the populace. His return, after an absence of nearly two years, was broadly heralded. Preceding him two days, the *Santiago* had arrived in the Monterey Bay bountifully supplied

with provisions for presidio and mission. And on June 8th the *San Antonia* arrived with additional provisions.

By this time the San Carlos Mission had made greater strides in its undertaking than any of the other missions—although now, after five years of occupation, the state of the missions was still far from what was desired. The following table shows the work of the various missions up to the close of 1773:

Mission	*Baptisms*	*Living*	*Marriages*
San Carlos	165	154	32
San Antonio	158	150	18
San Diego	83	76	12
San Gabriel	73	71	0
San Louis Obispo	12	11	0

CHAPTER XVI

JUAN BAUTISTA DE ANZA

Throughout the mission period the missionaries had wanted to have a road from Sonora to Alta California to avoid coping with the dangers of the gulf. Consequently, when Viceroy Bucareli heard of the trip of Garces through long deserts to the Rio Colorado and far beyond, which he successfully made in 1771, he was ready to listen to plans of further and similar exploits. In 1773 he received a petition from Juan Bautista de Anza, captain of Tubac, requesting permission to make such a journey himself. The petition stated that he, Anza, would defray all expenses himself. To this petition, the viceroy gave some hope, but postponed the matter until he could consult with Father Serra. Getting a favorable reply from Father Serra, Bucareli, in accord with his council and with the permission of the king, gave official consent to Anza to lead the expedition to Monterey.

From boyhood the expedition into Alta California appears to have been the dream of Anza. His father's proposals had fired him to a tremendous enthusiasm, and when he was twenty-one he and another officer planned to try to discover a good route through California. Although the governor of Sonora at first favored the plan, he later changed his mind. In 1769 Anza asked permission from Galvez to make the expedition at his own expense, to coöperate with Portola, whom the *visitador* had just sent northward from Baja California. Because of the Seri wars, Galvez found it imperative to withhold his consent for the nonce, although he looked with favor upon the proposition. Failing health delayed his early departure from New Spain, forestalling all action on the matter.

Following the departure of Galvez, Anza communicated with Bucareli, the newly installed viceroy. "His letter," says Charles E. Chapman, "dated May 2, 1772, concerned itself mainly with the numerous evidences for belief in the existence of a feasible

route from Sonora to Monterey, referring among other things to the reports about Portola and his men which had come to Garces and twenty or twenty-five of his own presidial soldiers with him. Knowing full well that he could expect suitable reward if successful, he offered to pay the entire costs of the expedition, save only the wages of his men and the salary of Garces."

Then, as we have said, after conferring with council and king and Father Serra, permission for the expedition was granted Anza, who was empowered to select twenty volunteer soldiers for the expedition and to take Father Garces and another friar with him, defraying all expenses himself. His instructions were not to make any settlements, but to proceed directly to Monterey; and to make as great friends with the Indians as possible.

Although the expedition was handicapped by a number of incidents that happened as the expeditioners planned to get under way (such as the Apache raids in Tubac and the jealous opposition of a few of his own officers), on January 8, 1774, the line got under way, starting out from Tubac. The group consisted of "Father Garces and Father Iiaz, twenty volunteers from his presidio, an Alta California soldier named Juan Valdez, Tarabal, a Pima interpreter, and eight other Indians (five muleteers, two servants of Anza, and a carpenter),—thirty-four in all, and thirty-five pack loads of provisions, sixty-five head of cattle driven along for food, and a hundred and forty horses."

Bolton tells of the march as follows:

"Turning southwest, Anza crossed the divide and descended the Altar River, through the Pima missions to Altar. Obtaining horseshoe iron, a few fresh horses, some ill-fed mules,—'stacks of bones,' he called them,—and provisions, on January twenty-second he made his final start from Caborca, the last Spanish settlement between Sonora and Mission San Gabriel (at Los Angeles).

"To the Gila-Colorado junction, home of the Yumas, the trail, though difficult, had been made familiar by Kino and Garcés. On that trip a part of the Yumas were hostile and were planning to massacre his party; but the rumor proved unfounded, for the Spaniards were warmly welcomed by Chief Palma and a throng of nearly naked Indians. Crossing the Colorado and descending its right bank a few leagues, at Santa Olaya Lake the expedi-

tion neared the edge of the great waste of sand dunes called the Colorado Desert.

"Here began the real test of Anza's mettle. As they neared enemy territory the Cojat guides misled the Spaniards and then deserted. On the 15th of February, with the Indian Tarabal now guiding, Anza reached the terrible dunes, where the shifting sands had completely obliterated the trails. Before night the pack mules were so used up that Anza decided that their burdens must be lightened, and he proposed to send half the pack back to Palma's village with part of the soldiers and one friar. Garcés objected and Anza yielded. Encountering now a great mountain of sand which the tired mules could not even attempt, Anza turned south toward a hill near which Garcés thought was the large village or San Jacome, which he had visited three years before.

"But no village could be found. Both Garcés and Tarabal were now completely lost in the sea of sand dunes; the animals were played out; part of the horses had been made ill by eating a noxious herb; there was no near prospect for either water or pasturage; in short, there was nothing for Anza to do but to retreat to Santa Olaya. Even this was most difficult, and before it was accomplished several horses and mules had died. But after seventy-five miles of wandering, at the cost of six days, Santa Olaya was again reached.

"Anza now changed his plans. Instead of attempting to cross the dunes, he would turn southwest and go around them. Since it had proved impossible to continue with all his train, he left part of his men and baggage with Palma. Even this step was hazardous, for Palma's friendship had not yet been fully tested. With the rest of the men, the strongest horses, the ten best mules, and provisions for a month, on March 2 Anza again set forth. Six days of hard riding took him to good springs and pasturage near the foot of the Sierra Nevadas. Garcés and Tarabal both recognized the locality. The success of the enterprise was now assured and the event was celebrated.

"Four more days northward and two northwestward took them to a pass in the Sierra Nevada mountains called San Carlos. Here the sight was cheered by a view which repaid all the hardships of the journey. There were green plains, snow-capped peaks, live-oaks, and rivulets which ran west to find their outlet in the 'Philippine Ocean,' as Anza called it. In spite of frequent

rain and snow the descent was relatively easy, and at sundown, March 22, they reached Mission San Gabriel, after a march of seven hundred miles from Tubac. Their arrival was hailed by the four surprised missionaries and the small guard with the ringing of the church bells. Anza had found a way from Sonora to the sea. Continuing to Monterey, and returning over his former route, he reached Tubac on May 26."

As a result of Anza's expedition, Bucareli expressed his great pleasure, saying that he believed the Anza route was preferable to the one up the peninsula, although supply ships would, of necessity, be kept in action. So pleased was Bucareli that he recommended Anza be promoted to a lieutenant-colonel. This was done, and in addition each of Anza's men received extra pay for life. By this time Bucareli saw the necessity of occupying San Francisco as protective means against any foreign encroachment. Realizing that now a good route had been established into the north, he was anxious to found a settlement at the Golden Gate. Riviera, who had succeeded Fages as governor and of whom we shall soon have much more to say, attempted this colonization at the command of Bucareli. As this was not until late November, however, he found the season too far advanced and winter rains too heavy. His plans, therefore, were upset, and another postponement had to be made. Then the following summer (that of 1775) Ayala made a competent exploration of the San Francisco, and in September of that year Heceta led a small expedition from Monterey to that point, but quickly returned.

It was little wonder that Bucareli was eager to have Anza repeat his expedition; and when Anza reported to the viceroy in person in Mexico City, plans were drawn up for a second journey. The new plans, perfected between November and December, 1774, were on a much larger scale than anything formerly attempted in the way of systematic colonization of Alta California. "Anza was to take with him thirty married soldiers and their families," says Charles E. Chapman, "besides ten more soldiers as his personal escort to Alta California and back. Domestic animals of the kind most needed in the provinces—notably those for breeding purposes and beasts of burden—were to be driven along. The crowning event of the expedition was to be the founding of two missions at San Francisco, for which the married soldiers were to serve as a guard. It was almost a year before Anza's prepara-

tions were complete. Meanwhile Bucareli was busy with a number of related projects, such as the voyages of 1775 to the northwest coast and the internal problems of the frontier provinces and the two Californias. There is no question, however, but that he regarded Anza's expedition as the most important measure of all, as indeed it was."

On October 23, 1775, the expedition departed from Tubac with a total of two hundred and forty persons and over a thousand animals. Only one of the thirty soldiers who planned to remain in Alta California was unaccompanied by his wife; this man was Lieutenant Moraga. It can be seen that great care was exercised by Anza to make the expedition successful from every standpoint—an insurance of "home-life" in the new country. The success of the expedition under the skillful guidance of Anza can be appreciated by the fact that only one death occurred in the long journey, and that a mother, at childbirth. "When one thinks of the scores that lost their lives in the days of '49 over these same trails, Anza's skill as a frontiersman stands revealed."

Men were paid in clothing rather than in money—another assurance of success, that of the elimination of gambling. Turning again to the pages of Chapman's history, we see that "for men, women, and children clothing of every sort and kind, arms, riding horses, and rations were provided, and all at what now seems to have been an astonishingly low cost. One undemocratic note is to be observed. The fare of the thirty families was of the plainest, and its estimated cost for the entire expedition amounted only to $1,957. On the other hand Anza and Father Font were to have such edibles as beans, sausage, biscuit, fine chocolate, a barrel of wine, cheese, pepper, saffron, cloves, cinnamon, oil and vinegar at a cost of $2,232.50—more than the expense for the thirty families. Anza protested against this allotment when it was proposed, but it may be imagined that his objections were somewhat perfunctory, for the arrangement was entirely in accord with the ideas of the day."

The expedition moved down the Santa Cruz River to the Gila and continued along this stream for thirty-seven days when it reached the Colorado. The route proved to be a good one—a better one than he had taken the preceding year through Papaqueria. At this point—at the juncture of the two rivers—however, a serious difficulty presented itself. According to Chapman: "Anza

found that the Colorado had deepened at the place where he crossed in 1774, so that now it was impossible to get over, even though it was the season when the river was low. It was also impracticable to use rafts, for the Yumas would have to swim with them in order to guide them, and the water was then too cold; at any rate not more than one raft a day could be handled, and there was the danger that they might be upset. And the Yumas knew of no other ford. There promised to be a delay, but Anza made a morning search and found a place where the river divided into three shallow branches. It was necessary to clear a way through the thickets, however, for it was impossible to get by them on horseback. This done, Anza got his entire expedition across, after a wait of but a single day."

Again Anza made warm friends of the Indians. He treated them with more respect and kindness, perhaps, than any other white man had ever done. Giving Chief Palma a gift which Bucareli had forwarded to him in the name of the king, he gained a staunch friend in that Indian and his tribe. "This Indian's devotion to the Spaniards was suitably rewarded," says Chapman, "at least in the eyes of his tribesmen, when he received a sleeveless cloak of blue cloth, lined with gold, a jacket and trousers of chamois-skin, two shirts, and a cap with a coat of arms like that of the Spanish dragoons. Palma was greatly pleased, and reiterated the requests that he had made in 1774 for the sending of Spanish missionaries. Garcés and Eixarch remained among the Yumas, but their object was an extended exploration of that vicinity rather than the immediate conversion of the Indians. The three interpreters and four servants of the original roster stayed with them."

Anza avoided the mistake he had made the preceding year, when leaving the camp of Santa Olaya December 9, he crossed the Colorado Desert in the route he had discovered only after his mishap in 1774. On crossing the desert this time, he divided his expedition into three parts, with instructions to proceed forward on different days, thus allowing the water-holes time enough to refill.

When over the desert the mountains loomed before them, snow-covered and dangerous of aspect. The expedition began the ascent on December 19th, and by the 27th had reached the summit. Although the rain, snow and icy wind brought intense

discomfort to them, making traveling a hazardous undertaking, they lost none of their party in the trip over the mountains. In fact, one human being was added to their number, one of the women being delivered of a child at this point. Only a day was lost because of the illness of the woman. When over the summit, the weather became milder, the sun glistened promisingly; and as they looked down upon the fertile valleys below them, their hope revived and they pushed onward with renewed vigor. They arrived at San Gabriel January 4, 1776.

"Without knowing it," recounts Chapman, the historian whose passages are remarkable in their clear picturization of these early times, "Anza and his party had very nearly encountered a danger which also threatened the very existence of the Spanish settlements in Alta California. The Indians of the San Diego district had always shown a disposition to be unfriendly to the Spaniards, though they had early learned to have a wholesome respect for Spanish weapons. When at length the missionaries began to be successful in their efforts, the unconverted Indians in the neighborhood (for there were eleven villages which had steadily resisted Christianity) took alarm. They felt that their native customs were doomed unless they could either annihilate or expel the dread invader. Their runners communicated these views to their many kinsmen across the southern end of the province, urging a concerted uprising. Messengers came even to the Yumas, for the San Diego Indians and the many tribes eastward to the Colorado were all members of the same great Yuman family. While some promised support and others were sympathetic, the Yumas would not rise against the Spaniards, due to good treatment they had received at the hands of Anza. The reputation Anza had acquired among the Yumas was probably all that saved him from being attacked on his march to San Gabriel; to the childlike savage the Spaniards of Anza's following were very different from those who had settled permanently in Alta California. As he neared San Gabriel, however, Anza had noticed some evidences of native unfriendliness.

"Meanwhile the unconverted Indians of San Diego, in collusion with mission converts, had gone ahead with their plans, and at last arranged for a simultaneous attack on the mission and presidio (which were several miles apart) for the night of November 4, 1775. What with missionaries and soldiery there were

twenty-two Spaniards in all, eleven at each place, but four of those at the presidio were sick and two others were in the stocks. All were blissfully unaware of the danger, and it seems even that no guards were placed. Shortly after midnight the Spaniards at the mission were aroused by the yells of hundreds of Indians who had already set the building on fire. As the little party tried to escape they were greeted by clouds of arrows. Father Louis Jayme was seized and dragged away, then beaten to death. Later his body was found horribly mutilated and pierced by eighteen arrows. The other men took refuge in an adobe storehouse, defending themselves desperately. Not one of them escaped wounds, but they did such execution with their weapons, especially one among their number with a suspiciously Irish-sounding name, Corporal Rocha, that at daybreak the Indians withdrew. Father Jayme and one other had been killed, and a third man died of his wounds several days later.

"Fortunately the plan to attack the presidio had miscarried, and the men there must have slept peacefully through the night, for they were unaware of the conflict which had raged so bitterly only a few miles away. The first they knew of it was when the wounded heroes of the mission fight came next morning to the presidio. The Indians hesitated to attack again, and thereby lost their chance of success. Soon Ortega came in with a few soldiers whom he had taken with him to found the new mission of San Juan Capistrano. The founding of that mission was postponed, and Ortega's men remained at San Diego. The situation would still have been serious, but for the arrival of Anza from Sonora. Riviera had only seventy men of his own in the province, and these were scattered among five missions and two presidios over a range of more than four hundred miles. The governor hurried south from Monterey, and had good reason to be glad upon his arrival at San Gabriel when he learned that Anza's expedition was approaching that mission.

"Anza's orders called for him to proceed to San Francisco without delay and found the settlements, but he recognized that the San Diego revolt was a superior emergency. Not only did he lend Riviera twenty of his veterans, but even went the length of waiving his superior rank and consented to accompany Riviera to San Diego and assist him all he could. On January 7, 1776, therefore, the two commanders left San Gabriel with a little force

of thirty-five men, not knowing what they might have to encounter. It seemed to them not unlikely that San Diego had been wiped out and the garrison massacred and that they themselves would have to confront thousands of hostile natives. Fortunately, Ortega had been able to tide over the crisis, and their arrival on January 11 definitely saved the situation. At about the same time two Spanish ships came in from San Blas, and not long afterward Bucareli sent twenty-five more soldiers to Alta California. By this time the Indians believed that the Spaniards were coming almost from the skies to punish them, and they became afraid. There was no longer any thought of revolt; indeed, the position of the Spaniards was strengthened by the failure of the San Diego outbreak, for the Indians felt from this time forth that it was impossible to throw out their conquerors.

"The authorities were generally agreed that Anza's arrival had turned the scale,—'providential,' Bucareli called it, 'just as if he had come from Heaven.' Men of that day knew, too, how grave had been the danger. Latter-day historians have been altogether too prone to regard the hostility to the Spaniards on the part of California Indians as a matter of small consequence, since no disaster in fact ever happened. Its real import appears, however, in the light of such events as the Yuma massacre of 1781. * * * As compared with the Yuma uprising that of the San Diego Indians had much fewer difficulties to encounter. The Yumas were a small tribe of about two thousand and were close to the Spanish frontier, where it was possible to assemble hundreds of soldiers at short notice. On the other hand the San Diego plot involved untold thousands of Indians, being virtually a national uprising, and owing to the distance from New Spain and the extreme difficulty of maintaining communications a victory for the Indians would have ended Spanish settlement in Alta California—and the eventual loser would have been the United States."

On March 23, with but few men in his company, Anza departed from Monterey for his exploration of San Francisco, leaving the families behind. As our history chiefly concerns Monterey and Santa Cruz counties and only those events that had a bearing directly upon them, we can but pause briefly to summarize this northern trip of Anza's.

Arriving in San Francisco he set about making a complete

survey of the land, locating fire-wood, timber, and an abundance of water. On the banks of a small river, which he named Dolores, he selected a site for the mission. In Anza's reports he spoke highly of the Port of San Francisco, and Father Font was equally warm in praise.

Following out instructions, Anza explored the eastern shore of the bay to the junction of the Sacramento and San Joaquin rivers; then proceeded up the latter to a point beyond that reached by Fages. Now he was ready to return. Instead of following his route north, he boldly plunged into the hills and came out near the site of what is now the Gilroy Hot Springs. From here the march to Monterey was easy, and he arrived at this town April 8.

"The time had now come for Anza's departure," recounts Chapman. "He had fulfilled the orders of the viceroy insofar as he could without the coöperation of Rivera, though for the lack of it he had not been able to establish the settlements at San Francisco. Indeed, prior to Anza's exploration of that port Rivera had sent orders for the colonists to erect houses for themselves at Monterey and to abandon the projected foundations at San Francisco for that season. Anza was disappointed, but felt that he could not undertake the work by himself, since Rivera, after all, was governor of the province. So he decided to take his leave. On April 14 he departed from Monterey to the accompaniment of the tears and lamentations of the settlers, who had learned to revere and love him in the course of their long march from Sonora.

"The next day Anza received a letter from Rivera, whose party was then approaching Anza's on the way up from San Diego. In this missive Rivera answered a much earlier letter from Anza, and announced abruptly that he would not join him in making the establishments at San Francisco. The messenger told Anza that Rivera was in an evil temper and would not even look at a letter which Anza had just sent to him. A little later the two parties met. Both leaders saluted, and then, without a word, Rivera put spurs to his horse and rode on. Not long afterwards Rivera sent word to Anza that he was returning, and asked him to wait for him at San Louis Obispo, so that they might have a conference over the various matters which had been entrusted to them. Anza consented and waited. Two days later

he received word from Rivera postponing the interview until they should reach San Gabriel. Even the patience of a saint might well have been exhausted by this time. Yet Anza agreed to communicate with Rivera, but insisted that it should be in writing. Accordingly, during two days at San Gabriel they wrote letters back and forth. Afterward Anza and his escort started back over the trail to Sonora. Crossing the Colorado the great explorer looked upon Alta California for the last time. Though he did not even suspect it himself, his work, under the guidance of the great viceroy, was to have an enduring importance beyond anything that had ever happened in the history of the Californias."

After the departure of Anza, Rivera had a change of heart about the colonization of San Francisco (doubtlessly due to further orders from the viceroy) and sent instructions from San Diego to Moraga to erect a fort in San Francisco. Accompanied by Fathers Palou and Cambón and soldiers, he proceeded to San Francisco, where he arrived on June 27. "Only a few days later," continues Chapman, "there occurred, on the opposite coast of North America, the first 'Fourth of July' in United States history, when national Independence was proclaimed. At the same time, Moraga and his men, quietly preparing their habitations, were taking an all-important step in the eventual acquisition of the Pacific Coast by the descendants of the embattled farmers of the thirteen Atlantic colonies. On September 17 the presidio was formally dedicated, and on October 9 there was another solemn function, signalizing the founding of the mission San Francisco de Asís. In January, 1777, the second mission was established, this time at Santa Clara, near the present city of San Jose. Thus had the great port been occupied, and the vitally needed settlers, with their equally needed herds of domestic animals, were now in Alta California to stay. For the first time it was possible to say that the province had been placed upon a permanent basis. There was no longer any likelihood that it would be abandoned and left open for another power."

A recent historian justly lauds Anza in the following terms: "As the successful leader of the first party of settlers to the coast, Anza's expedition is unique. Only a man of splendid ability and courage, and sublime self-confidence, could have sustained the fainting hearts of the timid women and children, encouraged them to endure the privations of the desert, or to face the terrors they

thought they saw in the snow-covered summits of the San Jacinto Mountains, and the still greater terrors their fancies pictured in the far northern country to which they were going. We may find here and there a figure among the half-forgotten heroes who led their straggling immigrants across the plains and through the mountains after 1842, that deserves to rank with him, but we shall look in vain for any in the Spanish history of the coast, unless we turn back to that of Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo with his broken arm, holding his scurvy-stricken sailors to the work of examining the wintry coast southward from Cape Mendocino to his grave in the Santa Barbara Islands, and with his last breath admonishing his successor not to give up the work."

CHAPTER XVII

FELIPE DE NEVE

Over Felipe de Neve, the third Governor of California, there is perhaps as great a divergence of opinion as to his merits by modern historians as over any other famous man of the past. Some historians credit him with being an ace among aces; others say that he wrought more damage—incomparable damage—to the colonization of California than almost any other individual. Nevertheless, to him goes the credit for founding the old Spanish pueblos of Los Angeles and San Jose. In studying the activities of Governor de Neve we shall turn to the authorities who condemn him and others who praise him; and the final judgment of him will be left to the reader.

John S. McGroarty, in his "California, Its History and Romance," says: "Felipe de Neve was a soldier as well as a statesman, having been at the time of his appointment as Governor of California a cavalry officer at Queretaro in Mexico. His fame as a California Governor rests upon the fact that he was the founder of the old Spanish pueblos of San Jose and Los Angeles. He is also famous as the author of what was termed the 'Reglamento,' a complete code of legislation for the Province of California which he promulgated in June, 1779, dating it from the 'Royal Presidio of San Carlos de Monterey.' This code made provision for the conduct of the presidio down to the minutest detail for the support of the troops and the families connected with the military service. It also regulated the procedure for the settlement of the country, setting forth laws for the establishment and government of pueblos and towns and making rules for the promotion of agriculture, stock-raising and other branches of industry. The Reglamento was indeed a very statesmanlike document and is so regarded to this day by good authorities. * * *

"Felipe de Neve served as Governor of California from October, 1774, until September, 1782. His striking abilities were

such that he became marked for a higher honor. The King of Spain decorated him with the Royal Order of Charles III, raised him to the rank of Colonel and made him Inspector General of all the troops of the Provincias Internas, which included Sonora, New Mexico, Chihuahua, Coahuila, Texas and both the Californias. This necessitated de Neve's removal from Chihuahua, where he was soon still further honored by the King with an appointment to be a General of Brigade. He died at Chihuahua in the latter part of the year 1784."

Charles E. Chapman both condemns and lauds de Neve. Chapman says of him:

"Felipe de Neve now became commandant-general, and from the first displayed a venomous temper against Anza that is hard to account for, unless as the peevishness of an old campaigner, broken in health. It was the custom for Spanish officers to draw up an annual service sheet which at the same time gave an indication of their entire career. Neve ordered Anza to omit styling himself the discoverer of the route to Alta California, on the ground that that honor belonged to the Indian Tarabal! He also commanded him not to lay claim to the victory over Cuerno Verde, asserting that the credit really belonged to Azuela, Anza's subordinate in that fight! Furthermore, he quarreled with Anza over his handling of New Mexican affairs, and asked Galvez for his removal, stating that he was incompetent. Very likely Croix was largely responsible for Neve's attitude. It is not probable that Neve ever read Anza's reports and diaries, which in fact represented the Colorado country with substantial correctness; rather, he listened to the embittered Croix, eager to clear himself from blame and crying to the four winds of Heaven that Anza had misrepresented the situation to him. If Anza and Neve had been personally acquainted, the latter might have judged his man, but the evidence of their annual service reports would tend to show that they had never met.

"Through all this misfortune Anza's conduct was exemplary. As a subordinate, he was not in a position to resent Neve's insults. He met them, though, with a becoming dignity and clearness of explanation that would have convinced any one who was not predisposed to an opposite view."

So much for condemnation; then Chapman continues:

"Felipe de Neve, who deserves to be remembered as Alta

California's greatest Spanish governor and not as a crabbed commandant-general, soon passed away."

Turning to the chapter labeled "Neve's Contemptible Tactics," in the historical work, "Missions and Missionaries of California", by Father Englehardt, we find lengthy discussions that reveal de Neve in not the most glorifying of lights.

Father Englehardt quotes a communication which Governor de Neve sent from Monterey to the Fathers of the missions of San Francisco and Santa Clara. The communication read: "The scarcity of provisions at the presidio for the troops and for others that are attached to it before fresh supplies may arrive obliges me to command a suspension of the rations which have been furnished to Your Reverences on account of the need in which Your Reverences stood of the said assistance since the erection of the missions until the present harvest. However, inasmuch as higher authority has not sanctioned the enjoyment of said rations and other assistance which Captain Fernando de Rivera allowed for the founding of the last three missions, I shall direct that in the accounts the provisions be marked as supplied to Your Reverences until higher authority shall determine otherwise." The case as presented in this document was untrue, according to Father Englehardt. In the first place Governor de Neve had not the authority to curtail the provisions and in the second place the presidio had a plentiful supply of provisions and could easily afford to donate to the Fathers. In speaking of this Father Englehardt says:

"It was humiliating (for the Fathers) to have to beg what was plainly coming to them by right. The rations had been assigned by Viceroy Bucareli and the royal council of Mexico not from the royal treasury, but from the Pious Fund. As in the Jesuit Period, and in accordance with the intention of the donors, this Fund should have been administered by the missionaries in keeping with the needs of the missions, instead of being subject to the whims of politicians. It was mission property, therefore ecclesiastical property. Royal decrees and royal might could not lawfully divert it to other uses; besides the missionaries certainly knew better than politicians the needs of the missions and could have administered the property at far less cost than politicians. As it was, these men of education and of missionary experience had to submit to the indignity of seeing their revenues

withheld or doled out to them like unto minors who did not know how to make proper use of their means, and then by politicians, too, whose aims lay in altogether different directions. Neve's attitude towards the religious appears the more niggardly, when it is remembered that he begrudged and refused them the beggarly rations from their missionary fund which was granted to peons from the royal treasury, whereas he himself enjoyed a salary of $4,000 cash.

"In view of the instructions which he had received from Viceroy Bucareli, we marvel at the audacity with which Neve deprived the missionaries of the little help afforded by the rations. * * * The Franciscans in California had to encounter the opposition of petty officials like Neve throughout the mission period; but they never lost their respect for civil or military authority, even though the bearer of such authority disgraced his position. * * * As for Neve, the suspicion obtrudes itself that he must have secretly received some kind of assurance from Mexico that for withdrawing the rations granted the three missions he should not be called to an account; that such assurance must have emanated from a high source which was hostile to the missionaries; and that it certainly was not Viceroy Bucareli. * * *"

Father Englehardt further accuses Governor de Neve of wrongdoing. Finally, after Father Palóu and Father Serra prove that there were supplies in plenty at the presidio warehouse, Governor de Neve agrees to let the Fathers have some—but for a consideration, alleges Father Englehardt. That is, Governor de Neve would charge the Fathers for their supplies. "As the Fathers had no means," continues Father Englehardt, "it is not clear how he (de Neve) expected them to make payment. They had come to California absolutely penniless. They had been placed on some sandy or other uncultivated plot of land; told to put up a church and dwelling, to procure implements, church goods, and other articles with the thousand dollars assigned for the erection of a mission. This they had done. Now they had to live and the servants had to be supported. Huts for the Indian converts had to be erected and the Indians had first to be induced to join and to set themselves to work, something which they hated. Yet they had not wherewith to attract or compensate the Indians, save their own meagre allowance and the rations which Neve refused.

Until the fields yielded sufficient grain there was absolutely nothing upon which to subsist. The double rations had been granted for the very purpose of maintaining their four Lower California neophytes, who were intended to help them win converts and do necessary house-work. Neve cut off this resource without any authority. At least he might have waited until the viceroy gave orders to that effect. Thus the two Fathers bitterly complained in their letter of October 12th, and some years later to Governor Fages."

In many other ways Governor de Neve attempted to thwart the missions and missionaries, intimates Father Englehardt. "Neve was not satisfied with crippling the missionaries by taking away their four or six neophyte servants. 'A few days after depriving us of the rations,' says Fr. Palóu, 'he sent an order to the corporal of the mission guards that they should not take care of the few horses, which the mission then possessed, together with the horses of the soldiers, saying they had no obligation to do so. For this reason they are running about at the mercy of the savages, and it costs us much trouble to find some one who will bring us a horse in order that we can hear confessions and celebrate holy Mass at the presidio.' It is difficult to see what more the governor could have done to prevent the conversion of the savages, short of driving either the Indians or the Fathers away. Yet this man had the hardihood to claim that he 'wished nothing so much as the progress of the missions.' "

And further, Father Englehardt says: "Not satisfied with having annoyed the missionaries with a display of his power over them in temporal matters, Governor Neve now ventured to assert supremacy in purely spiritual things as well. * * *

"* * * * the governor questioned Fr. Serra's right to administer the Sacrament of Confirmation."

Father Serra's right in this matter was soon proved, however, and "how disappointed Neve must have felt at seeing his machinations foiled. * * *"

Many more pages in the historical work of Father Englehardt are devoted to the unjust activities of Governor de Neve against the missionaries. It will be unnecessary for the present history to deal with them; enough has been quoted to give the reader an idea of what Father Englehardt claims of Governor de Neve.

In contrast with this, turn again to a passage from "Cali-

fornia, Its History and Romance," by McGroarty. We read: "Governor de Neve arrived in Monterey in February, 1777, fully informed as to the unsatisfactory conditions that existed in California and as fully determined to do all in his power to make harmony. He made friendly advances at once to Father Junipero and continued to be on good terms with the missionaries throughout his entire administration with the exception of a few disagreeable experiences which, however, had no important bearing."

In addition to founding the pueblos of San Jose and Los Angeles, Governor de Neve was important to California history in other ways. The oldest legally founded city of California, forty miles from Santa Cruz, was responsible to his work. It was here, in the Place of the Two Shrines (the Santa Clara Valley in which are the Mission Santa Clara and Mission San Jose) that Governor de Neve, as we have said, erected the first legal California pueblo. This was named in honor of Saint Joseph and is known now as the City of San Jose. The founding of this pueblo came about in this way: Following instructions from Mexico to erect pueblos near the various missions with all despatch (for it was the purpose of Spain to colonize as well as to christianize California), Governor de Neve sent Don Jose Moraga, Lieutenant-Commandant of the Presidio of San Francisco with several soldiers versed in agriculture and a handful of pablodores, or settlers, to Santa Clara Valley to found the settlement. Arriving at a river, which he named Guadalupe, Moraga ordered a halt, unsheathed his sword, and thrusting it into the fertile loam, said: "Here, in the name of God and our Sovereign King, shall we build the Pueblo of San Jose." This was November 29th, 1777.

Los Angeles (then officially named "The City of Our Lady the Queen of the Angels") was founded by Governor de Neve in September, 1781.

CHAPTER XVIII

A COLORFUL YET QUIET ERA

The period from 1782 to 1800 passed in comparative quietness. No momentous events occurred, and these eighteen years were productive of greater peace than any heretofore. The age tingled with romance; love supplanted bloodshed; and the beginnings of many Spanish families that have endured to this day were started. Beautiful daughters from pure Castillian stock—a beauty that is difficult to better in all the world over—wedded handsome, stalwart young men. The foundations were laid for what would surely have been a second glorified Spain. The foundations, however, as we shall see, were undermined, and they presently crumbled to dust.

This age, as we have said, was one of romance. In the afternoons people closed their doors and the town closed its eyes for a siesta. The tinkling of guitars mingled with the lifted voices of serenaders through the night. Lace of rare beauty shielded the fast-beating hearts of senoritas. The clink of silver spurs, no less than the clink of silver coins, spelled glamour in the saloons. Everywhere life was colorful, vivid, yet comparatively peaceful.

When Governor de Neve was made Inspector General of the troops of the Provincias Internas, by an act of the King, he necessarily had to move from Monterey, going to Chihuahua. Pedro Fages then filled the post left vacant in Monterey, becoming governor of California in 1782. He rose to this position, which he held for eight years, from a lieutenant of infantry, having commanded a company of Catalonian volunteers at San Diego for a time.

And again we find a wide divergence of opinion among the historical authorities, some of them claiming that Fages was an excellent governor, others that he had but meagre ability. We shall compare two authorities holding opposite views, quoting, first, the historian who apparently holds not such a high regard for Governor Fages. Of this governor McGroarty says:

"Fages was a man of no initiative, appearing to have been a good enough soldier but without much capabilities as a statesman. He was very energetic in fulfilling the duties of his office, writing a great many letters and making many rather fruitless efforts to place the presidios in an effective condition."

Chapman says of him: "Pedro Fages was a man of no inconsiderable ability and even intellectual capacity. His reports merit more study than they have yet received. Not only are they full of information about the province, but they are also well organized and well written. He had many amiable and appealing qualities. He was brave, energetic, and dashing, and was conscientious. He was exceedingly fond of children; they could count on him for sweets, which he carried about with him in his pockets for their delectation. He was indeed hot-tempered—who can blame him!—but his exhibitions of temper served only to bring out by contrast the essential generosity and kindliness of his nature. Furthermore, he was devoted to Alta California, and not eager to get away, as his predecessors had been. This love for the province had one of its manifestations in the interest he took in his estate at Monterey. He had an orchard of some six hundred fruit trees, besides shrubs and grape-vines, and was proud of it. So altogether, Californians should remember Pedro Fages as one of the best governors of the Spanish era."

Undoubtedly one of his commendable points was that he improved the moral conditions through the territory under his jurisdiction. He demanded absolute moral conduct among his officers at the presidio and the Alcaldes of the pueblos. Old documents indicate that the San Jose of old was a somewhat immoral pueblo; and Governor Fages frequently found the necessity of punishing infractors there. Ignacio Vallejo, Alcalde of San Jose, suffered a "raking-over-the-coals" at the hands of Governor Fages, according to the archives. Vallejo, it seems, had conducted himself in an immoral way, and this evoked a tirade from the governor.

Governor Fages was not alone as a hot-head; his wife, from all accounts, ran him a close second in this—if, indeed, she did not lead him. Having brought her to California only after much pleading, he had the pleasure then of listening to her constant nagging over existing conditions. Eulalia de Callis, the lady whom he had married, had, you must understand, come from a family

of high quality; and, although in California she was the wife of the governor and also ranked as the first lady in social standing who had ever visited the province, conditions displeased her extremely.

The array of naked Indians evident at every turn shocked the finer senses of the lady. "Thereupon," says Chapman, "she began impulsively to give away both her own clothes and those of Don Pedro, until the latter pointed out to her that she could not replenish her wardrobe; there were no shops in Alta California. That checked Doña Eulalia's reckless generosity, though it is true that she continued to deserve a reputation for charity."

When a daughter was born to her on the 3rd of August, 1784, she announced imperiously that she was leaving California—at once! This evoked a landslide of trouble. Following the words of Chapman, we see that when she found herself unable to get the consent of Don Pedro for her departure, she "resorted to coercive measures against her legal lord and master. She exiled him from her apartments, and during three months made him keep his distance, hardly so much as communicating with him. Finding that Fages did not respond to absent treatment, Doña Eulalia became suspicious, and at length convinced, though without justifiable grounds, that Fages was paying altogether too much attention to a servant girl whom he had picked up among the Indians of the Colorado. Thereupon she broke silence with Fages, and accused him of infidelity in a torrent of words. Moreover, she rushed into the street and 'told everybody,' vowing that she would get a divorce. The friars tried to reconcile her, and said that they found no grounds for a divorce. She responded that she would go to the *infierno* (Hell) before she would go again to Fages. The friars ordered her to stay at home in seclusion for a while and to do no more talking.

"The above incident took place in February, 1785. It came at a time when Fages was obliged by gubernatorial duty to make a trip to the south. He therefore asked Father Noriega to take care of Doña Eulalia, but she refused to go, locking herself and her babies in her room. Then the much-tried Don Pedro showed *his* temper. He broke down the door, and when his gentle helpmeet still refused to go to the mission, threatened to tie her up and take her. So Doña Eulalia *went*. She made the friars pay for her humiliation. During her stay at the mission they could

not manage her at all. She put on display some of her outbreaks in the church itself, to the great scandal of all who witnessed them. Indeed, the friars became so much out of patience with her that at one time they threatened to flog her and put her in chains. They did not yield to the impulse, however.

"At length, after a quarrel of about a year, Fages and his wife were reconciled, in September, 1785. The governor had desired it, all along, for he was in fact devoted to Doña Eulalia. The latter became satisfied that her charges against Fages were unfounded, and consented to return to him. From this time forth, there is no further evidence of untoward incidents between them, —but it is likely under the circumstances that they occurred, for Doña Eulalia did not give up her attempts to get away from Alta California. In the very next month after their reconciliation she wrote a petition to the *Audiencia* of Guadalajara asking for Fages' removal on the alleged ground of his ill-health. Fages did not know of the petition until after it had been sent. He then made every effort to head it off, and was successful. The documents do not say what happened in the meantime at the gubernatorial residence.

"Doña Eulalia seems finally to have won the fight. Early in 1790, Fages himself asked to be relieved. His petition was granted, and Jose Antonio de Roméu was appointed in his place. In the fall of 1790, as soon as the news reached Monterey, Eulalia and her children took the San Blas boat, and left the province. Fages had been told that he need not await the coming of his successor, but he stayed on for another year, until October or November, 1791. He probably joined his family in Mexico City, and is supposed to have died in 1796."

Before continuing with the activities of Governor de Roméu and following governors, we must turn again to the religious history, in which important events were happening. Early in the reign of Governor Fages, Father Serra had died (August 28, 1784), and the country greatly mourned his loss. The events leading to his death are noble in the light they reflect upon the great Father Presidente.

A year before his death, Father Serra had intimations that the end was coming. Asthmatic troubles and a running sore on his breast had grown worse; this, coupled with his aging condition, led him to a desire to pay all the missions one more visit while

there was yet time. Therefore, in August, 1783, he took the *San Carlos* for San Diego, where he arrived the following month. At the mission there he confirmed those who had been baptized since his last visit, gave encouragement to Fathers Lasuen and Figuer, and started, ill as he was, upon the long journey to Monterey—a distance of one hundred and seventy leagues. By the time he reached San Gabriel his condition had grown much worse, and the Fathers there despaired of saving him. At this point Father Englehardt says of him: "Nevertheless the venerable man celebrated holy Mass and gave Confirmation, though evidently with much pain, as the little Indian boys noticed who served him at the altar. With tears in their eyes they said to the missionaries, 'the old Father wants to die.' With heavy hearts the Fathers bade him farewell, because they feared that he might expire on the road to San Buenaventura, which was thirty leagues distant." "Almighty God, however, gave his servant sufficient strength," Fr. Palou remarks, "and so he traveled through the country inhabited only by savages until he reached the mission which he had founded the year before. When Fr. Serra beheld the goodly number of Christians whom but nineteen months previous he had met as pagans, he joyfully gave thanks to God. The sight lent him more courage and strength, and after he had confirmed the neophytes, he continued the journey much improved."

Father Serra continued on his way, stopping at San Luis Obispo and San Antonio, "where as at the other missions he consoled the Fathers and bade farewell for life." Arriving at San Carlos in January, 1784, he looked so much better that the Fathers there rejoiced, thinking that surely he was getting well. Now he continued his activities with renewed vigor, attending to all his duties that befell the office of presidente and local missionary.

"There were two more missions where he desired to make the farewell visit," says Father Englehardt. "When at last he found himself at liberty, he set out for the two northern establishments. The Fathers of Santa Clara had invited him to be present at the dedication of their new church, the date of which had been fixed for May 16th. The venerable Father accordingly began the laborious journey on April 30th, 1784. As he intended to dedicate the new edifice on his way back, he would not tarry at Santa Clara, but hastened to San Francisco where he was welcomed by Fr. Palóu on May 4th. A few days later he was notified that Fr.

José Murguía, the principal missionary and the builder of the new church of Santa Clara, was grievously ill. Fr. Palóu hastened to the sick Father's bedside, whilst Fr. Serra prepared those to be confirmed, and then administered the Sacrament to them. Fr. Murguía passed to his reward on May 11th, before he could witness the dedication of the structure which he had reared, and which was the most imposing church building in California at that period. Fr. Serra reached Santa Clara on May 15th. In the afternoon of the same day he blessed the church, and on the following day, fifth Sunday after Easter, he sang the High Mass and preached to the assembled multitude with his customary fervor. After holy Mass he confirmed all who had been prepared.

"Fr. Palóu now wanted to return to his mission on the bay, but Fr. Serra confessed that he felt his strength failing him, and that he wished to prepare for death by making the last retreat to Santa Clara. 'He made the spiritual exercises for some days,' says Fr. Palóu, 'and then made a general confession, or repeated the one that he had made at other times, while he shed many tears. Mine were not fewer, as I thought that this might be the last time that we should see each other.'

"When he had returned to his beloved San Carlos, Fr. Serra sent Fr. Nóboa to take the place of the late Fr. Murguía. Alone with Fr. Noriega he then devoted himself to his apostolic work. By the 16th of July, when his faculty to confirm expired, he had administered the Sacrament of Confirmation to 5,304 persons. He might then have exclaimed, says Fr. Palóu, in the words of St. Paul, 'Cursum consummavi, fidem servavi' (I have finished my course, I have kept the faith); for on that very day the packet boat landed in the bay of San Francisco with letters from the Fr. Guardian which may be said to have been the messengers of death to the Fr. Presidente, inasmuch as the news cut off all hope of seeing his desires accomplished. The Fr. Guardian informed the Fr. Presidente, why it was that no missionaries could be sent just then. Several Fathers had died at the College and others had returned to Spain on the expiration of their ten years of service, so that there was none to spare until recruits could be obtained from the mother country. Resigning himself to the will of the Lord, he appeared to recognize the news as inviting him to lay down the burden of this life, and to leave the future to Divine Providence. He communicated the contents of the letters to all

the missions. To the Fathers in the more distant missions he bade farewell and asked them for their prayers. To the Fathers of San Luis Obispo and San Antonio he wrote that he would deem it a favor if one from each mission came to San Carlos for the supplies, as he desired their presence very much. He then requested Fr. Palóu to come and assist him to die.

"Fr. Palóu hastened to San Carlos and arrived there on August 18th. He found his fatherly friend suffering very much from his old maladies, though he continued on his feet, and in the evening as usual recited the Doctrina with the neophytes. Night prayers followed, and then he concluded with the tender hymn composed by Fr. Antonio Margíl in honor of the Blessed Virgin. On the following day, August 19th, Fr. Serra asked Fr. Palóu to sing the High Mass as was customary on the 19th of every month in obedience to Don José de Galvez's orders. The servant of God sang in choir with the neophytes. After holy Mass, which Fr. Palóu celebrated on August 27th, the dying Fr. Presidente desired to receive the Holy Viaticum in church. Fr. Palóu tried to persuade him that such was not necessary; that his little room could be prepared and adorned for the visit of His Divine Majesty; but Fr. Serra replied, that he would receive holy Communion in church, since, as long as he could go there on foot, there was no reason why the Lord should come to him at the house. He accordingly went to the church about one hundred yards away unassisted but accompanied by the neophytes, all amazed and edified at the spectacle. 'When the saintly Father reached the sanctuary he knelt before a small table placed there for the purpose', Fr. Palóu describes the remarkable scene. 'I came vested from the sacristy and went to the altar. While I prepared to put incense into the censer to begin the holy ceremony, the fervent servant of God with his usual natural and sonorous voice, just as he was wont to do when well, intoned the verse *Tantun ergo Sacramentum*, tears streaming from his eyes the while. I administered the Holy Viaticum with the ceremonies of the ritual. When this most edifying function * * * was concluded, the holy man remained on his knees in the same posture giving thanks to the Lord. Having finished his devotions he returned to his cell escorted by the whole people as before.' During the following night, as he felt worse, he received Extreme Unction at the hands of his old friend Fr. Palóu. In the after-

noon of the next day, Saturday, August 28th, he expired, without any sign of agony, at the age of seventy years, nine months and four days. He had entered the Franciscan Order at the age of sixteen years, nine months and twenty-one days, and therefore had lived in religion fifty-three years, eleven months and thirteen days. On the next day, Sunday, the remains were deposited in the grave prepared for them in the sanctuary on the Gospel side of the altar close to those of Fr. Juan Crespi."

CHAPTER XIX

COMMEMORATING FATHER SERRA'S DEATH

In commemoration of Father Serra's death, the people of the Monterey Peninsula held a "Serra Pilgrimage Week," from October 12th to the 19th, 1924, a celebration that will probably be held annually from this time forward. Although it will require us to leave the chronological order of our history to speak of Serra Pilgrimage Week, no other place could be more fitting for such a notice than that immediately following the account of the life and work of the great Franciscan. Hence, we shall momentarily leave the pages of a bygone day and step into the present —to look at an event that attracted nationwide attention in 1924, an event of which the newspapers all over the country were brimming-full, an event that brought the rich and the poor, the famous and the unknown, to the Monterey Peninsula by the thousands. From the newspaper accounts which follow may be gathered the magnitude of the occasion and the brilliance and gaiety and the pathos that marked certain events of the commemorative week. Before turning to the events as they happened, it will be well to get a picture clearly in mind of the setting. For this purpose let us turn to a colorful description by Annie Laurie that ran in the San Francisco Examiner.

"What's as blue," says Annie Laurie, "as the blue of the Bay of Monterey, I ask you, with all the fishing boats bobbing on the water and the black cypress like a cloud of mystery in the distance?

"Nothing in the world but the blue of the Bay of Carmel, with the sand that's as white as the whitest sugar, and the black pines that are always singing a dirge for somebody or other close down to the very water's edge, and the air a bouquet with the fragrance of the pines and the smell of the salt sea, and the smoke of the eucalyptus leaves burning in the beach bonfires, and the yellow and blue and pink beach heliotrope swinging its

little censers like so many gaily dressed little altar boys all on a Sunday morning.

"And Abalone Cove, as clear as the eyes of a girl of sixteen, and as calm as the heart of a new-born baby and he lying on his mother's breast, safe and warm.

"Oh, it's a fine place, the place of Monterey, and a lovely place it is, the place of Carmel—why, the very names are like something in a litany! Don't you hear the bells ringing when you say Carmel?

"And the old custom house is there, with its walls four feet thick and its tiles, and the idlers loafing in the sun with their backs against the wall just as if they'd been there for a hundred years, and 'Pop' Ernest, with his red cheeks and his smiling black eyes and his 'abalone fresh today!' You can't look at him without expecting to see the village maidens beginning to sing something about, 'Let us drink, ha-ha; let us clink, ha-ha,' and holding up fine, large goblets of papier mache after the entrancing fashion of comic opera choruses since the first orchestra leader rapped on the first footlight rail with his first baton.

"And the haunted forest that's full of ghosts, pale, wistful things that hated to die and leave the beauty and the love of living behind them, and so they come back on moonlight nights and walk beside you on the road that's spilling with the silver moonlight—you're afraid to step too hard for fear you'll hear it splash around your feet—and the weird shadows the strange old cypresses do be casting, as if a band of witches had come and camped there at Cypress by the sea.

"And the new road to the old Sur—deep, deep into the forest it winds down over the hills and by the blue, blue sea. There's not a more glorious in all the world.

"Are you going down to the great fiesta on Monday, or, perhaps it's Sunday you'll go and begin the holiday with a smile and a word from Father Mestres, the old Spanish patron saint of the fiesta. Have you ever heard the good padre tell the story of the little shepherd boy, blind he was and very poor, who followed his father, the shepherd, out into the plains one strange night over nineteen hundred years ago and took with him to a certain stable in a very poor street a little lamb, the one thing he had in the world of his own, to give to a newborn babe and his mother, lying in the straw of a manger?

"And the little old Spanish Posada by the wayside, with its big fire in the old fire-place and the rude chairs made by the Indians before there was any such thing as an automobile or a telephone or a radio or a prohibition law or votes for women or—no, not before bobbed hair; they were wearing it then with a vengeance.

"All the Monterey Peninsula back in the domain of Spain again for a glorious week of fiesta, the tinkle of guitars, the light laughter of the mandolin, the swish of gorgeous petticoats, the shadow of lacy veils—como la va, compadre, what a chance for an escape from everyday and the prosaic humdrum of everyday life!

"Hola! There's Carmen coming down the road—tum-tum-tum, tum-tum-tum, tum-te-da-da—listen to the heartbeat of that song! Here's the toreador—and, as I live, yonder steps La Paloma—the white dove herself!

"Down the bay to Monterey—which way shall we go? Through the Santa Cruz Mountains, green and russet and yellow and brown in the glorious autumn colors of California, or by way of San Juan Bautista and over the melting gray through Salinas, dozing in the October sun?

"Whichever way is a good way, so that it leads back in time to the old town, the gray town, the dear town on top of the hills on San Francisco Bay."

The Monterey of Annie Laurie's description was the setting of the Serra Pilgrimage, rich in authentic history as well as in rare beauty. Upon this parcel of sun-bathed and breeze-kissed land artistic pageants were enthusiastically acted. The United Press said of the occasion:

"One hundred and forty years ago a beloved padre, Father Junipero Serra, died at Mission San Carlos del Carmelo, near here, having finished the work that has earned for him in the opinion of the modern world, the title of 'Father of the Missions.'

"For many years the burial place of the great padre was a mystery. Some thought that he had been spirited away to a sepulcher in the old world. Others insisted that he lay at rest near the scene of his labors.

"Finally his body was found and removed to the sepulcher beneath the chancel of Mission San Carlos del Carmelo. A simple

white cross standing among the ruins of the old mission mark where his body was found.

"It is in honor of the great padre, and to commemorate the 140th anniversary of his death, that the curtains of time are swinging back today to reveal the character of the Monterey peninsula as it was when Father Serra and his priests were at the zenith of their power.

"The entire Monterey peninsula has been preparing for months to make the Junipero Serra festival a spectacle to rank with the leading annually performed classics of the world, ranking next to the Mission Play and the Passion Play of the old world in importance.

"The resources of this section, in money and talent, both of which are plentiful, have been drawn upon to insure the success of the festival. A great religious ceremony is the principal event tomorrow, and during the week there will be presented two pageants, 'Rose of the Rancho,' based on Richard Walton Tully's play of the same name, and 'Fray Junipero Serra,' arranged by Rev. Father Ramon M. Mestres and Perry Newberry.

"Spanish fiestas, a rodeo, barbecues and an international Spanish dancing contest will be other features of the week.

"Father Mestres' play will depict the life of the missions during their ascendancy following the arrival of Father Serra and his brother padres. The missions in those days were the centers of religious, social and industrial life.

" 'Rose of the Rancho' will pageant a tender theme, the romance of the days of the cassock and cord, when Cupid's wings beat time to the pulsations of the hot Spanish heart in this first city of California.

"The tinkle and click of Spanish dance music will be heard in the land and the jazz hound will cease his baying during this coming week, and the dancing contests will form the vortex of the social whirl.

"Contestants from both North and South America are here to compete for cash prizes and the honor and fame to be accorded those adjudged the premier Spanish dancers of the new world.

"Carmel-by-the-sea, abode of many who have made famous names for themselves in the realm of the stage and letters, has supplied much of the talent for the pageantry. Perry Newberry, the author, is director-general of pageantry, and aiding him are

Frederick R. Bechdolt, Marcy Woods, Percy Gray and Harry Leon Wilson. Francis J. Hickson, one of California's best known actors, plays the title role in Father Mestres' pageant.

"All roads are leading to Monterey today, and along the roadsides little shrines have been erected, replicas of those which stood at resting places along the highway scores of years ago; girls are selling flowers, and a continuous whir and snorting betokens the passing of hundreds of motor cars, bound for the festival.

"The great event Sunday, officially opening the festival, will be the unveiling at Mission Carmel of the magnificent sarcophagus designed by Jo J. Mora, America's famous sculptor, in honor of the great padre.

"Spanish costumes, which are to be worn by every man, woman and child who calls the peninsula his home section, will be donned tomorrow and none will be removed (except at night) until the festival is over, October 19. Glossy whiskers adorn the faces of those able to grow them, to be shaved off when the week has become a memory; women and girls have increased their height materially with the tall comb and the mantilla, and little children waddle about in the funny clothes they wore in the 'old days,' scarcely a part of the merrymaking, wondering what it's all about, yet completing the picture.

"Terrible things are being done to the king's Spanish, for every person who can recognize an enchillada at a glance and order a tamale without stuttering, is trying to get by with the language of the padres. But the delight born of successful efforts by those who know how, as it pours from the cherry lips of bright-eyed maidens, drops caressingly mature from those of stately madonnas, or growled with gusto through the whiskered lips of temporary dons, is worth all the stuttering efforts of those who 'don't speak the language.' "

A story appearing in the San Francisco Bulletin, written by that inimitable wit, Herb Weston, whose humor is sometimes vaguely flavored with irony, read:

"There is a hint of Spanish love in the air.

"There is a great Spanish moon that laves and bathes silvered patios—patios where the soft dreamy twinkle of old guitars mixes strangely with the automatic piano in the corner pool room.

"There is color, Spanish color, splashed everywhere, the red

and yellow of Isabella's old Armada blending into the ages with the red, white and blue of the descendants of the Spanish Main.

"Everything is Spanish. It costs you $3.40 more if you can't explain in Spanish to a taxi driver where you want to go.

"Then, of course, there are the Spanish conquistadores, the Spanish caballeros, the dons, the senoritas, dark-eyed and flashing in invitation, mayhap, to take them to a modern movie to witness how Gloria Swanson, quite Nordic, shows why men leave home—the senoras, the dons and the hidalgos all swinging sinuously up the main street here as California attempts to go back 140 years and paint in color and spirit the picture of that great grim padre, Father Junipero Serra, founder of all California missions, landing at Monterey and establishing under a star-flecked and cracked gray ceiling the 'worship of God.'

"Monterey has done itself proud. The barber shops are deserted. Everyone here, except possibly some of the visitors, is masked in the long sideburns and mustache which meant so much to the early Spanish explorers.

"In as thoroughly an artistic way as possible they have cooperated with Carmel in at least masking such modern things as motion picture shows, lunch counters, shoe shining establishments and traffic cops in an effort to preserve the illusion of those great 'early idle forties,' when Monterey was the cradle and capital of California, and when it cost a man $50 if he, under the slight influence of mellow old Spanish wine, took it upon himself to ride into an inn or a man's home on horseback.

"The Serra Pilgrimage, which is the official name of the commemoration of this 140th anniversary of the landing here from Mexico of the venerable 'Fray Serra,' under the leadership of Governor Gasper de Portola, will last seven days.

"It opened yesterday morning with a salute of bells and cannon to Father Serra. After months of preparation the suspense had been broken. And all, including the thousands of guests overflowing the hotels, gave themselves over to a tumultuous ovation.

"The weather is ideal. Flags and bunting glisten in the sun, sweat from the whiskers insists upon running down to the chin. And every one is happy—gloriously happy, after the fashion of the Latins.

"At 12:30 p. m. yesterday the sarcophagus which will bear

the remains of Father Serra, planned by Father Ramon M. Mestres and fashioned by Jo Mora, internationally known sculptor, was unveiled amid impressive ceremonies in that little clay-cracked adobe hallowed as the Mission San Carlos del Rio Carmelo, four and one-half miles from here, the venerated place of worship which Father Serra established in 1771.

"There under the brow of the Santa Lucia mountains, right next to a pumpkin field, thousands gathered to see the unveiling by the Marquis de Viana, grand equerry to King Alfonso of Spain, and the special representative at this ceremony of his majesty.

"Archbishop Edward J. Hanna, Father Mestres, the Marquis and Jose Gimeno, consul-general of Spain in San Francisco, officiated. Hundreds of San Franciscans attended the ceremony.

"Last night came the first presentation of the pageant of Father Serra, the drama of his life, written by Perry Newberry, author, poet, dramatist, former mayor of Carmel, and Father Mestres. It was the grand portrayal of the early struggles of this priest who brought the Indians to the cross.

"And then later last night El Concurso de Danza Espanola, a colorful Spanish fandango contest underneath the same moon of which we spoke, was staged with such success that it was doubtful whether the dancers would be up in time this morning to attend the balance of the program.

"Today dawned full of color. First there was the sun, then the parade. It spread out in all its pageant glory the three civilizations of California, the Spanish, Mexican and the United States. First in their ornate dress of the period came the early adventurers from the court of Spain, those men who kissed the queen's hand and then set forth to risk everything. Then the Mexican period when colonization started. And finally the age of Colton Hall, General Sherman and Robert Louis Stevenson.

"This afternoon Peter Ferranti, 'king of the fishermen' at Monterey, in an impersonation of Columbus, was due to 'discover' America."

From an artistic standpoint the Serra Pilgrimage was a tremendous success. Vividly it brought back a picture of the days of early California, giving every spectator a new sense of realization—the sense of the great history of his state. All towns of the Monterey Peninsula contributed talent to the various pageants —these, of course, were the towns of Pacific Grove, Monterey,

and Carmel-by-the-Sea. Salinas also made an important contribution with the Pageant of the Anza Expedition. On this day, called "Salinas Day," every store and all public schools of Salinas closed, the lid was clamped securely down upon the town while all its citizens took "the road to Monterey."

CHAPTER XX

FATHER SERRA'S SUCCESSORS

At the close of Father Serra's life the office of presidente of the missions went to Father Francisco Palou, "whom the College of San Fernando had designated for such an emergency." However the arrangement was but temporary, for Father Palou was anxious to retire to Mexico, having already obtained permission to do so. His last entry in the baptismal register at San Carlos was dated September 7th, 1785, and soon after this he left Monterey for Mexico.

Father Fermin Francisco de Lasuen was next to fill the office of presidente of the missions. Although his appointment was dated February 6th, 1785, it was not received in Alta California until September. Coming from a long, faithful period of religious work of San Diego, he settled at San Carlos, where he remained as the Father Presidente for eighteen years.

Although the man accomplished an enormous amount in the furtherance of California, his importance to Monterey itself was not so vitally important as that of Father Serra. Therefore his activities as Father Presidente (with the advent of the time of the founding of the Mission Santa Cruz) will be dealt with in comparative brevity. For the purpose, we shall turn to Chapman's history, where we read:

"One of the principal objects of the *Faranandinos*, and of Fathers Serra and Lasuen in particular, was the founding of missions, whereby more souls might be saved and Alta California placed on a sounder material basis. Of the twenty-one *Fernandino* missions nine each were founded during the presidencies of Serra and Lasuen. Serra had long wished to establish a number of missions in the populous region bordering the Santa Barbara Channel, and authority for so doing was early received from New Spain (Mexico). It was not until 1782, however, that the first of the missions, that of San Buenaventura, was founded, the

last of Serra's nine. One of the earliest acts of Lasuen's regime was to add two more. The Father Presidente himself, now in his sixty-sixth year, went to the presidio of Santa Barbara, at the present day the most famous of all the twenty-one, when it was formally dedicated. A year later, on December 8, 1787, Lasuen in person inaugurated the mission of Purisima Concepcion, at a point previously selected by Governor Fages, thus completing the Channel missions, although actual work at the new establishment did not begin until 1788. Next, steps were taken to found two missions between San Carlos of Monterey and Santa Clara, but clear authorization therefor was not received until July, 1791. Lasuen acted with customary promptness. Both sites had already been explored, but Lasuen decided to see them himself. He found that of Santa Cruz all that had been claimed for it, and dedicated the mission there on August 28, 1791. This mission building has since crumbled to dust. The sites chosen for the other mission, Soledad, were not approved by Lasuen, who himself selected the spot for the founding. On October 9, Lasuen was on hand to raise the cross at Soledad."

Before continuing with this phase of history as recounted by Chapman, let us look closely at the Mission Santa Cruz as it then existed. Today it is but ruins, nay, it is worse than ruins; for not a trace of it remains. We may safely glean a cursory knowledge of this mission from the pages of George Whatron James' "In and Out of the Old Missions." Running the danger of some slight repetition, it will pay us to quote verbatim, for the most part, from his chapter on Santa Cruz.

"Lasuen," says James, "found matters far easier for him in the founding of Missions than did Serra in his later years. The Viceroy agreed to pay $1,000 each for the expenses of Missions of Santa Cruz and La Soledad, and $200 each for the travelling expenses of the four missionaries needed. April 1, 1790, the guardian sent provisions and tools for Santa Cruz to the value of $1,021. Lasuen delayed the founding for awhile, however, as the needful church ornaments were not at hand, but as the Viceroy promised them and ordered him to go ahead by borrowing the needed articles from the other Missions, Lasuen proceeded to the founding, as I have already related."

Here follow a few details of which we have already had occasion to speak. Then:

"The church was about thirty by one hundred, and twelve feet high. The foundation walls to the height of three feet were of stone, the front was of masonry, and the rest of adobes. The other buildings were slowly erected, and in the autumn of 1796 a flouring-mill was built and running. It was sadly damaged, however, by the December rains. Artisans were sent to build the mill and instruct the natives, and later a smith and a miller were sent to start it.

"In 1798 the padre wrote very discouragingly: 'The establishment of the villa or town of Branciforte, across the river, was not pleasing. A hundred and thirty-eight neophytes also had deserted, ninety of whom were afterwards brought in by Corporal Mesa.' It had long been the intention of the government to found more pueblos or towns, as well as Missions in California, the former for the purpose of properly colonizing the country. Governor Borica made some personal explorations, and of three suggested sites finally chose that just across the River Lorenzo from Santa Cruz."

Here follows a description of the failure of the villa of Branciforte. Then:

"In the meantime the Mission authorities protested vigorously against the new settlement. It was located on the pasture grounds of the Indians; the laws allowed the Missions a league in every direction, and trouble would surely result. But the Governor retorted, defending his choice of a site, and claiming that the neophytes were dying off, there were no more pagans to convert, and the neophytes already had more land and raised more grain than they could attend to.

"In 1805 Captain Goycoechea recommended that as there were no more gentiles, the neophytes be divided between the Missions of Santa Clara and San Juan, and the missionaries sent to new fields. Of course nothing came of this.

"On the 12th of October, 1812, Padre Quintana was found dead in his bed. On investigation it was decided that the friar, who for some time had been in poor health, unable to dress himself unaided, had died a natural death. Two years later, however, rumors led to a new investigation, and it was then learned that he had been called out of his bed to attend a dying man, set on, and brutally murdered and mutilated in an unnameable fashion, and then carefully placed in his bed and the door locked. The

culprit neophytes were discovered, and five out of the nine arrested were sentenced to receive two hundred lashes each, and then to work in chains from two to ten years. Two others died in prison, and another died in 1817 in Santa Barbara. Only one survived the punishment. The plea of the murderers was that Quintana was excessively cruel, that he had beaten two neophytes almost to death, and was inventing a new instrument of torture, to prevent the use of which his death was determined upon. This charge was carefully investigated by the military authorities and denied with emphasis.

"Bouchard's advent caused a flurry at Santa Cruz in 1818. Padre Olbés was ordered to pack up and send everything for safety to Soledad. In October he sarcastically wrote that all were astir both at the Mission and the villa of Branciforte, expecting the insurgents, 'not to fight, but to join them, for such is the disposition of the inhabitants.' In November and December the irate padre reported that on the approach of the two vessels the people of Branciforte had deliberately sacked the Mission with the intention of charging it upon Bouchard. But, as the wind prevented a landing, they were left in the lurch. Olbés was excited and forceful in his charges. The scoundrels had stolen every moveable article, had destroyed everything that could not be moved and they had desecrated the church and the holy images. He declared he would abandon the establishment rather than longer submit to the outrages of such wretches.

"Naturally such charges could not be neglected, and investigations were instituted, the Mission in the meantime being abandoned, and Olbés growing more violent as the 'pretended investigation' proceeded. The upshot of it all was that the trouble grew out of Governor Sola's giving an order that Santa Cruz be abandoned, and then sending another order to Comisionado Buelna, of Branciforte, to the effect that he was to go to the Mission, and if it was abandoned he was to remove all the property. On the morning of the 23d of November, Olbés with his neophytes set out for Santa Clara. On the 24th, Buelna went as ordered, and found the buildings vacant, so he proceeded to carry out his orders, forcing some of the doors to do so. In the meantime the major-domo of the Mission and a few Indians having doubtless heard that Bouchard had not landed, returned to the Mission to save some of the Mission goods. Imagine their amazement at

finding Buelna already there, dismantling everything. When the Governor's order was understood, however, the two parties joined in the work; and as one or two casks of wine and aguardiente could not be carried away they were spilled. Possibly some of the liquor got into the throats of the workers. The result of this on the workers was not to promote care, and there is no doubt many reckless acts were performed. Some of the Mission goods were buried or otherwise concealed; others were taken by the major-domo in a cart to Santa Clara, and others listed by Buelna and removed to the villa. Among the latter things was a trunk of the padre's, which, unfortunately, was broken into; and certain stockings given to a young lady led to the detection of the criminals, two of whom were duly punished. This investigation calmed the wrath of the clerical authorities, who soon saw that Olbés had been unduly excited, and the irate padre in a short time dutifully returned to his work.

"In February, 1819, however, he was again in trouble. All but three of his neophytes fled because some one had told them that the villa soldiers were coming to take them prisoners. But later on they returned and all was calm again. The crops were good, and the cattle and sheep herds increasing.

"In the decade 1820-30 population declined rapidly, though in live-stock the Mission about held its own, and in agriculture actually increased. In 1823, however, there was another attempt to suppress it, and this doubtless came from the conflicts between the villa of Branciforte and the Mission. The effort, like the former one, was unsuccessful.

"In 1834-35 Ignacio del Valle acted as comisionado, and put into effect the order of secularization. His valuation of the property was $47,000, exclusive of land and church property, besides $10,000 distributed to the Indians. There were no subsequent distributions, yet the property disappeared, for, in 1839, when Visitador Hartwell went to Santa Cruz he found only about one-sixth of the live-stock of the inventory of four years before. The neophytes were organized into a pueblo, named Figueroa after the Governor; but it was a mere organization in name, and, the condition of the ex-Mission was no different from that of any of the others.

"The statistics for the whole period of the Mission's existence, 1791-1834 are: Baptisms, 2,466; marriages, 847; deaths, 2,035.

The largest population was 644 in 1798. The largest number of cattle was 3,700 in 1828; horses, 900, in the same year; mules, 92, in 1805; sheep, 8,300, in 1826.

"In January, 1840, an earthquake and tidal wave brought disaster. The tower fell, and a number of tiles were carried off, a kind of premonition of the final disaster of 1851, when the walls fell, and treasure seekers completed the work of demolition.

"The community of the Mission was completely broken up in 1841-42, everything being regarded henceforth as part of Branciforte. In 1845 the lands, buildings, and fruit trees of the ex-Mission were valued at less than $1,000, and only about forty Indians were known to remain. The Mission has now entirely disappeared."

Tragedy, indeed, visited the Mission of Santa Cruz. It lived a restless life, and it died, crumbling, never to be seen again. The author had the fact of the Mission's ever impending disasters vividly brought home to him in a talk with Harry Ashland Greene, an early pioneer of this part of the country. It seems that Mr. Greene as a youth played about the dilapidated ruins of the Mission with his brother. One day in spring when tender blades of grass were peeping through the warm, brown earth and birds were singing care-free songs to the hearts of these care-free boys; when the sky was as blue as the sea and the sea was as blue as the deepest indigo; when, in short, tragedy was reduced to its lowest terms in the minds of the lads and historical values were nil, they espied something between a crevice of one of the old walls that stopped them in their tracks. It was something that glittered like gold in the bright sunlight. They stooped, peered cautiously into the opening of the walls. A gold fringe, lace, purple cloth, bright colorings! Eagerly, and yet with a touch of timidity, they pulled out their findings. They were nothing less than vestments, priestly robes of great value that they had found; these, undoubtedly had been sealed up in the walls for many years, and were still in a perfect state of preservation. Child-like, they straightway put on the robes and paraded before one another like Gods. Then their timidity returned with a rush—a faint idea of the magnitude of the thing struck them, and they hastily stuffed their treasures back where they had found them. The story of how they found a priest and told him of the incident, and of his great surprise and subsequent salvaging of the vestments, has

nothing to do with the point of our story. The incident simply gives further evidence of the hectic days through which the Mission passed. No one knows how those vestments got into a fissure of the walls—why or by whom they were put there. The most likely supposition is that a Father, fearing a raid on the Mission, sealed them in the wall as a means of preserving them from ruthless hands.

"The governors and the friars had long wished for additional missions somewhat farther inland, though west of the Coast Range," says Chapman, "with the idea of reducing all the Indians of the coast districts between San Diego and San Francisco. Besides giving more converts to the faith this would remove the last vestige of Indian peril in the region under Spanish control. Governor Borica (1794-1800) was particularly active in co-operating with Father Lasuen to achieve this end. The year 1795 was largely taken up with careful explorations for mission sites, and in the following year the viceroy authorized the founding of the five missions asked for. By May, 1797, everything was ready. Then followed the most remarkable era of mission-founding in the history of the province. Serra in 1771 and Lasuén in 1791 had established two missions in a single year. Now, Lasuén from June to September established no fewer than four, followed in June, 1798, by the erection of a fifth. At the inauguration of all these missions Father Lasuén presided in person, dedicating San Jose (a number of miles north of the pueblo which gave the name to the present-day city of San Jose) on June 11, 1797, San Juan Bautista on June 24, San Miguel on July 25, San Fernando Rey on September 8, and San Luis Rey on June 13 of the following year. In so doing, Father Lasuén had to traverse the whole occupied sphere of the province, some five hundred miles or more in length, enduring hardships which can scarcely be appreciated in this day and age of luxurious travel. Verily, for a man in his seventy-seventh or seventy-eighth year Father Lasuen might have been pardoned for feeling a high degree of self-satisfaction over his achievement, though there is no evidence to the effect that he did.

"Yet Father Lasuén rendered perhaps even more distinguished service as an administrator than as a founder of missions. Not only must the new missions be placed upon a durable footing, but the old ones had also to be maintained. A right to

administer the sacrament of confirmation had been granted to Serra for ten years. This ceased with his death in 1784. * * * Lasuén was the only other Father-Presidente to receive this right. It was granted for ten years in 1785, but was not forwarded until 1790. In the five-year period remaining to him he confirmed about 9,000. He also exercised other powers which ordinarily would have been in the hands of the secular clergy. Since there were no other priests in Alta California the missionaries had administered the sacraments and performed various religious services for the Spanish population, though this was not a part of their regular duties. In 1796 the bishop of Sonora, unasked, conferred on Lasuén the titles of *Vicario Foraneo* and *Vicario Castrense*, whereby he was authorized to administer the customary sacraments other than that of confirmation to the civilian and military elements respectively. At the same time he was made *Juez Eclesiastico*, or ecclesiastical judge, for such cases as might ordinarily be tried in a church court. All of these powers he was allowed to delegate to his subordinates, which Lasuén accordingly proceèded to do. In 1795, too, Lasuén was appointed commissary of the Inquisition of Mexico. As such he had occasion to publish a few edicts forwarded to him from Mexico, and once 'confiscated and forwarded to the capital four copies of a forbidden game called El Eusébio.' These new duties added considerably to Lasuén's responsibilities, for by his own account the Spanish settlers were careless about observance of certain precepts of the church, such as those of annual confession and receiving communion at Easter.

"Yet, the old Father-Presidente was far from being overwhelmed by his labors. In 1797, after he had just completed the founding of the four missions established in that year, Governor Borica, who regarded the achievement as extraordinary, complimented him, and observed that he must have renewed his youthful vigor by bathing in the holy waters of another Jordan. There is another side to Father Lasuén's administration deserving of comment in this connection. Whenever there was anything important to be done, he went himself to attend to it. His official headquarters were at San Carlos of Monterey, but his tours were so frequent that he was rarely there for any length of time.

"It was during Lasuén's rule, too, that a forward step was taken in the economic growth of the missions. In addition to the

normal development in agriculture and stock-raising as well as in the number of Indians living at the missions, the neophytes received instruction in the trades of the artisan beyond anything they had had before. The friars had already taught their wards all they knew, but desired to perfect them in their employments and make the missions independent of the supply-ships from New Spain as much as possible. Acting probably at Lasuén's suggestion Governor Fages wrote to the viceroy in 1787, asking that carpenters, smiths, masons, and other artisans be sent to Alta California to instruct the Indians. About twenty were sent, at royal expense, mostly between 1792 and 1795, on four- or five-year contracts. A few remained permanently in the province, but most returned later to New Spain. Much of the economic advance of the missions may be attributed to their coming. One wonders, too, how much of the improvement in mission architecture was due to the building or reconstruction effected by them. Certainly the missions of the earliest days were rude edifices, while those of the period of Father Lasuén have been almost solely responsible for the 'mission style' which is so characteristic, and not to be found in the present-day architecture of California." The work carried on by Father Lasuén in reconstructing the San Carlos Mission has been gone into in detail.

Although in the course of Father Lasuén's rule differences arose between him and various military officials, "it may fairly be said * * *" continues Chapman, "that Lasuén was able both to maintain harmony with the military and to have his own way in the management of the missions. All his contemporaries spoke highly, even enthusiastically, of him. There can be no doubt that his lovable traits as a man contributed appreciably to his success as an administrator. The sweetness and nobility of his character are attested by foreigners and Spaniards alike, whose comments are all the more worthy of credence in that they wrote under circumstances which did not require them to set down other than what they really felt."

Bancroft, not always kindly disposed towards the friars, has nevertheless made a noble tribute to the great padre, in saying:

"In him were united the qualities that make up the model or ideal padre. * * * In person he was small and compact, in expression vivacious, in manners always agreeable, though dignified. He was a frank, kind-hearted old man, who made friends

of all he met. Distinguished visitors of French and English as well as of Spanish blood were impressed in like manner with his sweetness of disposition and quiet force of character. His relations with the college, with the government, and with his band of missionary workers were always harmonious, often in somewhat trying circumstances, though no one of the Franciscans had more clearly defined opinions than he. None of them had a firmer will, or were readier on occasion to express their views. His management of the mission interests for eighteen years affords abundant evidence of his untiring zeal and of his ability as a man of business. His writings * * * prepossesses the reader in favor of the author by their comparative conciseness of style. Of his fervent piety there are abundant proofs; and his piety and humility were of an agreeable type, unobtrusive, and blended with common-sense. * * * Padre Fermin—as he was everywhere known—to a remarkable degree for his time and environment based his hopes of future reward on purity of life, kindness, and courtesy to all, and a zealous performance of duty as a man, a Christian, and a Franciscan."

Father Tapis was appointed next Presidente of the Missions, which office he capably filled from 1803 to 1812.

CHAPTER XXI

CONTEMPORARY DEVELOPMENTS

So much for ecclesiastical history of this era. Before turning again to the history of government rule, it will be well here to consider foreign interests. Other countries were beginning to take fresh interest in Alta California; and ships prowling along its shores began to stop, taking cognizance of the awakening land. Comte de Laperouse was one of the first foreigners to visit the province, beginning what was to be communication with California and the outside world. Having been sent by the French government on a voyage of exploration and scientific discovery around the globe, he cast anchor in the Monterey Bay, September 14, 1786. "He was," according to Chapman, "instructed to find out the condition, force, and aim of the Spanish settlements in the Californias, note at what degree of latitude the fur trade began, and report on the facilities there might be for French establishments north of Monterey."

For ten days Laperouse remained here, hobnobbing with officials of mission and government, returning the good grace with which he was received with extreme cordiality. While here they gleaned ideas of prevalent conditions in the province which no other outside interests had yet fully done. Their description, which was largely scientific in character, dealing with geography, climate, resources, and Indians, was remarkable in "accuracy, comprehensiveness, and kindly fairness." "The military and political functions and the mission system were also covered," says Chapman. "They looked forward to a great future for Alta California, but felt that progress would be slow under Spanish rule. The fur trade was the only immediate economic prospect, they said, and gave their further opinion that it would be a century, or perhaps two centuries, before Alta California would attract the attention of maritime powers. They could not foresee the discovery of gold, which was to hasten the development of the

Pacific coast. Leaving Alta California, Laperouse crossed over to China. In 1788 he was in New Zealand. This was the last that was ever heard of him. Undoubtedly his ship and all on board were lost in one of the many unrecorded disasters of maritime history. Fortunately for posterity he had just previously forwarded his journal to France."

For the first time, 1788, American ships, the *Columbia* and *Lady Washington*, plowed through the waters that bathed the shores of California. Their captains, James Kendrick and Robert Gray, were the first American navigators to sail upon the Pacific. Their object was, primarily, to ascertain the attitude of the Spaniards toward them. "In May, 1789," says Chapman, "acting on advices from New Spain, Governor Fages wrote to Jose Dario Arguello, commander of the presidio of San Francisco, warning him that a boat called the *Columbia*, 'which is said to belong to General Washington,' had entered the Pacific with a companion ship in order to make discoveries and inspect the existing Russian settlements. Arguello was ordered to capture these vessels if they should come to San Francisco. This document is the earliest reference to the United States that has thus far been found in the annals of Alta California. From this time forward, mention of the United States was more frequent. As already stated, the term 'Boston' usually served for the entire country on the opposite coast of the continent. For example, an Indian from Nootka who was baptized at Soledad in May, 1793, was described as the son of an Indian killed by Captain Gray of the ship *Lady Washington* 'belonging to the Congress of Boston.'

"As for Kendrick and Gray, they avoided the dire fate that may have been in store for them, by failing to make port in Alta California. Gray is believed to have first reached the coast off the northern part of what is now the State of California. This he did on August 2, 1788. Thence he proceeded northward to Nootka, where presently he was joined by Kendrick in the *Columbia*. In the next year Gray transferred to the *Columbia*, took her to China (where he picked up a cargo of tea), and went on around the world, arriving in Boston in 1790, this being the first time that a ship flying the American flag had ever encircled the globe."

Vancouver, of whom we have also spoken in connection with comments upon Father Lasuén, made three visits to California.

Arriving on November 14, 1792, in the Bay of San Francisco, Vancouver remained twelve days, which, according to reports, were pleasantly spiced with entertainment. While in this port a second English ship dropped anchor there, the *Chatham,* commanded by William Broughton. Vancouver departed from the Bay of San Francisco November 26 and arrived in the Bay of Monterey the following day. Once again he connected with another of his own fleet, the *Daedalus*, which was anchored at Monterey. Here Vancouver remained for over fifty days, being lavishly entertained by the Spaniards. Governor Arguello, who was temporarily holding office, did his utmost to show the visitors a warm cordiality.

On October 19, 1793, Vancouver once again cast anchor in the Bay of San Francisco, but remained there but five days. His treatment under Governor Arrilliga was far from what he expected, and he left a greatly disappointed man. He then went to Monterey, arriving November 1, but stayed here but four days. The reception was the same as at San Francisco. In Santa Barbara, where next he went, he was received with more cordiality, but the restraint was nevertheless noticeable. His next two stops were Ventura and San Diego. He sailed for the Hawaiian Islands December 9.

His third visit, made in 1794, was more like that of his first. Arriving in Monterey, November 6 of that year, he found that his old friend Jose Dario Arguello was again in command, and again countless courtesies were extended to Vancouver and his crew. When Borica, the new governor arrived (on either the 9th or 11th), the courtesies were continued; and Vancouver remained until December 2, then set sail for England by way of Cape Horn.

"Vancouver, like Laperouse," says Chapman, "was much impressed by the natural advantages of Alta California, but criticized the Spaniards for their failure to make due use of their surroundings, marvelling at the weakness of their establishments. Alta California's greatest need, he said, was the stimulus of commerce, so as to create new wants and new industries and give a new value to lands and produce. With the exception of the Santa Barbara Indians he characterized the natives as the most miserable race he had ever seen. For the friars, who had always received him well, he had nothing but words of enthusiastic praise.

Other Spaniards, too, impressed him favorably as individuals, save only Arrillaga, upon whom he fairly emptied the vials of his wrath."

Other ships, visiting the California shores in this era, were: The *Phoenix*, an English ship commanded by Thomas Moore, stopping at Santa Barbara in 1795; the *Discovery*, commanded by William Broughton, stopping at Monterey in 1796; the *Otter*, commanded by Ebenezer Dorr, (the first United States vessel ever to anchor in an Alta California port), stopped at Monterey from October 29 to November 6, 1796; the *Eliza*, an American ship commanded by James Rowan, touched San Francisco in 1799; and the *Betsy*, also an American ship, commanded by Charles Winship, anchored at San Diego in 1800.

At this point we must return to governmental history where we find, as aforesaid, that Jose Antonio Romeu had succeeded Pedro Fages as governor. When Governor Romeu arrived in California he was suffering from a serious disease which in that age was found incurable. The reign of Governor Romeu was a short one. He died of his affliction in Monterey, a year and seven months after his appointment to office.

Then a council was formed in Monterey to select a new governor. Jose Dario Arguello, commandante of the Presidio of Monterey; Lieut. Jose Francisco de Ortega, of Loreto; Lieut. Felipe de Goycoechea, of Santa Barbara; and Ensign Hermenegildo Sal, of San Francisco, met in this council and selected Capt. Jose Joaquin de Arrillaga of Loreto as the logical one to fill the position of new governor—a temporary appointment until a permanent governor could be put in office.

Of Governor de Arrillaga, McGroarty says:

"Jose Joaquin de Arrillaga, the sixth governor, was as all his predecessors had been, a soldier. He had distinguished himself in campaigns against the Indians. He arrived in Monterey early in 1793 and at once entered upon the duties of his office. In the few months, during which Arrillaga occupied the office of governor, he concerned himself almost entirely with the presidios, endeavoring to improve their weak and extremely inefficient condition. He wrote a full report of the situation to the Viceroy and prepared for his successor an elaborate statement of the situation. Having done these things, Arrillaga did not await the arrival of his successor, but returned to Loreto. He was a very

capable and painstaking official and was destined to return to California at a future time to once more sit in the chair of state."

Following Governor Arrillaga came Governor Diego de Borica, the seventh governor of California. This man, a "gentleman and scholar," begets almost universal respect from historians. His acts have drawn praise from nearly every source; and Father Englehardt in his histories gives him credit for a much better treatment of the missionaries than preceding governors. Although Borica was reluctant to accept the position of governor, when he did so he made an admirable one and filled the vacancy far better than some of his predecessors had done who had coveted the position.

Chapman says of Borica:

"Diego Borica, who had taken over the government at the time of Vancouver's last visit, was one of the most attractive figures of Spanish days, and should rank next after Neve and Fages among the best governors of that period. Like his immediate predecessor he was a Basque, but from the province of Alava. After a long military career in New Spain he had risen to the rank of lieutenant-colonel at the time of his appointment to Alta California. Later, he received a colonelcy. Borica was a most jovial character. His letters, even in his official correspondence, are teeming with wit and good humor. He seems also to have been a convivial diner. Vancouver, Puget, Alava, and Fidalgo were all good fellows, he once declared, but no better than he 'before a dozen Rhine wine, port, or Madeira.' With characteristic optimism, too, he took delight in his surroundings, which many of his predecessors had been far from appreciating. 'To live much, and without care,' he once wrote, 'come to Monterey.' Within a few weeks of his arrival he penned the following glowing description:

" 'This is a great country; climate healthful, between cold and temperate; good bread, excellent meat, tolerable fish; and *bon humeur* which is worth all the rest. Plenty to eat, but the most astounding is the general fecundity, both of rationals and irrationals. The climate is so good that all are getting to look like Englishmen. This is the most peaceful and quiet country in the world; one lives better here than in the most cultured court of Europe.' "

When Governor Borica started his term in 1794 he found

conditions between the Missionaries and the Civil and Military authorities in a deplorable state of affairs. There had been constant harangues before his arrival. The Missionaries had thought other factions were doing them a great injustice—as no doubt they were—making it difficult for the Missionaries to accomplish those things their King expected of them. And in turn the Military authorities had looked upon the Missionaries as meddlers—a bothersome people who wanted and asked for too much. With Governor Borica this condition changed. He could see and appreciate the valuable work of the Missionaries; he treated them as human beings; and, in turn, gained their respect and friendship.

Perhaps the most important act of Governor Borica—the most important, at least, to the present history—was his attempt to found a settlement where the City of Santa Cruz now stands. This was paramount in his mind—a great industrial city in the great California! Just what led to his dream, this worthy vision? Again we must consult McGroarty, who says:

"It came about in this way. In 1795 there were rumors of an invasion of California by France. In order to enable the province the more effectively to resist this invasion, the Marquis de Branciforte sent to California seventy-two Catalonian volunteers and eighteen artillerymen. The volunteers were under command of Lieut.-Colonel Pedro de Alberni and the artillery was under command of Sergeant Jose Roca. The French invasion never took place, but the rumor proved fortunate for California from the fact that it brought to the province with the reinforcements Alberto de Cordoba, an engineer of exceptional ability and energy. Such a man was much needed in California, and Governor Borica rejoiced in the presence of Cordoba. The two became firm friends and when the danger of invasion had passed they joined their talents and energies to the end that certain enterprises long delayed might be carried out. Chief among these enterprises were the strengthening of the coast defenses and the erection of new pueblos.

Governor Borica's belief as to the cause of the failure of other pueblos was held in part by the Fathers, but the Fathers also held additional views on the subject. These views, submitted to Viceroy Branciforte at his request by Fathers Alonso Isi-

doro Salzar and José Señan, were not put into effect, but no doubt caused the viceroy to stop and ponder.

However, their remonstrance arrived too late to take effect. Viceroy Branciforte had already instructed Governor Borica to found the pueblo. One of the reasons for the Viceroy's early command to found the settlement was due to the fact that Cordoba had reported to the governor that the most likely place for the location of the proposed new city—the most likely place he had seen in his tours of inspection—was that in which the present city of Santa Cruz now thrives. "Everything," according to McGroarty, "necessary for the support and progress of a town was there to be found—good land, plenty of water for irrigation, timber and a safe anchorage for vessels." Hence, the Viceroy was anxious to have work started on the new city; and, having already given such instructions to the governor, he took little cognizance of the objections of the missionaries.

In spite of the fact that the Fathers objected to the proximity of the new city to the Mission of Santa Cruz, a good purpose underlay the founding of the settlement. It proved to be a failure, yes, but consider the present cities of San Francisco and Los Angeles—with everything at hand to make them successful, they tottered in the early days and nearly collapsed. Cities of any kind were perilous undertakings—they might endure, they might not. The motives, most certainly, were high in scope and design for the Villa de Branciforte. It is unfortunate that the city did not live. Yet today in the same place thrives beautiful Santa Cruz, blooming like a rare flower over the decayed, and yet fertile ruins of a great tree. There can be little question of the value of the location as chosen by Cordoba, as evidenced by the popularity and fundamental worth of Santa Cruz today.

Returning to the manner in which the Villa de Branciforte was founded: "It was decided," says McGroarty, "that only the best class of colonists should be settled in the town. Some of them were secured in California and others were brought up from Mexico. Each colonist was given two horses, two mares, two cows, a yoke of oxen, two goats, two sheep, a musket, a plow and other necessary tools and implements. Cordoba laid out the town and built some houses of adobe with tiled roofs. The streets were arranged in straight and symmetrical lines and a system of sani-

tation installed. The town was called Branciforte, in honor of the Viceroy who had approved all the plans and arrangements."

Borica, realizing that the finest of mankind was essential for the success of the new city, asked for men of the best physical well-being, among whom should number stone-cutters, carpenters, masons, shoemakers, smiths, tailors, tanners, tilemakers, shipwrights and sailors. But a great disappointment was in store for Borica. When the *Concepcion* arrived in the Monterey Bay, May 12th, 1797, only nine recruits (not the best specimens of manhood) were aboard. There was a total of seventeen persons who "belonged to the vagabond and criminal classes in Guadalajara." These alone were the volunteers, and they, poor wretches, were but partially clothed and some were suffering from a ravaging disease. "After naming Corporal Moraga commisionado of the colony, the governor with the recruits on July 17th, 1797, proceeded to execute his grand project."

"At the end of the first year," says McGroarty, "it (Branciforte) had a population of only forty souls. The crops had turned out well and there seemed to be no reason why Branciforte should not become all that it was hoped it would be. In the minds of the pablodores and people generally there was conceived a strange and unreasonable prejudice against the new city. They declined to settle there and those who were already inhabitants soon began to desert the place. In a pathetically short space of time the whole enterprise, born amid so many high hopes, was utterly abandoned. It is a strange thing that the present great cities of California appear to have sprung into existence without the premeditation of the Spanish pioneer in whose very capable hands had been entrusted the molding of California. Despite its wonderful harbor, neither the Spanish nor Mexican era ever contemplated the existence of a great city at Yerba Buena, where San Francisco now stands. It was never thought that Los Angeles or San Jose would become anything more than villages at best."

CHAPTER XXII

MORE CHANGES—THE BEGINNING OF DISCORD

When Father Time ushered in the nineteenth century, he brought an era that was to be replete with change—with change from a Spanish province to a Mexican and then to that of the United States. The century began peacefully enough, but as time drew on the Russians in Northern California became a menace and the increasing influence of the Mexicans was felt. One unfortunate event that occurred early in the century was the passing of Father Lasuén. Father Englehardt says of his death: "* * * * California was called upon to part forever with Fr. Fermin Francisco de Lasuén. He must be numbered among the territory's best men and greatest benefactors. As presidente he guided the destinies of the missions with a master hand since the year after Fr. Serra's death. We have no details of Fr. Lasuén's last days and death, save that, as Fr. José Viñals writes, 'he died after receiving all the Sacraments with truly religious resignation at 2:00 o'clock in the afternoon of Sunday, June 26th, 1803, at Mission San Carlos. Before passing away he declared in the presence of Fathers Buenaventura Sitjar, José Viader, Francisco Gonzalez, Baltasar Carnicer, and José Viñals, that Fr. Estévan Tapis had been chosen by the College to succeed as presidente.' Fr. Viñals at once notified Fr. Tapis, who two days later in a circular from Santa Barbara announced the death of the Fr. Presidente to the missionaries. He also informed them that he had assumed the office of presidente, and asked each one to offer up twenty holy Masses for the repose of the soul of the deceased Superior in accordance with the ancient agreement, 'though, because of his known virtue and having died with the holy Sacraments, we should piously believe that his soul enjoys God.' "

Another event early in this century—the forming of a boundary line between Lower and Upper California, is recounted by Father Englehardt, who tells of the reasons for and the need

of such a boundary: "In government circles important changes also took place. Viceroy Miguel José de Azanza, who had entered upon his duties on May 31st, 1798, on August 30th, 1800, gave way to Felix Berenguer de Marquina. The new viceroy soon came to the conclusion that Lower California ought to be separated from the civil and military jurisdiction of Upper California. The king, however, desired more information on the subject before giving his decision. Marquina therefore asked the Fr. Presidente of the Franciscans for his opinion. Fr. Lasuén replied that he regarded the plan as most beneficial for the welfare of the missions in both territories, because questions frequently arose which demanded prompt gubernatorial action. If the governor happened to be in the other part of his extensive territory, action would be delayed and much hardship might result. The proposition was again submitted to the king, who on March 26th, 1804, issued the decree which divided the Californias and gave a governor to each department. The dividing line was to be the Rio Rosario of Barràbas, the same that formed the boundary between the Dominican and Franciscan missions, between fifteen and twenty miles below San Diego. Lieutenant-Governor José Joaquin de Arrillaga, who since the departure of Borica ruled both Californias, was placed in command of Upper California with instructions to administer the affairs of the peninsula until a governor should be named for that territory. When Felipe de Goycoechea had been appointed for Lower California, Arrillaga sailed from Loreto up the Gulf of California to Bay San Luis, and thence traveled overland to Monterey where he arrived on January 20th, 1806."

In the very last year of the eighteenth century—that of 1800—José Joaquin de Arrillaga succeeded Borica as governor. As McGroarty says: "Borica practically chose his own successor by recommending José Joaquin de Arrillaga to be the eighth governor of California. Borica induced Arrillaga to apply for the position, and wrote a strong endorsement of the application to the Viceroy in Mexico. The Viceroy, in turn, also recommended Arrillaga's appointment to the King, and in the year 1800, Arrillaga returned to Monterey to take up the duties of a position which he had temporarily exercised previously, between the years 1792 and 1794. He was destined to serve longer as Governor of California than any other man who held that position under Spain

either before or after his time. For fourteen long years—hard working years—was Don José Joaquin de Arrillaga the Spanish Governor of the Province of California. His administration was distinguished by his soldierly efforts to make California strong to defend itself against enemies from without and by the fact that he was exceptionally friendly to the missions. Arrillaga was an intensely loyal son of the Church. He is the only Spanish Governor whose dust lies in California. He died at the lonely Mission of Soledad, July 25, 1814, and was buried there.

"Arrillaga was also the first of the Spanish Governors to be clothed with full civil and military power combined. His first thought, however, was to strengthen the military defenses, which he found in a pathetically weak condition. His predecessors, try as they would and as they did, to put California in a position to withstand the attacks of an enemy, found their efforts futile. They could not secure sufficient troops from Spain to create a formidable military establishment, nor would Spain give its far-away province the money necessary to erect fortifications along the coast. The white population of California was too sparse for recruiting soldiers therefrom and the Indians were not of the proper caliber for military purposes."

As a means for appreciating the phenomenal growth of California—to say nothing of its development—note the population of 1800 as given by McGroarty:

"When Arrillaga began his rule in 1800 there were about four hundred persons included in the military establishment of the Province. Sixty-one soldiers were divided between Santa Barbara and San Diego. Sixty-five were at Monterey and thirty-eight at San Francisco. The remainder included the Catalonian volunteers and artillerymen who were scattered up and down the coast. There was a battery at San Francisco, one at San Diego and another at Monterey, but they were sadly inefficient. It was not guns and soldiery that saved California from the attacks of invaders, but rather was it the remote position which the Province occupied on the map of the then known world, coupled with the universal belief that it was an impoverished country not worth invading. The entire population of California at that time was less than thirty thousand souls, less than three thousand of whom were white. This, of course, does not include the Indians

not attached to the Missions, the number of which there was no means of knowing.

"The white population, however, in which may be included offspring of whites who had married Indian women, was steadily increasing. Whatever increase there was came from births. There was little or no immigration. At this time most of the whites in the north were domiciled at Branciforte, in Santa Cruz. The population of Los Angeles was two hundred sixty-nine, and that of San Jose one hundred eighty-seven, nearly all of whom were so lazy and shiftless in their habits as to place them below par even when compared with uncivilized Indians. There was a good deal of crime and disorder, especially in San Jose, which had in those far-away days a reputation as bad as it is now good, and Los Angeles was little if any better. San Francisco was nothing more than what the Mission made it, and Monterey (not including Carmelo) was purely a military post."

As far as the Missions were concerned, the opening of the century proved to be the most bountiful yet experienced. As Father Englehardt says: "The first decade of the nineteenth century may be designated as the Golden Age of the California Missions. It was not as eventful in noisy episodes as the preceding or subsequent periods, but in Arrillaga the territory possessed a governor thoroughly in sympathy with the work of Christianizing and civilizing the savages, an official who ruled according to the spirit as well as the letter of the Spanish laws concerning the Indians. Withal he knew that preaching the Gospel, administering the Sacraments, and enforcing the Ten Commandments, pertained absolutely to divinely constituted ministers; and that it belonged to him to protect them in the free exercise of these duties. He therefore kept his place and let them alone. Hence no such clashes occurred as under Neve and Fages. Fr. Estevan Tapis, hardly less capable and pious than his venerable predecessor, ruled the missions as presidente with zeal and wisdom. The missionaries, too, labored with a will for the salvation of the Indians and their own sanctification. It need not surprise us, then, that more savages entered the fold at this time than at any other period of equal length. The prospects of winning the savages east of the coast range of the mountains were so promising that plans were devised for more missions even before Fr. Lasuén had passed to his reward."

Turning again to governmental history, we find that during Governor Arrillaga's term the first intimations of dissatisfaction with Spanish rule were felt—not in Alta California—but in Mexico. "Came then in 1810," says McGroarty, "the message that Miguel Hidalgo, the patriot priest of Mexico, had buckled his sword around his priestly robe and had taken the field at the head of the Aztec people for Mexican Independence. This news had no effect on Arrillaga or the people of California, who remained intensely loyal to the Crown of Spain, and there can be no doubt that had Arrillaga lived to see the day when the victorious Mexicans came to California to demand its surrender he would have refused, while life was in him, to haul down the flag of his king. But he did not live to see that day. He passed from this earth in the year 1814, within the sunny portals of Soledad, in the sixty-fourth year of his age."

Such were the events in the early years of the nineteenth century under the rule of the beloved Arrillaga. Following his death, Jose Dario Arguello, the Commandante of Santa Barbara, temporarily filled the office of governor. After about a year in this capacity, his successor, "the renowned Pablo Vicente de Sola," as McGroarty speaks of him, "the tenth and last Spanish Governor of California, arrived at Monterey with his entourage from Mexico. Sola was a native of Spain and intensely loyal to the Crown, his loyalty accentuated and strengthened by the disloyalty and the spirit of revolt then blazing into fury throughout New Spain. But California was an exception, the whole Province being as loyal to the King as was Sola, himself. When the new Governor arrived at Monterey he found himself in an atmosphere much to his liking, and he was welcomed as no man had ever been welcomed before in that place.

"It had required nearly three months for the new Governor to make the sea voyage from Mexico to Monterey, where he at last arrived safe and well, August 30, 1815. Sola was then fifty-five years old and was the stately product of a life-long career of military and diplomatic training in the service of the King. His fame as an intense Loyalist was well known in the Province in which he came to rule. The wealth, the beauty and the very flower of all California were waiting to greet him when his ship anchored in the bright waters of Monterey and he stepped from his shallop upon her cypressed shores.

"From far and near were gathered the troops to the presidios, cavalrymen mounted on the finest horses in the world, the Catalonian infantry in their leather jackets, the high officers plumed and in slashed breeches, velvet and laced and buckled with golden swords; the cowled, brown-robed Brothers of St. Francis who had trudged from San Diego, San Luis Rey, San Gabriel, San Luis Obispo, San Francisco and all the Mission hospices that stood then, in the days of their glory, each one day's journey apart from the other on the sun-swept stretches of El Camino Real. There also were the beautiful women of Alta California gowned in fine silks and velvets and jeweled with pearls; and Indian neophytes from the far-flung Mission shelters, bands of Indian choristers, Indian musicians and singers taught by the padres to draw exquisite music from flute and viol; the dancing girls of Monterey with castanets and, peering from the dim aisles of pine and cypress, were the dark eyes of the still unregenerated Gentiles of a savage race who had not yet been gathered into the warmth and kiñdliness of the fold.

"As Sola stepped ashore the cannon from the heights of the presidio thundered their welcome from their iron throats; the troops were drawn up in a long line saluting the new Governor as he passed; at the door of the Royal Church of San Carlos of Monterey the dignitaries of the California Missions awaited him, arrayed in gorgeous golden vestments, with little dark-eyed Indian acolytes swinging censers at their feet. As a loyal son of the Church, Sola's first act was to bow at the altars of his fathers in attendance upon the solemn Mass which was conducted that day in Monterey with all possible pomp and ceremony.

"In the afternoon there was a carnival of games and fiestas in the new Governor's honor. There were Spanish and Indian dances; all the sports known to the time were engaged in for his edification and delight. Not the least thrilling number on the program was a tremendous encounter between a bull and a grizzly bear. At night there was a great banquet and a ball at which the Indian musicians furnished the music. Monterey was aflame with thousands of lights; bonfires burned from the darkness of the hills. Had Pablo Vicente de Sola been the King himself, his welcome to Monterey could not have been more glorious.

"The next day Governor de Sola was escorted by the Padres and the multitude across the green hill that lies between Monterey

and Carmelo. As he ascended the brown highway he looked back and had his first view of the Bay of Monterey lying in the golden sunlight in the embrace of the hills, a scene that no man, seeing, ever can forget. Onward he passed through the pines with the deep, haunting voice of the sea following him all the way. He knelt at the stations of the cross which had been erected on the road that was called the Road of Calvary. At the end of the fifth mile he was descending the opposite slope of the hill, the waters of the little Bay of Carmel were dancing in the distance, and suddenly he saw the bright river flowing to the sea and the Church of San Carlos de Carmel in its beauty rising from the emerald bosom of the upland. At the Mission a great host of Indian neophytes awaited him in gala attire and the bells rang out their sweet tones of welcome. With bared head the Governor entered the beautiful church, approached the altar and knelt above the ashes of Junipero Serra, Lasuén and Juan Crespi, the great-souled Franciscans who had wrested California from the darkness of heathenism and savagery."

Such, then, was the opening of Sola's term. Happiness pulsed not only through his own arteries but through those of nearly all Californians as he took the reins of government. But how different were to be his feelings when he relinquished those reins —when he turned them over to revolutionists of Mexico, and Spanish California was to become but a memory!

Sola had not long to wait for trouble. The Russians—the Muscovites—had settled on the coast north of San Francisco, building forts, Fort Ross and Fort Bodega; and it appeared as if they were intent upon the colonization of that end of the province. At any rate, they were actively engaged in the hunting and fishing business there. Governor Sola instructed the Franciscans to advance their line of Missions as a possible means of retarding the activities of the Russians. As a result of these instructions the missions of San Rafael and San Francisco Solano were established. However, this seemed needless, as the Russians exhibited a friendly spirit throughout. "They were," as McGroarty says, "extremely deferential and courteous in all their acts and aided the Franciscans with contributions of both money and ornaments in the erection of the Mission at Sonoma."

In reality it was not the Russians that Sola had to fear, but the Mexican interests who threatened a revolution and other

revolutionists from the countries of South America. As the year of 1818 was highly eventful in the attempts of "outsiders" to gain a foothold in California, we must pause to study cause and effect. As recounted by Chapman:

"The year 1818 was the only time in Alta California history, prior to the coming of the Americans, that an external foe ever attacked the province, despite many years of apprehension, in earlier days, over a possible foreign danger. The campaign of that year is interesting not only in itself but also because it was connected with an important phase of the Spanish American Wars of Independence. The people of the United States were enthusiastically in favor of the struggling Spanish colonies. Despite the neutrality of the government, many Americans gave practical help to the insurgents in their battle for liberty. In particular they rendered great service as privateersmen, preying upon Spanish commerce and making the seas unsafe for Spanish operations, except under cover of a strong convoy. Many of these American ships were little better than out-and-out pirate craft, even when they in fact took out letters of marque from some patriot government, but it cannot in justice be denied that they were an important element in the eventual success of the Spanish Americans. Baltimore was the chief port in which these vessels were fitted out,—despite the sincere efforts of the United States government to break up the practice,—so that the term 'Baltimore ship' became synonymous with 'patriot craft' or 'pirate,' according to the point of view. These vessels would make their way south to Buenos Aires, perhaps carrying a cargo of munitions, and once there would receive commissions as privateers. It was one such American vessel, though whether or not from Baltimore is not yet known, that took the lead in the attack of 1818.

"The commander of the expedition was a certain Hippolyte de Bouchard, a Frenchman, who had previously been serving in the Buenos Aires navy as sergeant-major. He was a man of strong and determined will and fiery temper and was a strict disciplinarian as an officer. In charge of a second ship with him at the time of his arrival in Alta California was an Englishman named Peter Corney, whose journal is thus far the principal source of information from the insurgent side for the events of the campaign. As he did not join the expedition until it reached

the Hawaiian Islands, the specific events prior to that point are somewhat obscure.

"It seems that in May, 1818, a ship called the *Santa Rosa,* flying the patriot flag, touched at the Hawaiian Islands. The captain showed a suspicious readiness to sell the vessel to King Kamehameha, wherefore the island monarch ordered an investigation. The *Santa Rosa* had a valuable cargo of dry goods, of which it was quite evident that it was in unlawful possession. So Kamehameha seized the ship, and confined the crew. It was ascertained upon examination that the *Santa Rosa,* alias *Checka,* alias *Baca,* alias *Liberty,* originally an American ship, had been fitted out in the Rio de la Plata as a privateer, whence it had sailed for the Pacific to cruise against Spanish commerce. It had captured a number of Spanish vessels, destroyed various towns, and in fact become 'the terror of the coast.' Meanwhile, a number of mutinies had taken place, with accompanying changes in captains. It is likely that the *Santa Rosa* was more pirate than patriot. At any rate, in September, 1818, a much larger ship, the frigate *Argentina,* under Captain Bouchard, came to the Hawaiian Islands with orders to capture and reclaim the *Santa Rosa* 'wherever she may be found.' Consequently, Bouchard demanded possession of the vessel and crew from Kamehameha, a demand that was immediately complied with. It was at this time that Bouchard met Corney, and induced him to join his expedition as commander of the *Santa Rosa.*

"Late in October the two vessels left the Hawaiian Islands, bound for Alta California. The *Santa Rosa* had a motley crew of an hundred men. Thirty of them were Kanakas, and the rest were divided among Americans, Spaniards, Spanish Americans, Portuguese, Negroes, Philippine Islanders, Malays, and a few Englishmen. The officers seem for the most part to have been Americans. On the *Argentina* there were two hundred and sixty-six men, of whom fifty were Kanakas, and the rest a mixed crew, like that of the *Santa Rosa.* The ships are said (though not by Corney) to have carried respectively twenty-six and thirty-eight guns.

"Meanwhile, the Spanish Californians had been warned. In 1816 they learned that a fleet of patriot vessels had blockaded Callao, and were informed that they might soon come north. During the next two years the province was kept in a state of sus-

pense. At one time in 1816 it was reported that the Buenos Aires privateers, under William Brown, were threatening the entire coast as far north as the Californias. During that same year a strange craft was sighted, heading for Monterey. The alarm was given, but the vessel proved to be a small schooner. The captain disclaimed hostile intentions, declaring that he had sailed from China for the Hawaiian Islands with a cargo of merchandise. The next day when it took leave the ship was carefully watched until it disappeared from view. The Spanish Californians were never certain of its identity, and later were convinced that it was a spy of the insurgents. In 1817 an English vessel which stopped at Monterey received the same suspicious scrutiny. The excited state of mind of the provincial authorities is reflected in the later, though obviously inaccurate, account of this visit given by an Alta California chronicler.

" 'In 1817,' he says, 'a large ship, really that of Bouchard, anchored at Monterey, claiming to be an English man-of-war engaged in scientific exploration.'

"According to this writer, Bouchard himself was in command. Gradually the fear of an insurgent attack subsided, and the inhabitants began to acquire a sense of security. This feeling was rudely disturbed early in October, 1818. In that month the American ship *Clarion*, under Captain Henry Gyzelaar, put in at Santa Barbara. Gyzelaar told José De la Guerra, commander at that post, that two vessels were fitting out in the Hawaiian Islands for an attack on Alta California.

"Immediate preparations for defense were undertaken. Articles of value were boxed, and sent to the missions of the interior. Similarly, livestock was driven inland, and the women and children were ordered to be ready to leave at a moment's notice. Stores and provisions were gathered at the presidios, and sentinels were posted along the coast. There followed a long, nerve-wracking wait of more than a month. At length, the enemy ships were sighted. According to some accounts they were first seen near San Francisco, though they did not try to enter that port. Off Santa Cruz a landing was attempted, but was prevented by a violent storm, and the vessels proceeded south.

"It was on November 20th that a sentinel at Point Pinos, near Monterey, reported the approach of the two ships. The total force of the place, forty men in all, was assembled. The principal shore

defenses, of eight guns, were in command of Sergeant Manuel Gomez, who was said to be the uncle of an officer on one of Bouchard's ships, a certain Luciano Gomez. A new battery of three guns was improvised on the beach, and placed in charge of Corporal José Vallejo. That same night the *Santa Rosa* came in, and anchored in the port. As Corney puts it:

" 'Being well acquainted with the bay, I ran in and came to at midnight under the fort. The Spaniards hailed me frequently to send a boat on shore, which I declined.'

"The next day there was a battle, the accounts of which are in a state of confusion. It is said that the *Santa Rosa* opened fire, though it would seem that the insurgent leaders first parleyed with Solá. They asked him for supplies, which he declined to furnish. Bouchard sent off six boats from the *Argentina*, after the conflict had begun. While they were advancing Corporal Vallejo opened up with the guns of the improvised battery, which alone of the Monterey defenses was unknown to the enemy. Taken by surprise, Bouchard ordered the boats to return. The Spanish Californians say that Corney lowered the flag of the *Santa Rosa* in token of surrender, after first having sent off six boats with most of the crew to the other ship. Believing it to be a trick, Governor Solá directed Vallejo to continue firing, but Goméz ordered him to stop. It is said that Vallejo, who figures as the hero of this fight, declined to obey Gomez, believing him to be in league with the enemy. Gomez then commanded the soldiers of the fort to open fire upon the battery, but in great indignation they refused. Corney makes no mention of the reputed surrender. At any rate, the *Santa Rosa* was not in fact captured. Meanwhile the second officer of that vessel, Joseph Chapman, an American, came ashore with two sailors. All three were taken prisoners by the Spaniards.

"The second phase of the battle opened with the advance of Bouchard and the *Argentina*. Bouchard sent a flag of truce ashore with a formal demand for the surrender of Alta California, to which Solá claims to have made the grandiloquent reply that he would not take any such course 'while there was a man alive in the province.' When nothing came of the parleying, Bouchard landed a considerable force—four hundred men according to the Spaniards, or more than the total on both ships—near Point Pinos. Alférez José Estrada with a small troop was sent to oppose them,

but, seeing that he was greatly outnumbered, he ordered a retreat to Monterey. According to Corney 'The Spaniards mounted their horses and fled,' following a charge in which the Kanakas, armed with pikes, took the lead. There followed a brief encounter at Monterey, where by this time Solá had a force of eighty men. Solá deemed it prudent to retreat, and did so in safety, carrying with him some munitions and the archives of the province. He stopped at Rancho del Rey, an estate on the site of present-day Salinas. Here he was joined, a little later, by reinforcements from San Francisco and San Jose. Thereupon two hundred Spaniards and a large number of Indians set out for Monterey, but got there to find the town in flames and the ships disappearing below the horizon. Arrived at the presidio they picked up two prisoners who claimed they had deserted.

"Meanwhile Bouchard and his men had been in Monterey about a week. They had buried their dead, cared for the wounded, and made repairs on the ships, especially the much damaged *Santa Rosa*. The town itself was sacked. Corney tells the story as follows:

" 'It was well stocked with provisions and goods of every description, which we commenced sending on board the *Argentina*. The Sandwich Islanders, who were quite naked when they landed, were soon dressed in the Spanish fashion; and all the sailors were employed in searching houses for money and breaking and ruining everything.' Few buildings in the town escaped burning, and even the orchards and gardens were destroyed. The Spanish Californians were wont to ascribe this ruthless pillaging to Luciano Gomez, one of the two villains in this provincial drama. As for the other, his uncle, Manuel Gomez, it is said that Solá's officers wanted to have him tried for treason, but the governor retained confidence in him and was able to point out that Gomez's house had been hit by a ball from the insurgents' guns.

"Bouchard next touched at Refugio, the home of the Ortegas, between Point Conception and Santa Barbara. Possibly he was lured by the reputed wealth of the Ortegas, who were said to have made a considerable fortune out of smuggling. That same day Sergeant Carlos Antonio Carrillo came up from Santa Barbara with thirty men. Lying in ambush he succeeded in lassoing three of Bouchard's following, one of whom was Lieutenant William Taylor, of Boston. This so enraged Bouchard that he or-

dered the village to be set on fire. Meanwhile the ranch had been plundered and some of the cattle killed. Thereafter Bouchard embarked his men, and Carrillo retired to Santa Barbara.

"The ships continued south, made a landing at Santa Cruz Island for wood and water and on December 6, cast anchor at Santa Barbara. Among the many romantic tales that grew out of the Bouchard invasion, there is one concerning a stratagem that José De la Guerra employed to deceive the enemy. Believing himself to be vastly outnumbered, it is said that he kept marching his tiny forces around a small hill so that Bouchard might count them several times over and believe them to be much greater than they were. Whether or not this in fact took place, the insurgents seem not in the least to have been frightened. Corney's account reads:

" 'We fired a gun and hoisted the colors with a flag of truce, and sent a boat on shore to say if they would give up our men, we would spare the town.' After some parleying an exchange of prisoners was agreed upon. At Monterey, Bouchard had captured a drunken and worthless character named Molina. This man he gave up for the three whom Carrillo had taken. Solá afterward reprimanded De la Guerra for having any dealings with 'pirates,' and even blamed him for not attacking Bouchard —despite the fact that he himself, with much superior forces to those of De la Guerra, had seen fit to retire from Monterey to Rancho del Rey and remain there while the capital was being destroyed. As for Molina he must have regretted his exchange, for Solá sentenced him to a hundred lashes and six years on the chain-gang.

"Bouchard seems to have been at Santa Barbara several days before resuming the voyage south. There was considerable alarm at San Buenaventura lest he should land there. The mission was abandoned, and the people went into the interior for twenty-four days. Father José Señánc of San Buenaventura afterward described Bouchard's men as made up of 'heretics, excommunicated persons, heathen, and a few Moors.' This remark may be taken as symptomatic of the excitement of the times! Bouchard, however, did not stop at San Buenaventura, but went on to San Juan Capistrano.

"It was on December 14 that the insurgent vessels appeared before San Juan Capistrano. Corney tells the story as follows:

" 'The Commodore sent his boat on shore to say, if they would give us an immediate supply of provisions, we would spare their town; to which they replied that we might land if we pleased and that they would give us an immediate supply of powder and shot. The Commodore was very much incensed at this answer and assembled all the officers to know what was best to be done. * * * It was therefore agreed to land and give it up to be pillaged and sacked. * * * We found the town well stocked with everything but money, and destroyed much wine and spirits and all the private property. * * * Next morning we punished about twenty men for getting drunk.'

"The Spanish officer who returned the brave but somewhat impolitic answer to Bouchard above referred to was Alférez Santiago Argüello. He had come up from San Diego with thirty men to aid the small force at the mission. They were unable to oppose any resistance to Bouchard, however. On the next day, the 15th, considerable reinforcements from Santa Barbara and Los Angeles arrived, under the command of José De la Guerra. Smarting under Solá's reproof, De la Guerra was very eager to fight. So he sent a challenge to Bouchard to land and have a battle, but the insurgent commander chose instead to sail away, leaving behind four of his men who had deserted, including two of the three who had previously been captured at Refugio.

"San Diego now prepared itself for the enemy. The women and children had previously been sent inland to Pala, and the soldiers were ready,—but Bouchard sailed by without stopping. Late in January, 1819, his vessels were sighted near San Blas. There is a tale to the effect that he attacked a Spanish cruiser, mistaking it for a treasure ship which he allowed to pass the day before in a belief that it was the cruiser. He is said to have escaped, however, with the loss of a few men and some damage to his ship. Corney does not mention this fight, though he does speak of their cruising off San Blas at that time, in search of Manila ships. Continuing down the coast they reached Valparaíso, Chile, on July 9. There the record stops, for it was at that port that Corney parted company with the Bouchard ships. Presumably, they went on to the east coast; at any rate, when Corney applied for his pay and prize money Bouchard told him he would get nothing unless he continued his services until they reached Beunos Aires.

"When the Spanish Californians were convinced that Bouchard had gone, they began work to restore the buildings that he had destroyed. At Monterey, for example, the missions were called upon to furnish the necessary Indian labor, and were also required to make contributions of various stores to replace those which had been lost. Not until April, 1819, were affairs in such a state as to permit of the return of the women and children from Soledad.

"At Santa Cruz and San Juan Capistrano there were sharp controversies springing out of the campaign. In course of the transfer of valuables from the former place to one of the inland missions some casks of wine and *aguardiente* were reported to have been 'spilled'. According to all the evidence it was at about the same time that the work of removal became ragged and various articles disappeared. The friars raised a hue and cry, and it proved that the settlers of Branciforte and the Indians of the mission had stolen a number of small things, most of which were presently recovered. Prior to the San Juan Capistrano affair the friars and others of the mission had abandoned the place and gone into the interior. Upon their return they accused Santiago Argüello of having neglected the mission, and in particular of having wasted their wine and brandy. As concrete evidence they were able to point to two of the mission Indians who had indeed partaken 'not wisely but too well'; one of them had drunk himself to death, and the other had become insane. With the aid of José De la Guerra, always a favorite of the friars, Argüello was able to clear himself.

"But the most interesting thing about the Bouchard expedition is the motive that lay behind it. Despite the fact that there was always much evidence to the effect that it was distinct effort on behalf of the Spanish American revolutionary cause, there has heretofore been a tendency to emphasize the more or less piratical nature of the enterprise. Corney's journal makes it certain that the primary object of Bouchard was to attack the Spanish ports of that coast in order to strike a blow at the king of Spain. The undertaking, therefore, was legitimate in every way. In the light of this fact, the testimony of prisoners and deserters taken by the Spanish Californians is interesting. They claimed to have been on ships captured by the *Santa Rosa* or the *Argentina* and to have been pressed into service against their

will. They were a unit, however, in declaring that the expedition was a blow aimed by the insurgent leaders against the Spanish government.

"It is to be remembered that the revolutionary cause had only begun to recover from its lowest ebb at about the time Bouchard must have been sent forth on his voyage. Prior to San Martín's march across the Andes to Chile in 1817, the region of the Río de la Plata alone remained unconquered by the Spaniards. By 1818, Chile had been retaken by the patriots, and the war in Venezuela and Colombia had been revived, but New Spain, Central America, the West Indies, and the entire middle reaches of the Pacific Coast of South America (forming the vice royalty of Peru) were in Spanish hands. This adds point to the remarks ascribed to one of the prisoners taken by the Spanish Californians at Monterey. After referring to defeats of the revolutionary leaders, particularly in New Spain, he went on to say:

" 'In order to stimulate the hearts of the patriots, they had thought it necessary to bring into the liberal cause the inhabitants of California, who, on account of their distance from the capital of the viceroy, offered a safe exile to the persecuted and could serve as a rallying point for expeditions destined to help the patriots.'

"One wonders what might have happened if the Spanish Californians had made common cause with Bouchard instead of resisting him. More than likely a Spanish-American republic would then and there have been formed. One may also ask why Bouchard did not persevere in his effort. The answer is simple. Without a base of supplies near at hand, he could not hope to conquer and hold the province with his small forces in the face of opposition. If the inhabitants had been eager to embrace the patriot cause he might have adopted a different course of action, but finding them loyal to the king his sole desire was to strike a blow on behalf of the patriots. It is to be noted that his only serious military effort was against Monterey, the capital."

Before studying the period when California drifted away from Spain into the hands of the Mexicans, it will be timely here to look over the number of non-Spanish white settlers in California. Charles E. Chapman deals adequately with this subject. He says:

"Among other events worthy of record in the revolutionary era is the arrival of the first permanent non-Spanish white set-

tlers. In 1814 came John Gilroy, a youth of twenty. His real name was Cameron, but he had changed it in order to hide his identity when he decided to seek a career 'on the ocean wave,' and ran away to sea. Born in Scotland, he had lived most of his life in England. He is described as a good-natured, grog-loving, improvident sailor. Acquiring a ranch on the site of the town which now bears his name, he lost that and the rest of his property at the time of the American conquest. In 1869 he died.

"Next after Gilroy, probably in 1814 or 1815, came an Irishman named John Milligan, who for some unknown reason assumed the name 'Mulligan.' He is said to have taught weaving to the Indians at the missions. In 1834 he died, due in a large measure, no doubt, to his over-indulgence in hard drink.

"In 1816 the first American to remain in the province arrived, —not counting the defunct Groem (who was killed on his arrival). This was Thomas W. Doak, reputedly of Boston, a young man of twenty-nine, who came on the ship *Albatross*. He passed most of his life in or near Monterey and Santa Cruz. After 1847 he disappears from the record. Another American, named Daniel Call, landed at Santa Barbara later in 1816 from the ship *Atala*. He was seventeen years old at the time. Beyond the fact that he was a carpenter, very little is known about him.

"The most famous foreign resident of the Spanish period, often mistakenly called the first American, was Joseph Chapman, about thirty years old at the time of his arrival. He was one of several of Bouchard's men who remained in Alta California thenceforth. Chapman was of New England extraction. His career immediately prior to his arrival is somewhat obscure. He claimed to have been pressed into the service of Bouchard in the Hawaiian Islands, but it is highly probable that he had previously shared in the more or less illicit prize-money picked up by the much-named *Santa Rosa*. In Alta California he became a famous character and a general favorite. He was a typical handy man and jack of all trades. He built several grist mills; planted a vineyard of some four thousand vines at Los Angeles; built a schooner; served as a surgeon; and did odd jobs at the missions and elsewhere, for there seemed to be nothing that he could not make or repair. Furthermore, he married one of the numerous daughters of the wealthy and aristocratic Ortega family, and became the father of five children. He resided for the most part

at Los Angeles and Santa Barbara, and died probably in 1848 or 1849. In addition to the five already mentioned, at least eight other foreigners are known to have come to Alta California before the close of the year 1818."

So much for the white settlers in California at the close of the Spanish era; so much for the exciting events that preceded Mexico's actual domination of California; but just how and when did events so somersault upon one another as to lead to Spain's relinquishing her power in this province? McGroarty answers the question tersely:

"Things went on from bad to worse," he says, "and California continued in a feverish state of excitement until the climax came in 1822 when a ship appeared in the harbor of Monterey flying a flag of green, white and red with an eagle and a crown in the center—a strange flag, indeed, and too new to have found a place on the chart of national colors. The Comandante and the troops of Monterey prepared immediately to pour destruction on the heads of the strangers. Governor Sola, who had received private advices of the final success of the revolution in Mexico, issued a command that the strangers be allowed to land and convey whatever message they had to present. A boat manned by oarsmen gaily uniformed put off from the ship and landed their leader, who presented himself to the Comandante of Monterey and addressed him as follows: 'I am the Cannon Augustin Fernandez de San Vicente. I have come from the Imperial Mexican Capital with dispatches directed to the Governor of this Province, Don Pablo Vicente de Sola. I demand to be conducted to his presence in the name of my Sovereign, the Liberator of Mexico, General Don Augustin de Iturbide.'

"The hour when Spanish dominion in California was to end had come. Sola knew it well. His fortress was ready to fight, and to fight to the death, but the Governor fully realized how unnecessary and unavailing bloodshed would be. There was nothing to do but to accept the inevitable—nothing but to strike the colors. Assembling the people and the soldiers, Pablo Vicente de Sola, last of the King's men, addressed them in solemn words. He told them what he knew to be the situation and advised them to accept with him the authority of Mexico. The garrison murmured, but finally submitted to the Governor's admonition. The flag of Spain was hauled down, never to be raised again in Cali-

fornia, and in its place was hoisted the tri-color of the new Empire of the South, where for a brief time Don Iturbide was sitting on his new throne. California now became a Province of Mexico, and the Spanish era, which had not been without great deeds and much honor, was irrevocably closed.

"The loss of California was doubtless considered among the least of the calamities which befell Spain when the days of evil were thick upon her. She did not then know, as now she knows, that when this great, golden stretch of a thousand miles of the Pacific Coast of America slipped from her grasp she had deep reason to mourn. She did not foresee the days that were to be when the alien and the stranger would wring from the shining streams and the sunlit hills of California stupendous treasures of gold. She was not granted the vision of a California which was destined to be a greater country than Spain had itself ever been within her own confines.

"Yet, the Spain that once owned and dominated half the earth could not have held California indefinitely. Sooner or later it had to be that this brightest of jewels would fall from her crown. All that can be said is that had Spain known the wealth of California she would have made a sterner effort to retain it in her possession.

"California can never be otherwise than proud of her history as a Spanish province. The Governors who ruled the territory during the Spanish era were invariably men of high moral character, who carried out with conscientious energy the policy of the fatherland in a far distant and isolated part of the world.

"Nor was it a mistake of either judgment or policy that lost California to Spain, whose scheme of conquest and colonization was without a flaw. First, there were the Missions for the care and education of the Indians; next came the presidios for the protection of the country; then the pueblos. Under this threefold system, California would ultimately have prospered and developed into a great and happy country as surely as it has now done under a different system and a different race of people.

"But, with the passing of Spanish dominion and authority in California, all that was Spanish did not disappear. Spain's language, her customs, the blood of her splendid people, her traditions and her religion still linger on the dusty highways and flame from the embers of the past to soften the asperities of mod-

ern thought and action. Nor can the day ever come when the memories of Spain will wholly depart from the new, bright empire which Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo was the first to sight from the decks of his daring ships on that dim and distant morning of 1542."

CHAPTER XXIII

UNDER MEXICAN RULE

The Mexican era, so-called, lasted through a period of twenty-five years, from 1822 to 1846. The earlier part of this time was marked with little or no material progress; it was an age surfeited with romance and color, however, and for this very fact is highly worthy of recording. For after all, the peace and serenity that comes from a people who love to loll about under trees smoking brown cigarettes, playing upon mandolins, etc., have just as much interest—or should have—as the rip-snorting, hat-waving excitement that abounds in the "wide open spaces" where men are men and a sprained ankle calls for a volley of "black curses." Siestas are just as much a part of life as stampedes. In the Mexican era there were no Rotarian clubs, no Y. M. C. A. rallies, no W. C. T. U. picnics, no jangling street cars or traffic cops. People were not hurried through their breakfasts in order to be at the office by 8:00 o'clock sharp; they were not jostled into trains and crammed into elevators; they did not suffer the scrutiny of income tax collectors nor the restraint imposed by prohibition agents. In other words, they were a care-free lot and they made the most of it between siestas and serenades. McGroarty says of this period:

"Those were the days when people were not concerned with the strenuous materialism and commercialism of modern life. There was no greed, very little ambition and a great deal of peace. California was then a country of vast estates. The cattle roamed on the hills, the fertile soil was taxed only to a degree that would give sustenance to the population. There was plenty of running water for man and beast; the doors of the great Mission hospices were open with a welcome that was endless and without price to whoever might fare along El Camino Real. And the door of every man's house was open in the same way. There was marriage and giving in marriage, many children, much joy, little hate and a

contentment that was as vast as the sun and the moon and stars that shone upon the white peaks of the Sierras, the swinging lomas and the flower-flamed vales that stretched between Sonoma in the Valley of the Seven Moons and San Diego lying warm in the embrace of the dreamy hills that close in upon the Harbor of the Sun. * * *"

"Of course this picture is a picture only of the greater portion of the Mexican era. Toward the latter years of this period a great change took place. This specter of American invasion caused California to become very uneasy in those latter days. It was also known that England certainly, and France, perhaps, were looking upon California with covetous eyes. The great Mission establishments were undergoing a process of destruction at the hands of greedy vandals. Fremont was in the mountains, his presence in California being like a thorn in its side; the ships of alien enemies were constantly seen off the sunlit coast, a menace by day and their white sails at night like specters in a bad dream.

"How the Californians—for so the people were called by foreigners—lived and had their being in the day of the Mexican era, and what the great ranchos and the towns and pueblos were like constitute a colorful picture. The overlords of the Province were men of great standing, possessing unlimited means for hospitality and enjoyment. They gave great feasts and the marriages of their sons and daughters were attended by almost princely ceremony. All the people, high and low, were fond of dress and pleasure. Nobody seemed to have much if any actual money, but it was a poor man indeed who had not a good horse to ride. The pretty señorita who had not a satin shoe with which to trip a fantastic toe in the fandango was rare to find. There were no grand houses, and none were needed. It was from a little two-room, thatch-roofed dwelling that, as likely as not, would come the most richly attired girl or the most gorgeously clothed caballero."

Monterey, as in the Spanish era, remained the capital of California and the most important place in the province. Richard Henry Dana, Jr., speaking of the colorful Monterey of this period in "Two Years Before the Mast" says, in his beautiful way:

"We came to anchor within two cable lengths of the shore,

and the town lay directly before us, making a very pretty appearance; its houses being of whitewashed adobe which gives a much better effect than those of Santa Barbara which are mostly of a lead color. The red tiles, too, on the roofs, contrasted well with the white sides, and with the extreme greenness of the lawn upon which the houses—about a hundred in number—were dotted about, here and there, irregularly. There are in this place, and in every other town which I saw in California, no streets nor fences (except that here and there a small patch might be fenced in for a garden), so that the houses are placed at random upon the green. This, as they are of one story, and of the cottage form, gives them a pretty effect when seen from a little distance."

In addition to the description of the town itself, Dana describes the dress, speech and manners of the inhabitants. Of these he says:

"Next to the love of dress, I was most struck with the fineness of the voices and beauty of intonation of both sexes. Every common ruffian-looking fellow, with a slouch hat, blanket cloak, dirty under-dress and soiled leather leggins, appeared to me to be speaking elegant Spanish. It was a pleasure to simply listen to the sound of the language, before I could attach any meaning to it. They have a good deal of the Creole drawl, but it is varied by an occasional extreme rapidity of utterance, in which they seem to skip from consonant to consonant until, lighting upon a broad open vowel, they rest upon that to restore the balance of sound. The women carry this peculiarity of speaking to a much greater extreme than the men, who have more evenness and stateliness of utterance. A common bullock driver, on horseback, delivering a message, seems to speak like an ambassador at a royal audience."

In this period and the period preceding the land was cut up into many large-sized parcels and given as Spanish and Mexican land grants, which, in turn, later formed the basis for land titles.

"During the Spanish era," says McGroarty, "only a few grants appear to have been made. In 1784 Governor Pedro Fages set aside for the sole use of Manuel Nieto a huge slice of the present county of Los Angeles. He gave also in the same county 300,000 acres of land to one Santa Maria Verdugo. The great bean ranches of Ventura County of the present day came originally

into the possession of the Pico family in 1795, and miles upon miles of the coast northward from San Pedro were granted to Jose Dario Argüello about the same time.

"But it remained for the Mexican Governors to give away the lands of California with princely improvidence. If a man wanted land he made his application to the Governor and, if he were a man who stood well, his petition was granted without the difficulty of much ceremony. There was plenty of land, and as things were then it is doubtful that a man who wanted any land at all displayed good judgment. The more land he had the poorer he was, and the acquirement of an estate meant only the shouldering of responsibility and the keeping up of grand appearances with little or nothing in the way of money on which to make good the display of wealth and power. Throughout all California can be found today many poor and humble families bearing great names who would now be immensely rich had it been possible for their progenitors and themselves to have held on to one-thousandth part of their original family possessions in real estate."

The most notable example of privately owned land in Monterey that has descended from the Spanish era to the present time is the estate of the noble Don Estéban Munrás. His land was purchased from the King and proved to be as great a point of interest in the olden days as it is at present. Today it is occupied by descendants of Munrás, and much of its piquant color is retained. Pages from his "Libro de Memorias" (Book of Memories) appear herewith for the first time in print. The time element in his notes—and in the notes carried on by some of the early pioneers—cover more than merely the Mexican era; but they give such a clear idea of the life and the problems that the loyal Spaniards had to face, that they are exceedingly worth recording. Indeed, the author feels highly favored in being allowed to present them to the public and is indebted to Miss Maria Antonia Field for the kindly translation of them.

Notes from Libro de Memorias by Don Estéban Munrás and early pioneers.

"Estéban Munrás was born in Barcelona, Spain, in 1782. At the age of twenty he was sent by the Spanish Government on an important diplomatic mission to Turkey, and his brothers Francisco and Salvador on similar missions to South America. Returning to Spain in three years, he sailed from Cadiz in 1815

for South America en route for California. (During his brief stay in South America he speaks in his notes of his happiness in meeting his brothers, who as we have mentioned, had been sent there from Spain in the diplomatic service.) From South America, Estéban Munrás sailed for California on a vessel called *La Barbarita,* arriving in Monterey in 1820. In Monterey he engaged in a very extensive wholesale mercantile business, trading with the many Spanish, French, Russian and English trading vessels which then came to California; also doing all the trading for the Missions of Central California and enjoying the unbounded confidence and friendship of the Spanish Missionary padres and of the Spanish civil authorities. Esté Munrás was married in 1822 to Señorita Catalina Manzanelli y Ponce de Leon, who had preceded him to California on account of her step-father, Dr. Manuel Quixano having been appointed surgeon of the Royal Presidio of Monterey. Don Estéban and his bride were married in Mission Soledad by Padre Juan Cabot. It was in Soledad that Don Estéban purchased a vast landed estate, still in great part in the possession of his descendants. He decorated and designed the interior mural decorations of San Miguel Mission in 1823, for he had studied art in his native Spain. In 1824 he built his spacious home, still occupied by his descendants in the person of Mrs. Thomas J. Field and her family. In this home may still be seen the room which Don Estéban and his wife set aside as the guest chamber where many a noted Missionary and pioneer slept when visiting the Munrás family.

"The first child of Don Estéban and Doña Catalina Munrás was Maria Concepcion, born in the old Spanish Royal Presidio of Monterey. The third child, Maria Antonia, was born in 1826 in the family home which had just been completed; and it was this daughter who, in 1853, became the bride of Professor Rafael Danglada, a Spanish gentleman born in San Sebastian, Spain, a man of rare social gifts and finished education, by profession a master of violin and piano, and it was he who coming here in 1850 was California's first professional musician. To this union was born a daughter, Catalina, who afterwards became Mrs. Thomas Field. To Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Field were born two children, Estéban and Maria Antonia. To Estéban and Catalina Munrás were born nine children, Maria Concepcion, Francisco, who died in infancy, Maria Antonia, Engracia who died in in-

fancy, Ana, Engracia, Manuel and Narcisco, who died in early manhood and Maria Dolores.

"Don Estéban Munrás died at his home in Monterey, September 2, 1850, at the age of sixty years. He saw the sad changes which came to California when the state passed from Spain to Mexico, and like every loyal Spaniard he refused to take the oath of allegiance to Mexico, and as a loyal Spaniard suffered from the attitude of the intruding Mexican element, so that when the edict came that Spaniards must leave California or take the Mexican oath of allegiance, he prepared to leave, but here some of the better-minded Mexicans interfered, saying, 'It is expedient not to carry our measures too far. Many of the Spanish residents will do more good than we suppose.' Hence, some of them, among them Don Estéban, were invited to remain among their well established Spanish California possessions."

One of his many famous sayings was: "Delay the wages of a poor man as long as you can keep a live coal in your hand." This reveals the fact that he treated his workers in the spirit that made a better California—a spirit that, to a good extent, was lost when the Mexican element took charge. His was a noble figure, and many were the scenes enacted under his roof that helped give the California of Spanish days its historical value. He was undoubtedly an integral unit of Spanish California, and the visitor who may enter the house which stands today cannot help but feel the call of a bygone day.

In contrast to the comparatively peaceful times that we have pictured here, there were days in this era, of course, that were hectic and bloody. McGroarty, historian, dwells upon both the peace and unrest of the Mexican era. He says:

"The Mexican era was an era of unrest, conspiracy, insurrection, revolt and numerous quite bloodless battles on the one hand, and of feasting, dancing, marriage and giving in marriage on the other hand. Looking back upon that time it would seem that the happiness far outweighed the sorrow, and that amid all the intrigues and firing of guns and crashing of swords, there was much gladness."

"The keynote of the (Mexican) era from a provincial standpoint," says Charles E. Chapman, who brings forward the tumult of the times, "was to be found in its turbulence. There was much revolutionary unrest, based largely on personal and sectional

rivalries. Man fought or intrigued for office and the chance to administer the scant resources of the treasury. South fought north, challenging its traditional predominance. All, however, were united in a greater or lesser degree of dissatisfaction over the neglect of their affairs by the Mexican government, a factor which manifested itself in more than one political upheaval. In other words, Alta California was experiencing the same type of growing pains that other Spanish American lands from Texas to Cape Horn had to suffer in the years immediately following independence from Spain. Left to itself the province would very probably have evolved into a respectable independent republic —or two republics—like those in the temperate zone of South America. These years also saw the downfall of the missions, which for so long a time had been the most important institution in Alta California.

"Twelve men filled the gubernatorial chair in this period. They were Luis Argüello (1822-1825), José María Echeandía (1825-1831), Manuel Victoria (1831-1832), Pío Pico (1832—twenty days), Echeandía again (1832-1833, in the south only), Agustín Zamorano (1832-1833, in the north only), José Figueroa (1833-1835), José Castro (1835-1836), Nicolás Gutiérrez (1836—four months), Mariano Chico (1836—three months), Gutiérrez again (1836—three months), Juan Bautista Alvarado (1836-1842), Manuel Micheltorena (1842-1845), Pico again (1845-1846), José María Flores (1846-1847). Pico, Castro, Alvarado from 1838, and Pico again were civil governors only. During their incumbency the military power was held respectively by Echeandía (who was the *de facto* if not the *de jure* ruler), Gutiérrez (who soon became governor), Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo (1838-1842), and Castro (the former civil governor), who served as *comandantes.* They were virtually co-governors.

"Outwardly the period of Luis Argüellos' rule was less stirring than many which had gone before or any of those to come. The change from the Mexican regency to the empire was formally accepted in 1823, followed a few months later by an oath of allegiance to the newly established republic. * * *

"No doubt the greatest local excitement during Argüello's administration was produced by the Indian revolt of 1824. In February of that year there were almost simultaneous uprisings at the Santa Inés, when one of the soldiers flogged an Indian. There-

upon, the Indians sought revenge, and surprised the soldiery by appearing well armed. A brisk battle followed, in which it seems, however, that nobody was killed, although the mission buildings were set on fire. Next day a detachment of troops arrived from Santa Barbara, and the Indians yielded.

"On the same day as the Santa Inés disturbance there was also a revolt at Purísima Concepción and a somewhat more strenuous battle. The Indians attacked the soldiers, and next morning compelled them to surrender. Seven Indians and four white men (two of them guests at the mission) had been killed. The surviving soldiers were allowed to depart, and the Indians remained in control of the mission for nearly a month.

"When the news reached Santa Barbara, the Indians there became greatly excited, and proceeded to take over the mission for themselves, including the guns of the soldiery. Thereupon Captain De la Guerra assembled a force at the presidio, and marched to attack the mission. A battle of several hours' duration followed, during which two Indians were killed, and a number on both sides wounded. Presently, most of the Indians took to the hills, and the victorious soldiery sacked the Indian homes killing a few more of their erstwhile opponents in the process.

"It was not long afterward that word reached Monterey. Governor Argüello at once despatched Lieutenant José Mariano Estrada with an enormous army—as things went in Alta California—of a hundred men. Estrada at length reached Purísima Concepción, where the victorious mission Indians of that place were still entrenched, armed with muskets and two small cannon. They did not know how to use their strength, however, and Estrada's four-pounder did such execution among them that they decided to flee. They were off and compelled to surrender. Sixteen Indians had been killed and many more wounded. Three of the attacking force were wounded, one of them mortally. Several more battles were fought in this campaign, but these took place across the mountains in the tulares, whither three successive expeditions followed the fugitives from Santa Barbara. Eventually peace was made, and most of the Indians returned to the mission.

"In November, 1825, Lieutenant-Colonel Echeandía arrived from Mexico to become governor of the province. He has been described as 'a tall, thin, juiceless man, possession but little en-

terprise or force of character, and much concerned about the effect of California climate on his not too robust health.' The new governor was to be largely responsible for many of the troubles which Alta California suffered in ensuing years. One of them he started right away when he fixed his residence at San Diego, instead of going to Monterey, thus making a beginning of the conflict between north and south which was to continue for the rest of the era. He had been appointed governor of Baja California as well, and asserted that he could take care of the two provinces much better from San Diego than from the capital in the north. It was generally recognized, however, that he feared the climate of Monterey would prove too rigorous for him.

"Of Echeandía's ill-advised handling of the missions, more will be said presently. Meanwhile, he got into difficulties with the soldiers, who had for years been obliged to get on without pay and who became more and more disgruntled when Echeandía (who was indeed at his wit's end for funds) did nothing to help them. The soldiers at Monterey revolted in 1828, but were persuaded to resume their duties. In November, 1829, however, they decided to revolt in earnest. The principal officers at that post were seized, and a certain rancher named Joaquín Solís, ex-soldier and more recently ex-convict, was installed in command. A proclamation was drawn up reciting their grievances against Echeandía and announcing their intention of setting up a new governor. Various foreigners in Monterey contributed funds for the enterprise, and the garrison of San Francisco declared for the revolt.

"After the first flush of excitement, the rebellion lost its grip. The criminal record of the leader was a grave handicap. To save the situation Solís resolved upon a campaign in the south. At first all was bright. The mission Fathers, influenced no doubt by their dislike of Echeandía, received him graciously on the way. The garrison at Santa Barbara got one of his proclamations, and rose in his favor. And then again the tide turned. The soldiers of Santa Barbara were persuaded to resume their allegiance. Echeandía presently reached that post, and a little later Solís and his army appeared from the north. The battle of Santa Barbara which followed was indeed of several days' duration, but in the main, it was a war of words. Solís fired the last gun, in the shape of a proclamation announcing that he and his men were

'ready to fight and never would surrender until they got their pay,' shortly after which he beat a retreat. Echeandía's 'batteries,' in the shape of promises to forgive those who would come over to his side, had meanwhile wrought great execution in Solís' ranks through desertion. Echeandía advanced to Monterey, captured Solís and other ringleaders, and shipped them to Mexico. Thus ended the first revolt of the Californians against constituted Mexican authority. The government—and the south as against the north—had proved victorious in a bloodless war.

"Echeandía found that the climate of Monterey was endurable, after all, and remained there a year. Indeed, when the newly-appointed governor, Lieutenant-Colonel Victoria, asked him to come to San Diego to surrender his office, Echeandía nevertheless stayed on at Monterey, and would not even go to Santa Barbara where he was next requested to appear. So Victoria came north to Monterey, was installed in office in January, 1831, and now that he was already in Monterey made that place his capital. Thus Monterey came into its own again, and indirectly through the agency of the man who had formerly deprived it of its proud position.

"Victoria was primarily a soldier, out of sympathy with republican institutions and a firm believer in military methods in civil administration. He began a campaign against evil-doers which was somewhat too rigorous. Sentences of death and execution followed in rapid succession. This was well enough, but when the governor showed a disposition also to run roughshod over political opponents the spark of revolution was kindled. The missionaries, whose cause he had defended, were soon almost alone in supporting him. The revolt broke out in the south, late in 1831, being fostered by men like José Antonio Carrillo, Juan Bandini, Pío Pico, and Abel Stearns (an American who had come to California in 1829), who were among the most prominent people in that section. Leadership in the enterprise was offered to Echeandía, who had returned to San Diego after the expiration of his term of office. He accepted, and operations began with the capture of San Diego and Los Angeles, which were taken by the rebels without a battle.

"Meanwhile Governor Victoria with some thirty disciplined soldiers had hurried south. The insurgents under Captain Pablo Portilla of San Diego numbered perhaps as many as a hundred

and fifty, but most of them were untrained. The two 'armies' met just a few miles from Los Angeles near Cahuenga Pass. The battle which followed did not result in great loss of life, but was perhaps as spectacular as any that was ever fought in the province. It began when Victoria, despising his opponents, advanced alone and called on Portilla and his regulars to come over to his side. He then directed his own men to fire a volley, presumably in order to frighten the enemy's raw recruits without hurting them. The southern soldiery replied with a few shots, and then started to run away, whereupon Victoria and Captain Romualdo Pacheco, followed by one or two others, rode forward to pursue them. Up to this time nobody had been hit. But the governor had made a miscalculation which was to cost him dear. In the opposing army there were several individuals who must have been desirous of emulating the achievements of the knights of old, in the days when battles were entrusted to champions of the warring forces in single combat. Such a person, it seems, was José María Ávila. Sword in hand, he made a thundering charge against Pacheco, who for his part rode to meet him with lance ready for action. Their horses passed, but Ávila checked his steed, drew a pistol, and shot Pacheco, killing him instantly. Looking for more worlds to conquer he threw himself upon Victoria. Other horsemen on both sides joined in the conflict. In the ensuing meleé Ávila was unhorsed and killed, Victoria received several lance-wounds, and at least one other was wounded. Unauthenticated popular versions of the battle have it that Ávila himself wounded Victoria, and that it was the governor who killed the fire-eating Ávila.

"The battle was over, and Victoria remained in possession of the field. Virtually, however, the impetuous Ávila had turned the scale in favor of the Californians. Victoria *wounded* saw matters in a different light than Victoria *sound in body* would have viewed them. Instead of capturing Los Angeles and quelling the revolt, he betook himself to bed at San Gabriel, and from there informed Echeandía that he was not only willing but even desirous that he be sent to Mexico, promising to return no more. His offer was accepted, and several weeks later he took his departure.

"With their experience of the militarist Victoria fresh in mind, the Californians resolved to separate the civil from the military functions of government. The *Diputacion*, as the provin-

cial legislature was called, elected Pío Pico civil governor (*jefe político*) in January, 1832. Less than three weeks later, however, he was obliged to resign, primarily on account of Echeandía's failure to support him.

"It now seemed that Echeandía had a clear field, but unexpected opposition developed in the north. The foreigners of British and American extraction had been inclined to favor Victoria in the late controversy, because he at least stood for good order. California revolutions might not cause much loss of life, but they were bad for business, and that was what the foreign colony was interested in, most of all. To them it seemed that the disputes of Pico and Echeandía portended a continuance of disorder. They therefore joined readily in a movement to set up Agustín Zamorano, former gubernatorial secretary to Echeandía and Victoria. Under the leadership of William Hartnell a foreign company was formed to defend Monterey from attack. The Hispanic population of the north was equally well disposed to Zamorano, influenced possibly by Echeandía's evident intention of remaining at San Diego instead of coming to Monterey. Zamorano was therefore acknowledged as temporary governor until such time as the Mexican authorities should appoint a successor to the deposed Victoria.

"One of the earliest measures of Zamorano's government was to send an armed force south under Lieutenant Juan María Ibarra to defend Santa Barbara against attack by Echeandía. Ibarra pushed on until he reached Los Angeles. Then came rumors that Echeandía was about to attack him. As the story went, the mission Indians, who (as is presently to be explained) were devoted partisans of Echeandía, were flocking to his standard. Ibarra decided therefore to retreat. On his way he found a veritable enemy in his rear in the shape of a score of armed convicts. These were captured and sent to Monterey. The war now entered actively into the proclamation stage. The pen proved mightier than the sword, and in May both sides agreed to call it a draw. An arrangement was made whereby Zamorano and Echeandía should each remain in power until a governor from Mexico arrived. It is interesting to note that Zamorano's sphere of control was to extend as far south as San Fernando, while San Gabriel was the limit of Echeandía's sway.

"In January, 1833, the new governor from Mexico arrived.

He was José Figueroa, assuredly one of the greatest figures in the history of Alta California. A brevet-brigadier-general, he had also been governor of Sonora and Sinaloa for six years, and had interested himself in reopening the Anza route to the Pacific coast. Wars with the Yaquis and the Apaches had kept him from putting his plan into effect, but he had made himself fully aware of the importance of the northern province and the desirability of developing its resources. Ill-health led him to seek retirement almost from the moment of his arrival, and brought about his death some two years and a half later. Yet, he was to accomplish more than any governor the province ever had, with the possible exception of Neve.

"One of Figueroa's first acts had to do with the grant of an amnesty to all who had been concerned in the late revolt. This announcement he caused to be published in a circular dated January 16, 1833,—the first printing in the history of the province. He then applied himself with more than usual success to internal administration. If he had confined himself merely to that, he would undoubtedly have been regarded as one of the great governors, but he aspired to something more. He had been instructed to explore the regions to defend that country against the Russians of Fort Ross and the English along the Colombia. Unlike some of his predecessors who had received similar commands Figueroa at once took action, and chose Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo as his instrument.

"Vallejo was at the time an *alférez* at San Francisco. Son of Ignacio Vallejo, who came with Rivera in 1774, and brother of José Vallejo, who had distinguished himself in the Bouchard affair, he himself had won honors in several Indian campaigns and in provincial politics, though only twenty-five years old. Figueroa sent him north of the bay to explore for a presidial site. Vallejo made a trip to Bodega and Fort Ross in April, 1833, and in the fall established a colony at Santa Rosa. In May of the following year Figueroa learned that his petition to retire had been acted upon favorably and that his successor, José María Híjar, was coming to Alta California with a great body of colonists. In August, therefore, Figueroa himself inspected the north bay country, in order to make some preparation for expected colonists. He went as far as Fort Ross. On his return, however, he received a message which gave him pause in his plans.

"Ever since the change of flag from Spain to Mexico the Mexican government had encouraged colonization of Alta California. A law of 1824 made liberal provision for intending settlers. Not content with this, the authorities resorted to other means which occasioned no little resentment. They began to use Alta California as a penal colony. Seventeen convicts arrived in 1825, including the already mentioned Joaquín Solís. Within another year more than a hundred others had been sent, and in 1830 a shipload of eighty arrived. In 1833 a new project was set on foot in Mexico by José María Padrés. Padrés had been in Alta California for a time, where he had conceived a plan for the spoilation of the missions under the guise of secular administration of the temporalities. He won support from many who hoped to share in the proceeds. Exiled by Victoria in 1831 he built up a project of colonization around this same idea utilizing the mission wealth. In Josá María Híjar he found the man he needed to back his projects, and the two together procured the support of the national government. Híjar was to be civil governor and director of colonization, and a subordinate post was provided for Padrés. The government offered allowances in pay, implements, seed, and domestic animals to all who would go, wherefore Híjar and Padrés got together about a hundred and twenty colonists of better than usual quality, and left San Blas in July, 1834, in two ships.

"At about that same time there was a change in government in Mexico. The new president was distrustful of the Híjar-Padrés project. Too late to stop the expedition he resolved to send a messenger over the Anza route, directing Figueroa not to turn over the government to Híjar, whose commission he had revoked. The emissary, Rafael Amador by name, made a phenomenal overland journey from Mexico to Monterey in from forty to forty-eight days, traveling mostly alone, barely escaping death at the hands of the Indians of the Colorado, and nearly perishing from thirst in the desert. Naturally, Figueroa's attitude toward the coming settlers underwent a change.

"Híjar, with one of his ships, had already put in at San Diego on September 1st. From there he proceeded by land to Monterey, telling the mission Indians, as he went along, that he had come to free them. Padrés, with the other vessel reached Monterey on September 25. Several members of the *Diputacion* had for-

merly been prominent supporters of Padrés' secularization plan, but they now turned against him upon learning that he had promised many of his colonists the same profitable employment as mission administrators which, several years before, he had promised them. They therefore voted that Figueroa should continue to be governor and should make such provision for the colonists as he might see fit.

"Híjar tried argument and bribery in order to induce Figueroa to give to him the administration of the missions, but without avail. It was eventually decided to send the colonists north of the bay, and the missions were called upon to supply them with food until the settlers could raise crops of their own. They might have starved, however, if it had not been for Mariano Vallejo, who caused them to be transferred to the Sonoma valley and furnished with provisions during the winter. In the end the colonists dispersed, though most of them remained in the north bay district. Híjar and Padrés were presently accused of having been implicated in a minor outbreak at Los Angeles in March, 1835, and were sent back to Mexico.

"Relieved of their embarrassing presence Figueroa went actively ahead with measures for colonization, during the few remaining months of his life. He made a number of land grants to individual settlers, as indeed he had done before. While in Los Angeles he met William Antonio Richardson, an Englishman born, who as a youth of twenty-two had reached Alta California in 1822 as mate of a British ship, which he deserted. Figueroa induced Richardson to accept an appointment as captain of the port of San Francisco. Richardson went there, and put up the first building in San Francisco other than those at the less conveniently located presidio and mission. Around this house as a nucleus a settlement called 'Yerba Buena' sprang up, where the shipping and business interests of the bay region centered, eventually to become the principal district of the city of San Francisco. By Figueroa's order, too, a town was founded at Sonoma (then so named) in 1835 by Vallejo, near the mission San Francisco Solano.

"Figueroa is most often remembered in connection with the secularization of the missions. It will be recalled that in theory the Spanish missions were limited to a period of ten years, after which they were to be converted into civilian towns and the mis-

sionaries were to move on to a new field. Nothing like that had ever been attempted in Alta California, and rarely, if ever, elsewhere. In 1813 the Spanish *Cortes* passed a law calling for the immediate secularization of all missions which had existed as such for ten years or more. This law was not published in Alta California until 1821, but nothing was done to carry it into effect. Indeed, there were no priests to replace the friars.

"The missions at that time were perhaps at or near their greatest period of prosperity. The number of Indians under mission control was still very large, and the mission properties were easily the greater part of the wealth of the province. For ten years they had been the principal support of the military establishment, but that expense could be written off as a dead loss without seriously impairing their financial position. Nevertheless, the missions were already doomed of their own weight, irrespective of any legislation that might be passed. For years, deaths at the missions had outrun births, and the growing deficiency could not be supplied by conversions of non-Christian tribes, since these were either not present at all in the mission area or else in very scant number. Inevitably the same fate was in store for the California Indians that has been the lot of other backward peoples in the presence of white civilization. Under the most favorable circumstances the end might have been postponed longer than it was, but more could hardly have been expected.

"Pressure began to be put upon the missions from the outset of Mexican rule. Taxes were imposed. The friars protested, but paid. Nothing of importance happened, however, until after the arrival of Echeandía. This governor (if anybody other than the Mexican authorities), and not Figueroa, is the one who should be charged with precipitating the downfall of the missions, though it was in the administration of the latter that the decisive step was taken.

"Cognizant of the fact that Mexican sentiment strongly favored secularization, Echeandía resolved upon a policy to bring his own government into accord with the prevailing view. In 1826, therefore, he issued an order that married Indians of the missions south of Monterey were to be allowed to leave the missions, provided they had been Christians for fifteen years or from infancy and were esteemed capable of supporting themselves.

This preliminary measure had scant effect; indeed, there were few Indians who could have maintained themselves in a civilized manner. In 1827 a Mexican law called for the expulsion of all friars from the republic, but this, too, was virtually a dead letter in Alta California. Of far more importance was a provincial law of 1830, prepared by Echeandía in response to urgings from Mexico, and promulgated with the approval of the national government. This provided for gradual secularization of the missions. The mere announcement of the law was enough to occasion a great change. There was a more or less general feeling of opposition to the friars. The rank and file of the soldiery, still unpaid, often in rags, and dependent upon the missions for the little they had, looked with envy or indignation at the comparative opulence of the friars and their native wards. Others were eager to enhance their private fortune by spoilation of the missions, or else felt aggrieved by the objections of the friars to grants of land they had received which the missionaries claimed infringed upon their holdings. Few were possessed of a religious ardor which might have ranged them on the side of the friars, for they had grown up without priests, except at such intervals as the Franciscans came in from the missions to act in the capacity of curates. Not a few pointed out that mission servitude accorded ill with republican ideas. Of more account was the attitude of the mission Indians. They understood that Echeandía was about to give them freedom, but 'freedom' to them meant cessation from work, the end of punishments, a right to do as they pleased, and a permanent food supply from an unending mission store. They listened readily to those who told them that the friars were robbing them of their lands, or treating them with undue cruelty, as well as to those who painted the prospective freedom in brightest colors. Personal attachment to the missionaries held many to their tasks, but it was increasingly difficult to get the others to do anything at all. Echeandía made matters worse by appointing agents, on his own initiative, to manage the mission estates on behalf of the emancipated Indians.

"At the time Figueroa came to Alta California the immediate overthrow of the missions seems not to have been contemplated. Indeed, he was accompanied by ten friars, sent out to supply rapidly growing vacancies. These friars were Franciscans, but

not from the College of San Fernando, which was no longer able to provide missionaries. They and their leader, Francisco García Diego, were from the College of Zacatecas. Figueroa had been instructed to proceed with gradual secularization, but to restore the missions to the position they had held before Echeandía's unauthorized acts. A few months after his arrival Figueroa started south on a mission tour. He found that Echeandía had caused mischief beyond repair. Mission discipline along former lines was utterly gone. On the other hand he saw enough to convince himself that immediate secularization would be unwise, since the Indians were incapable of managing their own affairs. Indeed, the institution of private property (especially in land) had little meaning to them. Something had to be done, however. So he issued an order for the emancipation of such Indians as were best fitted for liberty. Lands, implements, seed, and animals were to be allotted to them, though in other respects they were to remain for the time being subject to the civil and religious authorities. Yet, of the fifty-nine heads of families at San Diego deemed worthy of this prospect, only two cared to make the trial, while ten out of a hundred and eight accepted at San Luis Rey,—surely a most disappointing showing. Figueroa was now in substantial agreement with García and Durán, the two Father-Presidentes, that secularization was inadvisable, unless upon a gradual basis, and wrote to Mexico in protest against any legislation to hasten the process. He also opposed granting any of the mission lands to intending colonists, holding that they should be reserved for the Indians alone.

"And yet Figueroa was called upon to execute the most drastic measure of secularization that had thus far been enacted. In August, 1833, the Mexican government declared itself unequivocally for secularization. A supplemental act of November associated colonization (with the Padrés-Híjar project in mind) with secularization, and proposed to make use of the Pious Fund to assist in the plan! Another law of April, 1834, insisted that secularization should go into effect within four months.

"Figueroa had of necessity to execute these laws, but did what he could to save something out of the wreck. He even stretched the law by providing for gradual secularization (though somewhat more hastened than formerly), instead of completing it in four months. The following were the principal provisions of

his decree, dated August 9, 1834: A beginning was to be made with ten of the missions only; roughly speaking, half of the mission properties were to be distributed among the Indians; the rest were to be put in charge of secular administrators for the support of the religious establishment and other objects for the public good; the Indians were required to perform indispensable community work, and could not legally sell their lands or chattels; cattle were not to be killed in large numbers, except as should be necessary for purposes of maintenance; in the absence of curates the friars were to remain at the missions in charge of religious instruction.

"This legislation was not perfect, but was perhaps as good as could be expected under the circumstances. The proof that it accomplished something is that the missions remained in existence for more than a decade, and almost to the very end were still able to provide the greater part of the provincial revenues. Unfortunately Figueroa did not live long enough to supervise the execution of his decree, and not the decree itself, which was responsible for such harm as resulted. As one writer says:

" 'He was not the author of secularization; he did not even approve it. He foresaw the disaster that must follow if the law of August, 1833, were enforced as he was required to enforce it, and he did what he could and as much as any man could have done, to confine the mischief within the narrowest limits.'

"Administrators were appointed for ten of the missions in 1834, for six more in 1835, and for the other five in 1836. After the death of Figueroa, Alta California suffered for several years from internal convulsions. During all this time the administrators were left to their own devices. Many of them enriched both themselves and their friends; still others were merely incompetent; and a few, perhaps, were both honest and capable. The distributions of the property to the Indians were made as each administrator saw fit. The worst feature of the system, however, was the behavior of the Indians. Relieved from mission discipline they refused to work. Despite the provisions of the law, they sold their properties (especially domestic animals) for anything they would bring. When their own stock of supplies was gone some hired themselves out in a state of virtual slavery to such families as could employ them, others joined the non-Christian tribesmen in horse-stealing and life in a state of barbarism, and

still others sank to the uttermost depths of degradation. The missions and the mission system were dead.

"And yet the corpse lived on. Some Indians, indeed, returned to the secularized missions. With the re-establishment of peace, an earnest attempt was made to remedy affairs. Early in 1839 Governor Alvarado appointed William Hartnell (a man of high character and notable attainments) *visitador* of the missions, with authority to correct abuses that had sprung up. Hartnell made a tour of the missions, and found that they had greatly deteriorated. At his suggestion he himself was made superintendent of the entire system, and the administrators became mere clerical subordinates, held to strict accountability. When he endeavored to put the new regulations into effect in 1840, however, he met with so much opposition on the part of certain administrators that he resigned. Thus ended the most promising effort of the times at restoration of the missions.

"It was in 1840, too, that the former Zacatecan Father-Presidente, García Diego, was invested with the authority of bishop of the two Californias. He was empowered to use the Pious Fund to establish a cathedral and a college for the education of priests. It seemed now that the long-delayed delivery to the secular clergy of the religious side of mission work might be made, when—presto!—a new government in Mexico refused to turn over the Pious Fund to Bishop García, and diverted it into the Mexican treasury. In 1843 the missions seemed at length to be exhausted. In hopes of making them yield more profitably Governor Micheltorena restored them to the friars. But the corpse was now indeed 'too dead' to be resuscitated. So in 1844 (in order to raise funds for general defence, in view of the possibility of war between the United States and Mexico) Micheltorena authorized the sale or rental of the missions. In the next two years all but Santa Barbara passed into private hands, though the titles of purchasers were subsequently invalidated by the United States government.

"At the time of the transfer, but little was left. In February, 1844, Father Durán reported that San Miguel and San Luis Obispo were virtually abandoned, Purísima Concepción had about two hundred Indians (as against 1,522 in 1804), and the other southern missions were in an utterly hopeless condition. On June 1, 1846, Narciso Durán, who had resided in Alta California forty

years and had been Father-Presidente, most of the time since 1825 (1825-1827, 1831-1838, and 1844-1846), died in his seventieth year. He has been called 'the last and perhaps the ablest of the Franciscan prelates,' but as the outstanding figure in a *decline* he must of necessity yield place to the more fortunate Serra and Lasuén. However that may be, his death is taken as marking the end of the missions. No successor was appointed, for none was needed."

The Mission story of a later day—of today—of course, is a different one. Worthy Fathers have come into the missions and have achieved noble things. However, this will be dealt with at a later stage in the history.

We must pause here to study a few incidents that happened in the Mexican era that were not recounted in the foregoing bit from the pen of Chapman. Some of the Mexican authorities, as has already been said, made an attempt to be just and to do their work efficiently. However, in order that no misunderstanding shall exist in the mind of the reader as to the treatment accorded the Indians by other officials and the terrible pangs that must have assailed the minds of the Fathers at seeing their subjects abused, it is timely to tell of but two (and there were many more) unpleasant events that happened in the Mexican era. The fact cannot be dodged that the Indians fared badly at the hands of the Mexicans, and that much of the good work started by the Fathers was ruined by the villainous work and frightful examples set by the Mexicans. General Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo, perhaps, can be considered nothing less than a butcher in the light of some of his infamous acts; and much of the so-called honor that men pin upon him is but an ironic tinsel.

"The reputation which he (Vallejo) acquired for cruelty," says McGroarty, "and which doubtless incited Governor Alvarado to say that the next best thing to sending prisoners to the devil was to send them to Vallejo, arose from an infamous incident when Vallejo was an ensign at Monterey. It was in the time of Governor Echeandía, in the spring of the year 1829. There had been a revolt of neophyte Indians connected with the Missions of San Jose and Santa Clara. They had fortified themselves near the San Joaquin River and had successfully repelled an attack of troops under Sergeant Antonio Soto. It was then that a hundred men were sent out from the presidio of Monterey under

Vallejo's command. This force was considerably augmented by recruits picked up from San Francisco and San Jose. The Indian forces were vigorously attacked, falling under a terrific fire of musketry and cannon, notwithstanding that they made a valorous and heroic defense. It was then that the most cowardly, the most barbarous and the most murderous butchery in the history of California took place at the hands of Vallejo's forces. The Indian auxiliaries that had fought in Vallejo's ranks against their own people, were formed in a circle and the captured Indians were sent into that circle, one after another, to be used as targets. It was great sport for Vallejo and his men. Nothing more cruel can be imagined. Other Indian prisoners were hung to trees with grapevines and the women were shot in cold blood. For this awful act of barbarity, Father Durán, who was then Presidente of the Missions, did all in his power to have Vallejo prosecuted, but his efforts were in vain. It is a stain on California's escutcheon that the Government did not accede to Father Durán's petition and by some condign punishment make a public example of Vallejo, whose brutish and savage deed deserved punishment if ever a deed deserved it.

"Of a piece with this most horrible outrage was the massacre of the Indians committed by General Vallejo's brother, Salvador Vallejo, at Clear Lake, in the spring of 1843. It was in the time of Governor Micheltorena. An account of it was given by a man named Bendeleven to the Surveyor General of the United States. From this letter Theodore Hittell, the historian, transcribed an account of the massacre as follows:

" 'It seems that a cow had been stolen in the neighborhood of Sonoma in the spring of 1843 and that Vallejo fitted out an expedition consisting of a number of white men and Sonoma Indians which he placed under the command of his brother Salvador. What instructions were given does not appear; and it is probable that they acted without any. Be this as it may, they proceeded northward over valley and mountain and doubtless far beyond the limits of any rancheria that could have committed the theft, until they arrived at Clear Lake. Near the southern margin of that magnificent sheet of water there are several islands of great beauty, two of which, in particular, were inhabited by Indians who are said to have been of gentle disposition and who

lived there, protected by their isolated situation, in fancied security.

" 'When Salvador and his party arrived at the border of the lake, the chief Indians of the island passed over on their rafts to meet and communicate with them. The newcomers said, through an interpreter, that they had come on a peaceful mission, with the object of making an alliance, and requested to be carried over to one of the islands, where they should all meet. The natives, not for an instant suspecting treachery, readily complied. When they were all collected at the main rancheria, the Indians under pretense of the treaty, were induced to lay aside their weapons and enter their large underground temescal or sweat-house. When they had done so, the whites and their auxiliaries drew their knives, such as were used for slaughtering cattle, and throwing themselves into the gloomy pen, began a horrid and indiscriminate butchery, respecting neither age, condition or sex.

" 'A few of the doomed creatures succeeded in breaking out of the gory inclosure and, plunging into the water, tried to escape by swimming to the mainland; but they were all shot to death as they were thus desperately endeavoring to get away—all, with apparently one single exception. Among them was a woman with a child tied in a net on her shoulders. As she sank, struck by a musket ball, the child struggled in its net, when one of the whites, either less barbarous than the others, or more probably with an idea of securing a domestic servant, jumped on a raft and saved the half-suffocating infant. The narrator of the bloody story adds that he had seen the child, which was about a year old, and that whenever a white person approached it would utter a scream and go into convulsions of terror. And well it might! And well might the narrator exclaim, as he did 'Que barbaria! que ferocidad tan! de unos hombres destitudios de todo sentimiento de humanidad!' ('What barbarity! and what ferocity, too, of men destitute of every sentiment of humanity!')' "

Enough for the barbarity against the Indians! It is not pleasant reading, but it gives one phase of the Mexican era that cannot be gleaned from reading only of the pleasanter side.

Before turning to the Bear Flag Revolt, which is a distinct chapter in California history, let us study the business, if it can be called business, that existed in the Mexican era. We have seen the care-free life that was being lived by the Mexicans; we have

turned the pages of the history of battle; we have glimpsed the atrocities that were committed upon the Indians; but the beginnings of industry have not been sounded. This phase is important, for it was largely responsible for the increasing number of Americans coming into California—a people that were shortly to take over the land for themselves.

Trapping and trading in furs, of course, was an early industry. It was carried on, however, by Americans who made a substantial business of it. "The fur traders," says Robert Glass Cleland, in *A History of California—the American Period*, "were divided into two classes—the *engagés*, or regular company employees, and the independent hunters or free trappers. The former, well illustrated by Jediah Smith's expedition, were bound by definite contract to the company's service for a specified period, usually of a year's duration. They received, together with food and equipment, a stipulated wage, ordinarily amounting to $150 a year. Often this was paid in beaver fur at a price per pound agreed upon when the contract was entered into. The discipline maintained in expeditions of this kind was necessarily of military strictness. Throughout the regions where the fur business was carried on, conditions were not particularly favorable to the enforcement of law or the development of courts. Consequently, custom and usage, maintained when in dispute by the individual, took the place of statutes, judges, juries, and sheriffs.

"A handful of men, carrying with them articles greatly coveted by the Indians, or laden with the profits of a season's hunt travelling through a perilous country, perhaps a thousand miles from any base of supplies, could not long survive unless all were subject to a single leader, whose orders were executed by direct and forceable means whenever necessary. If unrestrained by some rigid discipline, a few quarrelsome or evilly disposed men, either through desertion, broils among themselves, or unnecessary provocation of the Indians, might easily involve the entire expedition in ruin. To preserve order and obedience among a company of reckless, semi-lawless trappers, particularly when dissatisfaction prevailed because of continued hardship, or opportunity for insubordination offered itself, was no child's play. At the San Gabriel Mission, for instance, Smith was compelled to flog one of his men to correct a confirmed tendency to mischief making. The Pattie party, * * * broke up on the Gila with

disastrous consquences because the malcontents could not be held to their obligations. Later, the inability of Joseph Walker to control his company when encamped near Monterey, resulted in the financial ruin of the expedition. To lead a trapping party successfully, required not only the nominal power to enforce discipline, but also tact, unwavering firmness, resourcefulness, and a consummate ability to handle men. Whenever these qualities were lacking in a leader—and not infrequently even when they were present—an expedition came to grief.

"Even more picturesque than the *engagés*, both in appearance and manner of life, was the free trapper. Bound by no obligations, owing no allegiance to any company, in everything his own master, the free trapper relied upon his own resources, provided his own equipment, and trapped when and where he pleased. His reckless nature and characteristic garb were thus described by Captain Bonneville, the friend of Washington Irving:

" 'It is a matter of vanity and ambition with the free trapper to discard everything that may bear the stamp of civilized life, and to adopt the manners, habits, dress, gesture, and even the walk of the Indian. You can not pay a free trapper a greater compliment, than to persuade him that you have mistaken him for an Indian; and, in truth, the counterfeit is complete. His hair, suffered to attain a great length, is carefully combed out, and either left to fall carelessly over the shoulders, or plaited neatly and tied up in otter skins, or parti-colored ribbons. A hunting shirt of ruffled calico of bright dyes, or of ornamental leather, falls to his knees, below which, curiously fashioned leggins, ornamented with strings, fringes, and a profusion of hawks' bills, reach to a costly pair of moccasins, of the finest Indian fabric, richly embroidered with beads. A blanket of scarlet, or some other bright color, hangs from his shoulders, and is girt round his waist with a red sash, in which he bestows his pistols, knife, and the stem of his Indian pipe. His gun is lavishly decorated with brass tacks and vermilion, and provided with a fringed cover, occasionally of buck skin, ornamented here and there with a feather. His horse is caparisoned in the most dashing and fantastic style; the bridles and crupper are weightily embossed with beads and cockades; and mane, and tail are interwoven with an abundance of eagles' plumes, which flutter in the wind. To com-

plete this grotesque equipment, the animal is bestreaked and bespotted with vermilion, or with white clay.'

"In the decades from 1830 to 1840 both *engagés* and free trappers came into California, the latter probably in somewhat larger numbers than the former. Several of the expeditions were also composed of both types; for the free trappers not infrequently joined themselves temporarily, for purposes of protection or other advantage, to a regularly organized party. In such cases special arrangements were made to cover the matter of equipment and wages.

"Most trapping companies were divided into messes of six men each. One member of each mess served as cook for the other five, and in return received his proportionate share of the furs taken by his companions. Each trapper, besides his saddle horse, had at least two pack animals to carry his equipment and furs. His arms consisted of a rifle, one or more pistols, a hunting knife, and generally a small ax or tomahawk. The rifle usually carried resembled the famous Kentucky squirrel rifle, but was of a somewhat larger bore.

"The fur chiefly sought after, from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific, was that of the beaver. These skins sold in the mountains for an average price of five or six dollars each. So universal, indeed, was their use that they served as an accepted medium of exchange in place of money throughout the west. They were carried in bundles, or 'packs,' weighing from eighty to a hundred pounds apiece."

Animals of many varieties abounded in the thick growths of pine and oak in the Monterey Peninsula and back into the stretches of the Monterey and Santa Cruz country. A fur trader coming into the town of Monterey burdened down with his catch was always the signal for spectators to gather. They would ply him with questions, examine his wares, and whisper among themselves as to the merits or demerits of his "packs."

"With the decline of the fur trade, through whose influence the Russians and Americans had first been brought to California," says Cleland, "the inhabitants of the province were compelled to rely upon other forms of foreign commerce to supply them with manufactured articles and to furnish some sort of market for their own agricultural products. Even before the fur traders ceased to appear along the coast, chance whaling ships

occasionally put into a California harbor for water and fresh provisions, and gradually a mutually satisfactory trade was built up between these vessels and the Californians. Though never of very large proportions, this form of early California commerce merits a brief description. * * *

"In obtaining supplies from the Californians the whalers resorted to a system of barter similar to that employed by the fur traders. Each vessel had on board a small cargo of New England manufactured products which was exchanged for fresh meat, vegetables, and other provisions necessary for the welfare of the scurvy stricken crew. In these transactions evasion of duties on a petty scale was probably common enough; but the whaling vessels were interested in the trade only as a means of procuring food and so had no great incentive for organized smuggling."

The ports of Monterey and San Francisco soon became the headquarters for the whaling ships. Here they would stop for repairs and provisioning, and later for whaling operations themselves. Whales, which were frequently seen just outside the Monterey Bay or actually within the bay, kept the interest in this port always alive. With a slight anticipation, we see that eight years after California had become part and parcel of the United States, the Monterey Whaling Company was organized—this in the year of 1854. On this subject—which was vitally important to the community at one time—we find an interesting account in a book which is now out of print, "The Hand Book of Monterey and Vicinity," printed in 1875 by Bacon and Company of San Francisco. The chapter entitled, "The Monterey Whale Fishery," reads:

"The Whale fishery, which for the last twenty-five years has constituted one of the most important of our local industries, is likely soon to become a thing of the past. The whales are gradually becoming scarcer, and now that the tide of commerce is turning this way, they will, ere long, give our bay a wide berth.

"Of the various species of whales which frequent the coast of California, the most valuable are the Sperm Whale, Right Whale, Humpback, Finback, Sulphurbottom and California Grey. Many years ago, while California was yet a province of Mexico, the New Bedford whale ships caught large numbers of Sperm and Right whales along this coast; but these species have now almost disappeared, and our whalers have to content themselves with the

more numerous but less valuable California Greys and Humpbacks. Occasionally, however, a Sulphurbottom or Right Whale is caught, but this is a rare occurrence.

"It was for the purpose of catching the Humpbacks, known to be numerous in this bay, that the Monterey Whaling Company was organized in 1854. In the fall of that year, Capt. J. P. Davenport, an old and experienced whaler, got together a company of twelve men, only three or four of whom were regular whalemen, the balance being 'land lubbers.' They had two boats, and met with pretty good success, as the whales were tame and easily caught in the old fashioned manner with harpoons and lances. Captain Davenport brought a number of bombs with him from the east, but owing to some defect, they proved worthless and were not used. The price of oil falling to twenty-five cents per gallon, the company was disbanded before the commencement of the next season.

"The whales, however, were not allowed to rest, for in 1855 the company of Portuguese, known as the 'Old Company,' was organized with seventeen men and two boats. Although at first they used no guns, they succeeded in taking about 800 barrels of Humpback oil annually for about three years.

"In the autumn of 1858, Captain Avery of the schooner *Sovereign* noticed a school of California Greys playing near the surf, about three miles from town. He informed the whalers of his discovery and they at once proceeded to the spot indicated and caught several of the school, besides many others of the same species, before the season closed. In the winter of the same year (1858) Captain Davenport again started in with two boats well manned and equipped with bomb and harpoon guns. Both companies whaled in the bay with varying success, getting from 600 to 1000 barrels annually per company, for several years, when Captain Davenport withdrew from the business. His company has since been known as the 'New Company' of Portuguese whalers. During the season of 1862-63 each company secured about 1700 barrels of oil. This was one of their most successful years.

"In 1861 the Carmel Company was organized. At first they whaled in this bay, but in the spring of 1862 they moved to their present station on Carmel Bay.

"The Humpback season commences about the 10th of August and expires about the first of December. The California Grey

season then commences and continues until the middle of April. The first half of the season is called the 'going down season,' as the whales are then descending from their summer haunts in the Arctic ocean to the lagoons and bays on the lower coast, for the purpose of bringing forth their young. It is during the 'coming up season,' as their return northward is called, that the greater number of whales are caught; for if the whalers can succeed in striking the 'calf' the 'cow' is an easy capture, as she will die rather than desert her offspring.

"This brings us to the means of capturing these marine monsters. At the first streak of dawn the whalers man their boats, six to a boat, and proceed to the whaling 'ground' near Point Pinos. Here they lay on their oars and carefully scan the water for a 'spout.' Suddenly someone sees the wished-for column of mist and foam, and cries out 'There she blows!' Then all is activity, the boat is headed for the whale and the guns are made ready to fire. When within a short distance of the animal the oars are 'peaked' and the boat is propelled by paddles so as not to disturb the wary whale. Having arrived within shooting distance, which is about forty rods, the harpoon, connected with a long line, is fired into whatever part of the animal is visible. Down goes the whale, the line with a turn around the 'loggerhead' of the boat being allowed to run out for several hundred yards, when it is held fast. The whale generally makes a direct course for the open ocean, dragging the boat after with almost lightning rapidity. Soon, however, it becomes weary and comes to the surface to breathe; now is the golden opportunity; the boat approaches as near as possible and a bomb-lance is fired. In case this enters a vital part, the animal dies instantly, but oftener it does not, and the same maneuvering as before is repeated until two or three bombs have been shot before the animal is killed. It is then towed to the try works, where the 'blubber,' as the casing of fat with which it is covered is called, is removed, cut into small pieces, and boiled out. Sometimes, however, the whale will sink as soon as killed; should such be the case, a buoy is attached to the line, and the animal is left until the generation of gasses in its body causes it to rise, which usually occurs in from three to nine days. It is then towed in and 'tried out' as before.

"The usual yield of a California Grey is about forty barrels if a female, and twenty-five barrels if a male. That of a Hump-

back about the same. The average size of a California Grey is forty-two feet in length, and twenty-eight or thirty feet in circumference. A Sulphurbottom is occasionally caught which measures a hundred feet from tip to tip. In 1873 the New Company commanded by Captain Pray, captured a Right Whale seventy feet long and fifty feet in circumference. It yielded 175 barrels of oil and 1,500 pounds of bone, and netted the company over $2,000. At the close of that season the two companies, numbering in all thirty-four men, were consolidated into one company of twenty-three men, eleven quitting the business entirely.

"The life of a whaler is very exciting and dangerous, as the boat is sometimes capsized or swamped, and the men have to swim for their lives. Yet such is the force of habit, that they seem to feel no more fear when in pursuit of a whale than if they were upon dry land.

"A good story is told of a gentleman who upon assuring the whalers that he knew not what fear meant, was allowed to go out with them in their boat. Soon a whale spouted near by, and the Captain, true to his aim, lodged a harpoon in its body. The whale made for the mouth of the bay, the boat almost flying in its wake. The amateur whaler now began to get excited, not to say scared. His teeth chattered, he prayed and hung on to the boat like grim death. Faster and faster went the boat, the water just even with the gunwale, and whiter and whiter grew the gentleman's face. At length the limit of his endurance was reached. He jumped to his feet and yelled out in frantic accents: 'Cut the rope! For heaven's sake cut the rope, I'll pay for the whale!' The rope was not cut and the whale was secured without much difficulty. * * *

The building which was formerly occupied by the Monterey Whaling Company now belongs to Allen Griffin, owner and publisher of the *Peninsula Daily Herald.* He has converted the old edifice into a modern home, preserving its historical features throughout, however. The original sign used by the whaling company is being carefully guarded in this home, as are also many harpoons used by some of the first whalers.

Although our dissertation on the whaling industry has led us far afield from the Mexican Era, yet in the Mexican era the whaling industry obtained its foothold and made the future of the industry possible. The vital significance of the whaling industry

in the Mexican era was not so much from the standpoint of the dollars and cents that it brought its advocates, but from the fact that it stimulated American interests in the harbors of the Pacific.

The hide and tallow trade was another business that brought California in frequent contact with the outside world. Cleland gives an excellent description of this industry:

"The natural conditions of California," he says, "were so thoroughly congenial to cattle raising that the development of the industry was almost unbelievably rapid. Before the close of the century, the hills and valleys from San Diego northward to the fartherest point of Spanish occupation were covered with the offspring of the few hundred animals driven overland from Mexico by the early colonizing expeditions.

"The Californian, like his ancestors in Mexico, was a cattle raiser by inheritance and temperament. In the business, as he knew it, there was little of responsibility or of disagreeable labor. Whatever work the round-up and slaughter required had in it a certain spice of danger and an element of sport that appealed to the Californian's native instinct for excitement and his love of the out-of-doors. Except in seasons of drought, the rains came, the grass grew, and the cattle, running wild on the range, multiplied and took care of themselves. Only in dry years was there any danger of serious loss. At such times, however, the herds might suffer severely. In 1829, for instance, it is said that 40,000 cattle died on the southern ranges and that the Mission of Santa Barbara alone lost 12,000 animals during the same disastrous season.

"Because of the natural aptitude of the Californian for the business, and the suitable natural conditions which prevailed, cattle raising became almost the sole industry of the province, and virtually its only source of wealth. From the sale of hides and tallow to the foreigner, after the close of the fur trade, the Californians obtained almost everything they made use of in the way of clothing and manufactured articles. Similarly, government officials, whether civil or military, derived almost all public funds for salaries and other necessary ends from the revenues received directly or indirectly from the trade.

"The influence of the business was clearly marked in other fields as well.

" 'The breeding of cattle being the chief occupation of the

Californians,' writes a careful student of those early days, 'determined their mode of life, the structure of their society, and the size of their ranches. Nobody wanted to own less than a league square (four thousand four hundred and thirty-eight acres) of land, and the government granted it away without charge, in tracts varying from one to eleven leagues, to anybody who would undertake to erect a house and put a hundred head of cattle on the place.'

"The California cattle ('black cattle' as they were commonly called) were of the typical range, or Mexican variety. Their legs were long and thin, their bodies small and their horns sharp and surprisingly wide-spread. Both in appearance and disposition they were more like the wild deer which herded with them, than the domestic animals of our Atlantic or Middle Western states.

"No attempt at scientific breeding was thought of during the Mexican régime, nor would this have been profitable if put into effect. From year's end to year's end, the cattle ran wild, never knowing the inside of a stable or a fattening pen, but living entirely upon the grass and herbage of the limitless ranges before them. Their flesh was tough, but full of nourishment and flavor. Dried or fresh, it constituted the chief article of diet among the people of the province, and was supposed by many to account for the remarkable longevity of the Californians.

"The cows matured early, sometimes calving at the age of fourteen months, and gave but little milk. As this was almost never used for domestic purposes by the Californians, foreigners who visited the province frequently commented unfavorably upon the absence of cream, butter and cheese from their hosts' tables. But, after all, the Californian was a true cattleman in this respect, since even today many of the large ranges of the west use condensed milk in place of fresh, and regard butter as a needless luxury!

"As there were no fences in the country, cattle belonging to one owner frequently joined the herds of another. Consequently, both law and custom required that every man's stock should be marked with an officially recorded brand—then as now the sign of ownership wherever cattle run at large. Twice a year, in the spring and fall, great rodeos, or round-ups, were held to apportion out the intermingled herds among the proper owners, and to mark the unbranded calves. These were occasions of some formality

and of great bustle and stir in the placid routine of California life. An official, known as the *Juze de Campo*, or Judge of the Plain, presided over the proceedings. The cattle were brought together in some central place and the sorting or 'cutting out' process began. To keep the thousands of frightened, bewildered, and maddened creatures from stampeding, cowboys or *vaqueros* rode continually about the herd, seeking to hold it together. Whenever an animal broke from the mass, a rider immediately roped him; or, seizing him by the tail, with a peculiar twist requiring both strength and dexterity, threw him heavily to the ground.

"Meanwhile, each owner and his *vaqueros* rode in and out among the cattle, separating such animals as he found marked with his own brand from the main herd. The question of ownership was seldom a difficult matter, because of the brands, and even the unbranded calves, which followed the cows to which they belonged. As an owner's cattle were cut out from the general herd, they were driven a little distance away to a place previously chosen and kept by themselves until the rodeo was ended. Here the rancher branded his calves and determined the number of animals he could profitably slaughter during the coming season.

"A round-up of this kind was one of the most picturesque events of early California life. The vast herd of cattle, sometimes half a mile from center to circumference, the thick clouds of dust that rose from thousands of moving feet, the sudden dash after some escaping steer, the surprising feats of horsemanship, which were performed continually by the *vaqueros*, the bellowing of frightened and maddened bulls, the clash of horns striking horns, the wild shouts and laughter of the cowboys all lent an air of excitement and interest that the printed page cannot reproduce."

Salinas, one of the foremost cities in Monterey County, recalls these old days with a rodeo, which it holds yearly. In the month of July each year it carries on the memories of a bygone age in a magnificent celebration in which *vaqueros* perform "stunts" with lariat that can be seen nowhere else. Geniuses of stirrup and saddle gather to compete for the large prizes which are awarded to the best horsemen. The roping of steers, fast and fancy riding, trick riding, "bronco busting" and contests of every description are engaged in. Thousands of people come to witness these events, and the scenes as they were enacted years before

the "Gringo" knew California are repeated to the clinking of spurs, the swish of the viata and the whooping and yelling of hundreds of *vaqueros*. Salinas has justly become famous for *Big Week*—she has carried on a noble phase of early California in a "big" way.

Returning to the rodeos of the Mexican era, perhaps you ask what were the marketable portions of the "unfatted calves." We find from the works of Cleland that hides and tallow were about the only salable commodity derived from the cattle.

"The best of the latter (tallow)," says Cleland, "was used by the native women for cooking, and in the making of soap and candles. The rest was melted in large pots, generally obtained from the whaling ships, and run into rawhide bags, capable of holding nearly half a ton apiece. It was then sold at so much an arroba, a standard Mexican weight equal to about twenty-five pounds. Harrison G. Rogers, clerk in Jedediah Smith's expedition, was much impressed with the soap works at San Gabriel Mission as he saw them in 1827. He thus describes them:

" 'The soap factory consists of four large cisterns, or boilers, that will hold from 2,000 to 2,500 gallons each; the cistern is built in the shape of a sugar loaf, and made of brick, stone and lime; there is a large iron pot, or kettle, fixed in the bottom where the fire strikes to set it boiling.'

"The hides were cured (after a fashion) by pegging them out in the sun. A number of holes were cut in each skin through which stakes were driven to keep the hide from curling. As no great care was taken in the process of skinning, particles of flesh generally adhered to the hides, which even the California sun could not then make oderless. After this curing process, most of the hides were stored until disposed of to a foreign vessel. A few, however, were kept for local use. Some leather was tanned by the missions and an occasional rancher; but for the most part the skins, after having been made into rawhide, found a wide variety of uses without further treatment. This rawhide, indeed, was an indispensable to the Californian of the early days as baling wire became to the rancher of later years.

"With the exception of the small amount of tallow and the comparatively few hides required to fill the domestic needs of the Californians, the products of the industry were all sold to the trading vessels along the coast. Before 1822, while the restrictive

commercial laws of Spain remained in force, this trade was of insignificant proportions. A few bags of tallow were shipped to San Blas on government supply ships before 1813; and from 1813 to 1822 a number of vessels from South American ports, commonly called the Lima ships, took back some tallow, a few hides, and a small amount of California soap. * * *

"The American vessels engaged in the hide and tallow trade came almost wholly from New England, and were commonly known as the 'Boston ships' on the California coast. The voyage from New England to California by way of Cape Horn required from four to six months and was full of hardships and danger —a fact more clearly appreciated when one remembers that the vessels averaged less than 500 tons burden.

"Once on the California coast, a trading vessel put first into the port of Monterey, a pleasantly situated town of white-plastered, red-tiled, adobe houses, shut in by green pine forests, and blessed with one of the few safe harbors of the California coast. Here stood the only customhouse the province could boast, where every trading vessel was compelled to enter its cargo. The city also served, during most of the Mexican period, as the seat of civil and military life, and as the social center of the province."

Thus, the hide and tallow business played an important part in the life of the Californians and principally the Californians of Monterey. This city was of necessity the center of much of this business. Goods being sent out naturally went through this port, and to this town came the cattle owners to transact their official business. But the hide and tallow business was important in still another way to California. Cleland explains it in the following words:

"Yet though the trade was important both to California and to New England from an economic standpoint, its enduring significance lay rather in another quarter. From it, as from the coastal fur trade and the whale fisheries, but even in a more direct way, the maritime interest of New England learned of the resources and commercial possibilities of California and became interested in her ultimate destiny. Through the hide and tallow trade, more than through any other agency, New England began her expansion to the Pacific Coast."

One other phase of the so-called commercialism in an age that

was anything but commercial. In regard to the trade in cloths, jewelry, etc., we must turn to McGroarty, who says:

"The Yankee trader who brought a shipload of silks and satins, purple and fine linen and jewelry to California found no trouble in quickly exchanging those things for the hides, the tallow and other products of California. All ships bringing merchandise to California were required to enter their cargoes with the customs officer at Monterey, but to defeat the customs laws was as customary in those days as it has been ever since. To lighten the burden of taxation ingenius gentlemen's agreements were formed, under the conditions of which ships from the Philippines and other portions of the Orient laden with merchandise would frequently put in at Santa Catalina or some of the harbors of nearby islands. The Yankee traders having entered their ships at Monterey and partially discharged their cargoes, would clandestinely meet the ships from the Orient at the Island harbors, take on a substantial cargo and then proceed with their trading as though their ships carried only the cargo which was entered at Monterey."

This, then, concludes the Mexican era. The only facts that remain to be explained of the province that existed for a brief twenty-five years under Mexican rule are those relative to its changing of hands once again—changing now into the Bear Flag Republic.

CHAPTER XXIV

FORERUNNING THE BEAR FLAG REVOLT

Returning to the political upheavings under the Mexican regime, we find conditions so continually changing that a new factor —a new country—is bound to enter and take a hand. Figueroa had died, and Alta California flitted from one policy to another with greater rapidity than heretofore. Of this period Chapman says:

" * * * Home rule, restoration of Mexican governors, and home rule, again, followed in rapid succession. Internal dissension marked the periods of home rule, while a united front was presented against the Mexican governors. Meanwhile, infiltration of American settlers was constantly going on. That was the decisive factor.

"No fewer than four men, one of them for two terms, held the office of governor in 1836. José Castro had succeeded Figueroa in 1835, but some of the southern leaders objected to him. One of them, José Antonio Carrillo, as provincial deputy in the Mexican congress, had procured an act making Los Angeles the capital. *The Diputacion* had declined to go to Los Angeles, and recognized Castro. He resigned on January 2, 1836, in favor of Lieutenant-Colonel Gutiérrez, who had all along been accepted as the military commandant (*jefe militar*). In April, Colonel Mariano Chico arrived from Mexico as the new governor, and in May took over the office. Chico lasted three months, during which time he made himself the most hated ruler the province ever had. He began by announcing the new Mexican centralist constitution, replacing the federalist document of 1824—and this was accepted as easily as all previous governmental changes had been. This was about the only action he took that did not stir up opposition. The climax came when he appeared in the place of honor at a public function, accompanied by his mistress (whom he had endeavored to 'pass off' as his niece) and by a woman under arrest at the time for adultery. The uproar over this incident was so

great that Chico took refuge on board ship, and on July 31 sailed from Monterey to Mexico. Gutiérrez resumed power, but was unable to check the dissatisfaction of the Californians. As a centralist he was unpopular, not because of any real objection to that political ideal, but because Chico had espoused it. The Californians felt that it was time they should have a governor of their own choosing. A quarrel with Gutiérrez gave Juan Bautista Alvarado an opportunity to put himself at the head of a revolution.

"Alvarado was only twenty-seven, but was already a leading figure in the province, endowed perhaps with greater political capacity than any man of those times. Much better informed than most Californians, as a result of his readings (when a mere stripling) in Sola's library, he became secretary of the *Diputacion* at seventeen years of age, and in 1836 was a full-fledged deputy in that body and a custom house official. Following his dispute with Gutiérrez (over questions of provincial revenue), Alvarado left Monterey and went to Sonoma. There he tried to persuade his uncle, Mariano Vallejo, to join him in a revolt against Gutiérrez and centralism, but Vallejo was lukewarm. Arrived at San Jose on his return he found three of his fellow-deputies,—Antonio Buelna, José Castro, and José Antonio de la Guerra (son of the already-mentioned Captain de la Guerra),—who enthusiastically subscribed to his plan. A party of thirteen men was formed to march on Monterey. On the way, other Californians joined them until they numbered about seventy-five, and presently they were reinforced by a terror-inspiring band of Mexicans, Indians, and Americans under Isaac Graham, a celebrated American trapper and marksman who had set up a distillery in the Pajaro Valley. The army now proceeded to Monterey.

"Late on November 3 Alvarado quietly took possession of various strategic points of Monterey and on the 4th the 'battle' began. Alvarado made his forces seem larger than they were by marching them in the open from one place to another and causing them to return unseen, perhaps to repeat the open march again. Then he ordered his men to start firing. Only a single ball could be found that would fit any of the cannon, but with this they hit the governor's house. That ended the battle! Gutiérrez surrendered, and was put aboard a ship bound for Mexico.

"Alvarado had won, but he now had the much more difficult task of consolidating the many divergent elements under his own authority. Virtually dominated by him the *Diputacion* declared the independence of the province (on November 7, 1836) under the name of the 'free and sovereign state of Alta California,' with a qualification to the effect that it was to endure until Mexico returned the federalist constitution of 1824. Alvarado became governor, and Monterey was recognized as the capital, while the *Diputacion* took to itself the new title of 'Constituent Congress.'

"It soon developed that Los Angeles was not in favor of independence. So in January, 1837, Alvarado tried the persuasive argument of a quick march south. A much-threatened resistance did not develop, and he entered Los Angeles on the 23rd. The southern metropolis now discovered that it had no objection whatsoever to Alvarado; indeed, it announced itself as equally opposed to centralism and Mexican governors, though doubtful of the wisdom of independence. Alvarado agreed to hold elections for a new legislative body which should review the proceedings of the self-styled Constituent Congress. Thereupon, Los Angeles most gracefully submitted. The elections were held, and the new body confirmed the main features of the laws made by the old, except that it substituted a petition to Mexico to restore federalism and let Alta California govern itself for the previous declaration of independence.

"The lull following the agreement with Los Angeles was but temporary. With the coming of spring, 'young men's fancies,' both north and south, 'turned lightly' to thoughts of revolution. The opposition in the south was the more formidable. Former Governor Zamorano headed a movement at San Diego ostensibly for restoration of Mexican rule. Los Angeles fell into line, and presently the now familiar scene of sectional differences reached the crucial stage. Northern troops were at Rincon Pass, near San Buenaventura, and Southern, at San Fernando. Battle was imminent,—when suddenly all was changed by a factor as strange if not so spectacular, as the famous Ávila charge against Governor Victoria. Captain Andrés Castillero, who had left Alta California with Gutiérrez, now returned with a new centralist constitution of 1836. Since it represented opposition to Alvarado the hitherto (supposedly) federalist south adopted it with enthusiasm. Early in July, Castillero passed over to Alvarado's lines,

—and Alvarado also accepted it! Nothing could show more clearly than this that political ideals in Alta California were little more than catch-phrases behind which individuals fought for power. The Californians were merely in the stage of boss rule which characterized other Spanish-American lands of that day. Alvarado's action was due, no doubt, to his own precarious hold on the governorship. Even in Monterey there had recently been a temporarily successful uprising against him. By swearing allegiance to the Mexican constitution he was enabled to retain power as acting governor, and got Castillero's promise to urge his formal appointment by the authorities in Mexico. The south was not satisfied, but now had no plausible issue; so the revolution died a-bornin'. The old régime was restored, and with it the *Diputacion* returned as successor of the Constituent Congress.

"The south was not long in finding an issue with which to combat Alvarado and the north. José Antonio Carrillo came back from Mexico in October, 1837, with the information that his brother, Carlos Antonio, had been appointed governor. Nothing in Alvarado's career illustrates his political cleverness better than his handling of this situation. He knew that Castillero could not have reached Mexico by the time of Carrillo's appointment, and had well-grounded beliefs that there was something questionable about the Carrillo case, anyway. So he played for time, depending upon Castillero to arrange matters eventually in Mexico, and feeling certain that the Mexican government, occupied as it was with more pressing affairs, would recognize the claimant in Alta California with the firmest grip. So while the Carrillos fulminated, issuing demands and threatening him with death, Alvarado proposed conferences or sought other means to postpone the issue. By March, 1838, he had some intimations that his cause had triumphed, and resolved to further it by striking at the Carrillos.

"The southern troops were leisurely besieging Santa Barbara, which had refused to submit to them. Alvarado sent Castro south to attack them. Joining the garrison of Santa Barbara, Castro got together a force of about a hundred men, and advanced against the enemy, reported to number a hundred and ten. The battle was fought at San Buenaventura. Castro seized Rincon Pass, and bombarded the southern troops with cannon

shot on March 27 and 28. During this time one of Castro's men was killed,—just how, it cannot be stated,—while there is no record that any of the enemy were hit. The Carrillo army seems to have decided that the battle had gone far enough, and slipped away under cover of darkness. Castro pursued, and captured seventy of them. It was the 1st of April when the triumphant northern captain entered Los Angeles.

"But the Carrillos were not yet ready to admit defeat. A new army was raised at San Diego, wherefore Alvarado himself marched south. At a point south of San Juan Capistrano called Las Flores the two armies *met*, but hardly *clashed*. The battle, as Bancroft says, 'was for the most part one of tongue and pen, though a cannon was fired once or twice * * * doing no harm.' Alvarado was more than a match for Carlos Carrillo in diplomacy, persuading him to disband his troops as a preliminary to further discussion. This virtually ended opposition to Alvarado. Los Angeles recognized him as governor, though San Diego for some time remained hostile. Not until August, 1838, did Alvarado learn definitely that Castillero had been successful, and not until November did he receive formal notification of his appointment. Castillero was rewarded presently by an election to the Mexican congress.

"Alta California now settled down to a few years of much-needed freedom from internal disorder. Battles of the past few years had indeed caused little bloodshed, but the lack of security of life, limb, and property had been very real; one has only to read the original narratives of men like Alfred Robinson, an American merchant in California, to realize that there was no element of comic opera *to them* in the civil wars of the thirties. Alvarado turned his attention after 1838 to many problems of administration which had for several years been allowed to drag along as they would. Among other matters was that of dealing with the Indians. Along the entire frontier they had become more than usually bold. On one occasion they abducted a rancher's two daughters; on another they drove off twelve hundred animals from San Luis Obispo. Many battles were fought, especially by Vallejo, who was the most successful campaigner of the times. The administration of the missions, the reorganization of the government (which had recently been re-united to

Baja California and made a full-fledged department of the Mexican Republic), consideration of the laws of trade and customs regulations, and the repair of the military establishment were more or less actively taken up. In these matters Alvarado did not meet with such striking success as in the factional strife of the preceding years, though it is doubtful if anybody else could have done better. It is charged, indeed, that from about 1839 he concerned himself rather more with convivial pleasures than with affairs of state. Meanwhile, a formidable rival appeared upon the scene in the person of his uncle, Mariano Guadalupe Vallejo.

"Vallejo had been appointed military governor, or commandant, at the same time that the civil authority was formally bestowed upon Alvarado by the Mexican government. For years Vallejo had been not only an efficient soldier, but also a capable business man and virtual ruler of the north bay district, undoubtedly the best managed section of Alta California. Vallejo did not propose to play second fiddle to Alvarado in military affairs, and started in on his own initiative to exact the same discipline at other posts that he had long maintained in the north. He also tendered gratuitous advice to Alvarado on such other matters as foreign trade, revenue, and administration of the missions,—and on this last-named subject he might indeed make valuable suggestions, since he had supervised the missions in his vicinity with greater success than had been met with anywhere else. It was not long before a pronounced coolness developed between the two. Trouble also seemed likely to break out in the south under José Antonio Carrillo or Pío Pico, the latter of whom had deeply resented the refusal of Alvarado's government to set up Los Angeles as the capital. In addition, there were rumors of plotting on the part of the less desirable foreigners, who made a rendezvous of Graham's bar and boasted that England or the United States would soon get Alta California. These incidents decided the political-minded Alvarado to make a spectacular play.

"In April, 1840, Alvarado caused Graham and a number of others of his following to be arrested, and four days later they were put aboard ship, thirty-nine in all, and sent to Mexico. Yet other precautions were taken against the alleged foreign peril, and glowing proclamations were published telling how Alvarado

had saved the country. Thus did the governor ward off threatened internal strife,—a strife which was more apt to have arisen among his Spanish Californian opponents than from Graham and his men. As for Graham, he and about half of his companions were allowed to return in the following year. Both that year and the next, foreigners arrived in ever increasing numbers, but Alvarado did not again take action. Friction between himself and Vallejo developed to such a point, however, that the Mexican government resolved to reunite the civil and military power in one person. To avoid offending either Alvarado or Vallejo, it was necessary to relieve both of their authority and to send out a governor from Mexico, though the two Spanish Californians received a notable promotion in military rank. On December 31, 1842, their rule came to an end. Both continued to be prominent in California affairs, Vallejo especially, and both lived many years after the change of flag and indeed to a green old age.

"The new governor, General Manuel Micheltorena, was a genial gentleman who was in many ways deserving of better fortune than fate accorded him as a ruler of the Californias, though a man of no great strength. Remembering that Texas had been lost to the republic as a result of the coming of American settlers the Mexican authorities were particularly desirous of checking this potential danger. They therefore made an unusual effort to provide Micheltorena with an army. But such an army! The majority were liberated convicts, and the regulars that were provided, officers and all, were the worst elements in the commands from which they were obtained. The term '*cholos*,' which the Californians applied to them, is indicative of the low character of these 'defenders of the country.' Alfred Robinson, who was at San Diego when Micheltorena and his *cholos* arrived on August 25, 1842, has this to say of the soldiery:

" 'They presented a state of wretchedness and misery unequalled. Not one individual among them possessed a jacket or pantaloons; but naked, and like the savage Indians, they concealed their nudity with dirty, miserable blankets. The females were not much better off; for the scantiness of their mean apparel was too apparent for modest observers. They appeared like convicts, and indeed the greater part of them had been charged with the crime either of murder or theft. And these were the *soldiers* sent to subdue this happy country.'

"Micheltorena, who managed indeed to provide his men with uniforms, remained at San Diego for several weeks. By day he kept them busy drilling, but at night they roamed far and wide, stealing whatever they could lay hands upon. It was with pleasure that San Diego saw them depart. Los Angeles and Santa Barbara soon learned that a most astonishing thing had occurred. On October 19, 1842, Monterey had been required to surrender to an American fleet under Commodore Thomas Jones. In the double belief that war between the United States and Mexico had been declared and that England was desirous of picking up Alta California for herself, Jones had made a hurried voyage from Perú. Micheltorena then at San Fernando, issued a fiery proclamation announcing his impatience to fly at the dastardly invader, but decided that for the present he could 'fly' better from a point farther south. So he returned to Los Angeles. Meanwhile, convinced of his mistake, Jones had hauled down the American flag on the 21st, and restored the *status quo*.

"Micheltorena remained at Los Angeles until July, 1843, receiving formal delivery (by proxy) of Alvarado's government while still at that place. The citizens of Los Angeles saw him go with mingled joy and regret because it meant loss of the prestige, which they so greatly desired, of being the seat of the government. Monterey rejoiced,—but soon realized that their armed 'protectors' were the worst pest they had ever been obliged to endure. Micheltorena could not check the depredations of his *cholos*, but frequently made good their thefts out of his own pocket.

"The crimes of his soldiers were but one of Micheltorena's many difficulties. Alvarado had left the treasury with exactly twenty-five cents in it. Provincial revenues, always too scant to serve provincial needs, were now more heavily strained than ever, if only to sustain the *cholo* army. The governor did what he could to obtain sufficient funds, but without conspicuous success. With respect to the Americans, now rapidly pouring through the mountain passes, he did nothing. Indeed, with the forces at his command, he could hardly have expelled those already in the province or prevented those who sought to come. So he took the opposite course, and received them with kindness and, often, humane attentions. The Indians of the interior were not less active than before. And Pío Pico again raised the issue of making Los An-

geles the capital, and was incensed at the governor when he vetoed the plan. Talk of revolution once more became current, despite the personal popularity of Micheltorena himself. As summed up by one writer:

" 'The Californians, or some of the most influential among them, began to regret the reunion of the civil with the military power, and to be dissatisfied with the rule of a foreigner. They did not dislike Micheltorena himself; on the contrary he had won their regard by his agreeable manners, his generosity in making them whole, and perhaps more than whole when his *cholos* despoiled them, and perhaps also by his indolence which so closely resembled their own. He had quite won the favor of the friars by restoring the missions to their care, and by marrying the mistress he had brought with him from Mexico. He had established better schools in the pueblos and principal settlements than had ever been known before in California, and he had helped the bishop to establish an ecclesiastical seminary at Santa Inés. In fact no foreign governor since Borica had done so much to win the favor of his people.'

"The revolution at length broke out in November, 1844. After several weeks of maneuvering between Salinas and Santa Clara, an agreement was reached in December, according to which Micheltorena was to send his *cholos* back to Mexico within three months. It soon afterward became apparent that the governor had no intention of fulfilling the treaty, but on the contrary was getting ready to deliver his opponents a knockout blow. Among others he enlisted a number of foreigners, mostly Americans, under John A. Sutter, whose establishment at New Helvetia (modern Sacramento) had, since its founding in 1839, became the principal rendezvous of the immigrants by the overland trails. Isaac Graham also joined Micheltorena with a contingent of sharpshooters. Alvarado and Castro, who were among the leaders of the opposition, hastened south, gathering adherents as they went. Arrived before Los Angeles they attacked the garrison, and captured the city in a battle (January 20, 1845) in which several men were killed or wounded. They made much of the fact that Micheltorena's army consisted largely of foreigners, procuring the enlistments to their own forces as a result of the patriotic ardor thus aroused. Meanwhile they too recruited a foreign company!

"On February 20 and 21, 1845, the battle of Cahuenga Pass was fought,—at Álamos, west of the pass, on the 20th, and at the Verdugo ranch, on the other side, on the 21st. The forces engaged were larger than usual; it is said that the Californians had no fewer than four hundred men. They also had two cannon as against Micheltorena's three. On both sides there were a number of foreigners, in great part Americans, but some of the more prominent among them in each camp were at work pointing out how this was none of their quarrel. So the foreigners in each army did little, if anything, but watch the fight. The engagement on the 20th was mainly an artillery duel, with nobody taking any chances of getting hit. It is said that one horse on the patriot side had his head shot off and perhaps another was killed, while Micheltorena's casualties were limited to the wounding of one mule. On the 21st neither man nor animal fell. * * * And then Micheltorena capitulated! Indeed, his cause was hopeless, now that the foreign riflemen would not aid him. He agreed to leave Alta California, taking his *cholos* with him, and late in March he did so. With his departure the last real vestige of Mexican rule was gone, though a shadowy allegiance was retained some few months longer.

"A divided local authority was now restored, with Pío Pico as civil governor and José Castro military commandant. Immediately, the lack of harmony between north and south revived. Pico, earliest in a long line of Los Angeles 'boosters,' removed the capital to the southern metropolis, while Castro and the provincial treasurer and custom house officials remained at Monterey. Even in his own section Pico was beset with troubles, including a plotted uprising by that stormy petrel of Alta California politics, José Antonio Carrillo. The plot was discovered, and Carrillo was forced to add yet another exile to several in his career which had gone before. Differences of opinion between Pico and Castro were early in evidence. The most serious question was that of a division of the provincial revenues. Debts were pressing, and salaries were either unpaid or being scaled down, —a situation which had become chronic,—but needs were greater than ever. Pico was in a position to command legislation, favoring the civil branch as opposed to the military, but Castro and his friends were in control of the funds. Affairs were shaping

themselves for a fresh civil war, when there came a burst from the blue that gave a new turn to the situation.

"The news concerned a long-predicted uprising of foreigners, under the leadership, in the present instance, of John C. Fremont, an officer of the United States army. * * *"

It is this uprising—the celebrated Bear Flag Revolt—that will be the topic of the next chapter. Up to the present time, the Spaniards, first, and then the Mexicans had governed California. We have studied the acts of each country; and greater honors seemed to have fallen to Spain, which undoubtedly did far greater work than that of Mexico. Be that as it may, the Mexican era had its color and significance. In commendation of the Latins, McGroarty says:

"The end of Latin power and authority, however, did not mean that California was soon, if ever, wholly to abandon the traditions which the first conquerors and colonizers had impressed upon her soil and her history. Spanish and Mexican speech and thought were destined long to linger as, indeed, they linger still. It is to be hoped that at least the poetry, the romance and much else that was sweet and alluring in the life of a people who were so great in so many ways will not entirely disappear."

CHAPTER XXV

THE BEAR FLAG IS RAISED

Up to the present we have dealt, not only with the history of Santa Cruz and Monterey counties, but, in many instances, with the history of the state at large. This was necessary for the obvious fact that many incidents occurring in other parts of California had a direct bearing upon the future of the two counties of our history. Monterey and Santa Cruz counties did not spring into being like mushrooms. Their growth was of a slower, surer, and more enduring kind. Time itself, sifting over them like a fine rain, brought many changes. Ground that had felt the tread of the feet of old Spanish explorers, then of the padres, then of the Mexicans, and finally with the advent of more and more of United States citizens, gave bloom to several different governments. Dissatisfaction, unrest, and frequently burning ambition, sown to the winds in foreign parts, were wafted to the soils of California where they took root. No little blood, sinking into this soil, fertilized the harvest of constant change. A broad history of the state, as well as mention of foreign intrigue, has demonstrated this, showing direct results upon the "Old Pacific Capital" and its near neighbor, Santa Cruz. Therefore, as you read on, keep the picture in mind of the state as a whole, with the two counties under consideration sharply etched from the balance. Hereafter, we shall devote most of our discussion to the aforesaid counties, with only mention of activities in other parts of the state that have a very immediate bearing upon them.

The Mexican era had come and gone. Its departure was hastened by the so-called Bear Flag Revolt, a revolt that put California under a republic that, up to this time, had never before existed. "From June 14, 1846," says McGroarty, "until the ninth day of the succeeding month of July, a period of twenty-six days, there existed in California what was, to all intents and purposes, a separate and distinct nation with a republican form of

government and a flag of its own emblazoned with a lone star and a painted image of a Grizzly bear. The official name of the Government was 'The Republic of California,' but it is popularly known as 'The Bear Flag Republic.' The new nation was established by an armed force consisting of twenty-four men, and the entire history of the affair, short but vivid as it is, probably stands without parallel."

Before recounting details of the Bear Flag Revolt, which actually occurred in Sonoma, but which was fostered in Monterey and there had much of its design planned and executed, it will be necessary to examine a few preceding events in order to gain a clear understanding of consequences.

About ten thousand white people, among whom were many Americans, occupied California in the opening of the year of 1846. These people were engaged almost entirely in pursuits that brought a direct, and, we might say, an unimaginative livelihood, such as agriculture, fishing, lumbering, and trading. In that time there were few of the arts known here. None of the artistic or literary endeavor that plays such an important part in the life of the counties today was then in evidence. Not only did the question of making a livelihood face the inhabitants of the Pacific slope, but that of keeping out of the way of stray bullets as well. The spirit of unrest pervaded the times; rulers changed over night; and from one dawn to the next Californians did not know to whom they would owe allegiance.

The Mexicans were, for the most part, a poorly organized lot. Their hold upon California at no time was marked with exceptional strength or strictly practical government. The Spaniards themselves had constantly felt a spirit of dissatisfaction with conditions under Mexican rule, and had, on numerous occasions, expressed the wish that another power would intervene. Conditions, therefore, were obviously ripening for the Americans to step in and assert themselves.

McGroarty, in his clear, forceful and picturesque style, says of this period:

"At this time the affairs of California as a Mexican province were in a very deplorable condition, indeed. Don Pico was the Civil Governor, with his residence near Los Angeles. He seemed to have avoided Monterey, which was still the capital of the Province as it had been from the first settlement in 1769. The

military authority was vested in Don Jose Castro, who held power under the title of Commandante General, his rank in the army being Lieutenant-Colonel of Cavalry. These two men were constantly at rivalry, scarcely ever agreeing upon questions of government or authority, and constantly squabbling over a division of an exchequer which was usually little better than impoverished. Pico, after the secularization and spoliation of the Mission establishments and estates, found himself with no other means of easy revenues, while Castro, as the head of the military establishments of the Province, would have found himself put to his wits' end to mobilize an army consisting of more than one hundred men.

"It was plain to the Californians, as well as to the Americans and everybody else who was in the Province, that the Republic of Mexico was on its last legs, at least as far as holding possession of California was concerned. Both Pico and Castro appealed in vain, time after time, to the home government to strengthen their hands. It became at last fully apparent that Mexico was to lose California.

"For a time Governor Pico and others indulged themselves in the vain hope that they might be able to set up an independent government, with themselves at its head. Apparently, however, these hopes were soon abandoned and they settled down to the belief that either England, France or the United States would ultimately secure possession of California. Of these three possibilities, all regarded as evil by the Californians, American domination was the most distasteful alternative. There were many who would have welcomed the power of France, but the majority seemed to stand most in favor of England; among these was Pico.

"Every day the air was filled with rumors and the people were constantly in a state of nervous excitement and discontent. That England was actively engaged with clear-cut and positive plans for the acquisition of California there was ample information, despite the fact that the Monroe Doctrine had been repeatedly reaffirmed. British warships continually hovered along the California coast, waiting for an opening and an opportunity to strike. To what extent France actively engaged in these movements is not quite clear.

"Well aware of everything that was going on, the Government of the United States was determined to acquire California

when the time came for it to pass from the possession of Mexico. To this end it stationed at Monterey a very able, cautious and courageous diplomatic agent in the person of Thomas O. Larkin, and there appears also to be no doubt that the appearance in California of Capt. John C. Fremont, who was then an officer in the army, attached to the Department of Topographical Engineers, was for a deeper purpose than that announced, which was that he had been sent out to survey the Rocky Mountain country and the Pacific Coast in the interests of travel and immigration. There was at least one point on which Pico, Castro and all the Californians of Spanish-Mexican origin agreed, and that was an intense distrust and hatred of Americans. So, in the midst of all this turmoil, dissension and uncertainty, the American population of California found itself very disagreeably bestowed. The American settlers soon found that they could not look to the Government of the United States to assist them in their aspirations to secure control of California. If they applied to the commander of an American warship that happened to be at Monterey, San Francisco or any other port, they were invariably told that no assistance could be rendered to them for the reason that Mexico and the United States were at peace. But it appears to be quite clear that the Americans were constantly in touch with Fremont and his little party of pathfinders, and that they never failed of a sympathetic audience in that quarter."

This, then, was the general "lay of the land." A word about Thomas O. Larkin, an important figure in the early American—or late Mexican—days of California. Larkin, a New England merchant, had come to Monterey in 1832, building a home in 1834 (which, incidentally, still stands and is one of the many historical points visited by tourists today). During his early days in Monterey he became a staunch booster of California. On becoming a regular correspondent of the *New York Sun,* he did much in the way of regular articles to inform easterners of the merits of California. He also contributed articles to the *New York Herald,* the *Journal of Commerce,* and the *Boston Advertiser.* One of his news letters, which probably had a good deal to do with the bringing of more easterners west (therefore advancing the date of the acquisition of California by the United States) reads as follows:

"Emigrants leaving Independence for the Pacific should furnish themselves (if a family of five or six persons) with one good

wagon, four or five yoke of oxen, three or four cows, three horses, and to each grown person 250 lbs. of flour, 150 lbs. of bacon, and a few cooking utensils. Every male person over fourteen years of age should have one good rifle, 10 pounds of powder, 20 pounds of lead, 2000 percussion caps and a good horse. On arriving on the banks of the Sacramento and finding a convenient piece of land that the emigrant can occupy, he should begin sowing wheat from December to February; beans, peas and corn in April and May, and should also procure for himself cows two years old, worth from $4.00 to $5.00; young bulls at $2.00 to $3.00; thirty or forty mares at $5.00 or $6.00; a stallion at $15.00 or $20.00; and a few sheep at $2.00 each. One hundred young cows will produce from seventy to ninety calves between the second and twelfth months; from one thousand to fifteen hundred dollars in cash will start an enterprising man in breeding animals for a California farm.

"In a few years the settler may find purchasers for produce from among the emigrants and throughout the country. In time he will find a market in the Sandwich Islands, North West Coast, San Blas, Mazatlan, and elsewhere. Wheat produces from forty to fifty fold under the most imperfect cultivation. The Spanish Padres for many years obtained one hundred fold at some of the missions. One hundred and eighty fold was once gathered at the mission of San José. Wild oats and mustard cover the country, the former from three to four feet high, the latter so high and compact that it is impossible for a traveller to find his horses when they stray among it. Rye and buckwheat have not been proved. Hemp was raised by the former Padres. Cotton has been proved to advantage, but no quantity has been planted. Every kind of vegetable yet planted has produced well. Apples, pears, quinces and peaches are common all over California. In parts of the country there are limes, oranges, almonds, figs and walnuts. Plums and cherries have not been introduced. Grapes of the very best quality are found in the greatest abundance in different sections of the country. Latitude south of 34 degrees produces the best. With imperfect means good wine could be produced and distilled. The climate of California is surpassed by no other. The lowest rate of the thermometer in the shade at Monterey in 1845 was 44 degrees, the highest 86 degrees; from 60 to 70 is the common rate throughout the year."

Larkin, besides boosting California and therefore drawing more easterners to the west, functioned in another capacity for the United States. In 1843 he had been appointed United States Consul to California—the first and only American ever to hold this position. In this capacity he found it possible to furnish much valuable information to the United States government. Soon his "despatches," as told by Cleland, "affairs of commerce and trade—the ordinary consular concerns—were subordinated to matters of larger import. The political and military strength of native Californians toward the United States, the arrival and reception of American immigrants, the influence and ambition of European nations in California questions—such were the topics most dwelt upon in the American Consul's communications to Washington. In turn, the government encouraged him to report every item that might be made to serve the nation's interest.

"It was natural that Polk, cognizant of Larkin's high standing with the leading Californians and aware of his knowledge of California affairs, should have entrusted to him the chief responsibility of carrying out the President's second plan of acquiring the territory. The plan itself was definitely outlined to Larkin by Polk's Secretary of State, James Buchanan, in a despatch dated October 17, 1845. This communication, unfortunately too long to be quoted here in full, contained three suggestions for Larkin's guidance. These in brief were as follows:

(1) Though the United States would not foment a revolution in California, Larkin might assure the Californians that his government would play the role of protector in case they sought to separate from Mexico.

(2) Should any attempt be made to transfer California to a European power, the United States would prevent the cession.

(3) To carry out the plans of the administration more effectually, win the friendship of the Californians for the United States, and thwart the activities of European nations, Larkin was appointed the President's confidential agent and virtually instructed to use his own discretion in handling the situation.

"Two copies of this despatch were forwarded to Larkin. One went by sea and reached California early in 1846. The other was entrusted to Lieut. Archibald H. Gillespie, a confidential agent of the United States Government, who traveled across Mexico in the disguise of an invalid merchant seeking health. Fearing

capture at the hands of the Mexicans, Gillespie destroyed his copy of the document after memorizing its contents. A third copy of the despatch was sent to Slidell to guide him in his negotiations with the Herrera administration.

"The whole tenor of Buchanan's letter convinced Larkin that the President expected him to prepare the way for the peaceful annexation of California by the United States. He accordingly began systematically to carry out his mission. In the province at that time there were a number of Americans who had married California women and become Mexican citizens. To several of the most influential of these—men like Don Abel Stearns of Los Angeles, John Warner of San Diego, and Jacob Leese of Sonoma —he wrote confidentially of his new position, urging them to aid him in his program of winning over the Californians. Stearns, the dominant foreigner in the south, he appointed his secret assistant to manage the business in and around Los Angeles.

"To a number of the native leaders in the north, with whom he stood on intimate terms, Larkin also revealed the general character of Polk's instructions. As these men were already weary of Mexican rule, it was not difficult to secure some measure of support for the idea of independence, especially as Larkin held before them the promise of substantial reward from his own government. The real difficulty was not their affection for Mexico, but the inclination on the part of some to look to Great Britain instead of to the United States for aid. Those known definitely to favor the American program were urged by Larkin to attend the various juntas, which were then being held to meet the existing crisis in California affairs, and to bring their influence to bear upon the decisions of those bodies.

"These efforts of the American Consul gave promise of success. Several of the principal Californians came over definitely to Larkin's position; and one of these, General Castro, as influential as any man in the province, even went so far as to draw up 'a short history of his plans for declaring California independent in 1847 or 48 as soon as a sufficient number of foreigners should arrive.' Equally encouraging reports were received from the south, and it seemed only the matter of a year or two before California would renounce her allegiance to Mexico and voluntarily seek annexation to the United States. Two things, however, broke in upon this plan of peaceful acquisition and ended the move-

ment which Larkin had begun at President Polk's request. One of these was the uprising of the American settlers in California known as the Bear Flag Revolt; the other was the Mexican War."

Thus California was being prepared—even though rather raggedly—to take flight from the hands of the Mexicans and to settle elsewhere. And right here it is high time to speak of the activities of John C. Frémont, who was an outstanding figure in the Bear Flag Revolt. Even though to this day it is almost impossible to say precisely what relations Frémont had with the revolt, so much is known of his intrepid work, that mention must necessarily be made of him. It will take us to a date just prior to that on which Larkin was appointed the United States Consul to California.

"In the spring of 1845," says Cleland, "Frémont, with a party of sixty-two men, six of whom were Delaware Indians, started from St. Louis on a third exploring expedition beyond the Rocky Mountains. The ostensible object of this undertaking was to discover the most feasible route from the Mississippi to the Pacific. But coupled with this purpose was an ever growing desire on Frémont's part to revisit California and to examine in more detail a country over which he had already become an ardent enthusiast.

"The party reached Walker's Lake when winter was already at hand. Food was none too plentiful, and the danger of becoming snowbound in the Sierras led to a division of the company. Fifteen men under Frémont set out to cross the mountains to Sutter's; the main body of the expedition, under command of Joseph Walker, skirted the mountains southward, intending to cross from Owen's Valley into the San Joaquin through Walker Pass. It was understood that the two parties should come together again as soon as Frémont could procure supplies from Sutter's establishment and make his way to the southern end of the San Joaquin. The rendezvous was fixed at a stream known to the explorers as the 'River of the Lake.'

"Crossing the Sierras without noteworthy incident, Frémont secured the needed supplies from the obliging Sutter and then hurried on to the appointed meeting place with the company under Walker. Reaching the banks of the King's River, which he took to be the stream agreed upon as the meeting place, and finding no signs of the other party, Frémont waited several days, vainly



GENERAL FREMONT'S VISIT TO SANTA CRUZ IN THE EARLY 80's

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R

hoping for Walker's appearance, and then retraced his way to Sutter's. Leaving his men here with instructions to proceed later to Yerba Buena, Frémont accompanied Leidesdorff, the United States Vice-Consul, to Yerba Buena and Monterey. At Monterey he was entertained by Larkin, from whom he learned much concerning conditions in California.

"On the 29th of January, while Frémont was still at Monterey, Prefect Manuel Castro pointedly inquired of Larkin what American soldiers were doing in the province without permission from the California officials. Frémont replied to Castro's communication in a frank, conciliatory manner, explaining that his expedition was purely scientific in its character and that most of his men had been left in the unsettled interior of the province, while he and a few companions had come to Monterey merely to purchase badly needed supplies for a continuation of their explorations to Oregon. These assurances, which were afterwards reiterated to Alvarado, quieted, temporarily at least, the uneasiness of the Californians, and they accordingly gave Frémont permission to winter in the province, provided he kept his men away from the coast settlements.

"While Frémont was thus occupying his time at Monterey, Walker and his command were encamped on the Kern River, many miles south of the King's, wondering what had become of their lost commander and the provisions he had gone in search of, when the two companies separated east of the Sierras. After three weeks of fruitless waiting, Walker then moved northward, expecting to find Frémont at Sutter's Fort.

"Upon reaching the Calaveras River, however, Walker learned from a chance hunter that Frémont was in the Santa Clara Valley (whither he had gone from Monterey intending to return to the San Joaquin on another search for Walker); and here the two companies came together about the middle of February, 1846. The combined force then temporarily encamped on the Laguna rancho, south of San Jose. After only a short stay in this locality, the party began to move leisurely toward the coast; and after crossing the Santa Cruz Mountains by way of Los Gatos, went into camp in the Salinas Valley, some twenty or twenty-five miles from Monterey.

"It is not certain what course Frémont intended to pursue from this point onward. There is some reason to believe that he

planned to travel down the coast to Santa Barbara; or perhaps to spend a few weeks (until the Oregon route should be clear of snow) in the little valley of the Coast Range near Salinas, which had seemed so like a paradise to the half starved immigrants of the Chiles-Walker party a few years before. But whatever his purpose, he seems to have had no thought that the presence of the company near Monterey would be construed as a violation of his understanding with the California officials.

"The Americans were surprised and considerably angered, therefore, when peremptory orders came from the authorities at Monterey to leave the province immediately, or take the consequences. Frémont, though perhaps technically in the wrong, refused to obey this blunt demand; and moving his camp to the top of a nearby hill, known as Hawk's Peak, prepared to resist whatever force the Californians might bring against him.

"The expected attack, however, did not develop. There was a good deal of bluster and the mustering of a considerable force by the Californians. But inasmuch as the demonstration was probably gotten up chiefly to satisfy the Mexican government, or to quiet the protests of the British Vice-Consul against the presence of the Americans in California, no actual hostilities took place. Frémont, after waiting some three or four days, withdrew under cover of darkness from his fortified position and started for Oregon by way of the San Joaquin and the Sacramento.

"While the Hawk's Peak affair in itself amounted to little, its results were most unfortunate. The distrust and antipathy of Frémont's company toward the Californians were greatly increased; and the feelings of the latter were correspondingly ruffled and outraged. Among the American settlers in the Sacramento, also, the incident created much excitement, and it was persistently rumored that the government had planned to expel or seize all foreign residents in the province. In this sense, at least, the episode was one of the most direct causes of the Bear Flag Revolt.

"Not long after the Hawk's Peak episode, a messenger from Washington reached Monterey. This was Lieut. Archibald H. Gillespie of the United States Marine Corps, to whom reference has already been made as the bearer of a copy of Buchanan's dispatch to Larkin, and as a confidential agent of the American government. Though Gillespie had destroyed Buchanan's letter, he

had brought most of his other papers through unharmed. Among these was a packet of letters for Frémont from Senator Thomas H. Benton, Frémont's influential father-in-law.

"After a stay of only two days at Monterey, Gillespie hastened on to Yerba Buena where he remained a short time with the American Vice-Consul, W. A. Leidesdorff, and then set out to overtake John C. Frémont. The latter, after reaching the San Joaquin, had moved northward at a leisurely pace, reaching the Klamath Lake region about the middle of May. Here Gillespie overtook the party, and besides delivering to Frémont the Benton letters, acquainted him with the nature of Larkin's confidential appointment and the purposes of the Polk administration, so far as Gillespie himself understood them.

"It is not at all strange that the information and despatches brought by Gillespie caused a radical change in Frémont's plans. Instead of continuing his route to the Columbia, he resolved on an immediate return to California. This course was dictated by common sense and lay plainly in the line of duty. Incidentally, it coincided with Frémont's own desires; but had it been otherwise, he could scarcely have gone serenely on his way to Oregon, knowing that events, in which his government was vitally concerned, were rapidly coming to a crisis in California, and that his presence there might change the destiny of the province.

"Frémont has been pretty severely handled by his critics for this abrupt return from Oregon. He himself testified that he was led to believe, through certain 'enigmatic and obscure' passages in the letters from Benton—that California was in imminent danger of slipping into British hands and that the administration expected him to act on his own initiative to forestall such an eventuality.

"Whether Frémont was right or wrong in this interpretation of the situation is really immaterial. The true justification for his return to California lay not in what he read between the lines of Benton's letters; but in the simple fact that a trusted agent of the United States government, the confidential representative of the State Department and of the President himself, had traveled post-haste more than five hundred miles, from San Francisco to Oregon, through a dangerous and almost unbroken wilderness, to overtake the exploring party and urge its return to the Mexican province. Unless Gillespie made this journey for his health, or

out of mere whim, or for some other ridiculous purpose, Frémont had no option in the matter. It was his unmistakable duty to turn back to California.

"When Gillespie and Frémont reached the Sacramento, after a serious brush with the Klamath Indians, they encamped at the Marysville Buttes, above the junction of the Feather and Sacramento rivers. Here rumors came to them of intended hostilities by the Californians against the American residents in the valley. There may or may not have been truth in these reports; but even if the intentions of the native leaders had been unfriendly, it is doubtful, owing to the confusion in the provincial government, if they could have made any serious move against the foreign settlers. Naturally, however, the Americans viewed the situation with a good deal of concern, especially as the hostile demonstration against Frémont in the Hawk's Peak affair was still vividly before them.

"This uneasiness gave place to actual alarm when information, apparently authentic, spread through the valley that a company of two hundred and fifty Californians was advancing toward the Sacramento, burning houses, driving off cattle, and destroying the grain. In the face of this supposed danger, the scattered settlers in the valley hastily came together to effect a military organization. The natural rendezvous was Frémont's camp, where sixty or more well disciplined men already furnished the nucleus for an effective resistance against any force the Californians might have at their command.

"The position of Frémont in this emergency was surrounded by some embarrassment. Having learned probably as much as Gillespie himself knew of the plans of the administration, and believing that California must be secured as quickly as possible to prevent its seizure by Great Britain (for in spite of much argument to the contrary Frémont was evidently sincere in this conviction), the American commander faced a difficult problem. If he took an active part in organizing a settlers' revolt, he would not only lend the uprising official sanction of the United States government, but would also lay himself open to severe censure, and perhaps punishment, in case the administration later disavowed the movement.

"The other horn of the dilemma was equally serious. If the revolt collapsed because Frémont failed to support it, and the

American settlers should be killed or driven out of the province —a fate Frémont evidently feared for them—not only would the blame for this rest upon his shoulders, but also the greater reproach, as he saw it, of standing irresolutely by while California passed out of the reach of the United States into the waiting hands of England.

"Frémont's course in the emergency has been the object both of unreasonable criticism and of exaggerated praise. He did not save California by his presence in the Sacramento, nor did he take an active part in the first stages of the Bear Flag movement; but he did make the latter possible by giving it his moral support and by secret promises of aid if his assistance should be required. How far he was actually responsible for fomenting the revolt is one of those disputed points upon which there is no possibility of agreement. Putting all partisanship aside, and acknowledging that personal ambition probably played its part, the fair minded historian still must acknowledge that Frémont, viewing the situation in the light of what he knew of California conditions and believing that President Polk had determined upon the acquisition of California, pursued a perfectly natural and not altogether blame-worthy course. Unfortunately, claims later made on his behalf were far beyond his actual performances, and his reputation suffered much in consequence.

"The first hostile act of the Bear Flag uprising was the seizure of a band of horses which were being driven from Sonoma to the Santa Clara Valley for the use of General Castro. Rumor reached the Americans at Frémont's camp that these animals were to be employed in the threatened expedition against the settlers of the Sacramento. Encouraged doubtless by Fremont, about a dozen men under the leadership of Ezekiel Merritt started out to intercept the drove. They succeeded, without the slightest difficulty, in surprising the small guard under Francisco Arce and took from them the greater part of the horses. These they brought back to Fremont's headquarters, which in the meantime had been moved farther down the Sacramento. No blood was shed in this encounter, nor were the Californians aware that anything more serious than a robbery had taken place.

"The next step was of more significance. Encouraged by their success against Arce and realizing that they had already gone too far for halfway measures, Merritt's company turned their atten-

tion to the capture of Sonoma. Originally established to check the Russian advance, this settlement, with the exception of New Helvetia which was only nominally under California control, had become the leading political and military center of the province north of Monterey. Sonoma's chief claim to importance arose from the fact that it was the home of Mariano G. Vallejo, in many respects the most dominant figure among the Californians. Toward Americans Vallejo had always shown the kindliest feeling, and was already pretty thoroughly committed to Larkin's plan of independence.

"Under these circumstances, Vallejo and his fellow townsmen were naturally not anticipating any trouble with their American neighbors in the Sacramento. It was with the utmost surprise, therefore, that the General and his family awoke about dawn on the quiet Sunday of June 14th to find themselves surrounded by a band of thirty-three armed men, dressed for the most part in trapper's garb, and evidently come on hostile business. At first Vallejo had considerable difficulty in finding out what the Americans wanted; but through an interpreter he soon learned that they had come to make him prisoner and take possession of the town.

"The leaders of the attacking force—Merritt, Semple, and William Knight—undertook to explain to Vallejo the purpose of the uprising and to arrange the terms of his capitulation. The conference, held in the prisoner's house, made such slow progress that the rank and file of the company outside grew impatient and deposed Merritt from command, electing John Grigsby in his stead. The new leader made no faster headway than the old, and William B. Ide was accordingly sent in to speed up the negotiations. When the latter entered the room, he says, he found most of the conferees too far gone for business. Vallejo's wine and aquardiente, taken on empty stomachs, had proved almost too much for the American commissioners. At last, however, the articles of capitulation were completed and signed. General Vallejo, his brother Capt. Salvador Vallejo, and Col. Victor Prudon were sent as prisoners of war to Frémont's camp, under positive assurance that no harm should come to them or to their property.

"In the meanwhile Ide was elected captain of the company in the place of Grigsby, who seems to have become somewhat alarmed at the progress the movement was taking under his lead-

ership; and the Republic of California was soon brought into being. As a first step in the creation of the new government, William Todd, an enthusiastic member of the revolution, designed the flag. This was made from a piece of unbleached cotton cloth, five feet long and three feet wide. In the upper left hand corner a five pointed star was roughly painted with red ink, while facing this stood the crude figure of a grizzly bear, which gave both the flag and the republic its familiar name. A strip of red flannel on the lower edge of the cotton and the words CALIFORNIA REPUBLIC, done in red, completed the design."

Why, you may ask, were not stars and stripes raised in preference to the Bear Flag? The answer is a simple one. The Bear Flag revolutionists realized that no one had the authority to raise the American flag and if any one did so he might be painfully dealt with by the United States government. However, the party wanted to raise a flag that resembled the American flag as nearly as possible. Hence the star that was used. The reason for the grizzly bear was that the fighting qualities of the men cried for some sort of picturization. As many historians have disputed over the flag, some claiming this and some that, it is befitting here to give the account made by the man who designed the flag. Mr. Todd, the man holding that distinction, published the following in 1872:

"At a company meeting it was determined that we should raise a flag; and it should be a bear en passant, with one star. One of the ladies at the garrison gave us a piece of brown domestic and Mrs. Capt. John Sears gave us some strips of red flannel about four inches wide. The domestic was new, but the flannel was said to have been part of a petticoat worn by Mrs. Sears across the mountains. For a corroboration of these facts I refer to G. P. Swift and Pat McChristian. I took a pen and with ink drew the outlines of the bear and star upon the white cotton cloth. Linseed oil and Venetian red were found in the garrison and I painted the bear and star. To the best of my recollection, Peter Storm was asked to paint it, but he declined; and as no other person would undertake to do it, I did it. But Mr. Storm, with several others, assisted in getting the material and, I believe, mixed the paint. Underneath the bear and star were printed with a pen the words 'California Republic' in Roman letters. In painting the words I first lined out the letters with a pen, leaving out the

letter 'i' and putting 'c' where 'i' should have been, and afterward the 'i' over the 'c'. It was made with ink and as we had nothing to remove the marks of the false letters it now remains so on the flag."

Four days after the flag had been raised, William B. Ide, who had succeeded Ezekiel Merritt as leader, issued a proclamation, justifying the revolution, stating the principles of the new government. This read:

"A proclamation to all persons and citizens of the District of Sonoma, requesting them to remain at peace and follow their rightful occupations without fear of molestation.

"The Commander-in-chief of the troops assembled at the fortress of Sonoma gives this inviolable pledge to all persons in California, not found under arms, that they shall not be disturbed in their persons, their property or social relation, one with another, by men under his command.

"He also solemnly declares his object to be: First, to defend himself and companions in arms, who were invited to this country by a promise of lands on which to settle themselves and families; who were also promised a Republican Government; when, having arrived in California, they were denied the privilege of buying or renting lands of their friends, who, instead of being allowed to participate in or being protected by a Republican Government, were oppressed by a military despotism; who were even threatened by a proclamation by the chief officers of the aforesaid despotism with extermination if they should not depart out of the country, leaving all their property, arms and beasts of burden; and thus deprived of their means of flight or defense, were to be driven through deserts inhabited by hostile Indians, to certain destruction.

"To overthrow a Government which has seized upon the property of the Missions for its individual aggrandizement; which has ruined and shamefully oppressed the laboring people of California by enormous exactions on goods imported into the country, is the determined purpose of the brave men who are associated under my command.

"I also solemnly declare my object, in the second place, to be to invite all peaceable and good citizens of California who are friendly to the maintenance of good order and equal rights, and I do hereby invite them to repair to my camp at Sonoma without

delay to assist us in establishing and perpetuating a Republican Government, which shall secure to all civil and religious liberty; which shall encourage virtue and literature; which shall leave unshackled by fetters, agriculture, commerce and manufactures.

"I further declare that I rely upon the rectitude of our intentions, the favor of Heaven and the bravery of those who are bound and associated with me by the principles of self-preservation, by the love of truth and the hatred of tyranny, for my hopes of success.

"I furthermore declare that I believe that a Government to be prosperous and happy must originate with the people who are friendly to its existence; that the citizens are its guardians, the officers its servants, its glory its reward."

What may be taken as a eulogy of the man who penned this excellent proclamation has been put into beautiful English by McGroarty, who says:

"No one who reads this remarkable document can fail to believe that the slurs cast upon the leaders of the Bear Flag Republic by California's most eminent and most voluminous historian are ill-founded and unjust. If the Bear Flag Republic had produced nothing more than this magnificent contribution to the literature of human rights, as written by William B. Ide, the affair had had sufficient excuse for even so brief an existence. The document marked Ide as a remarkable man, which he undoubtedly was—a man who, like Caesar, according to Miles Standish, could 'both write and fight and at each was equally skillful'."

The events that followed the Bear Flag Revolt promptly brought Monterey into the limelight, where, indeed, it had remained throughout most of the development of California up to this time. As an outcome of the Sonoma affair the American flag was raised over Monterey amid great rejoicing—on the part of the Americans. The incidents directly prior to this—that chased quickly on the heels of the Bear Flag Revolt—are recounted by McGroarty as follows:

"The Republic having been duly declared and the Bear Flag raised, the gage of battle was thrown and military activities in the field at once began.

"The Americans again hastened to Captain Frémont where he still lingered in his camp on the American River. Again they laid their cause at his feet. They brought him indisputable evi-

dence that Castro was moving with three divisions of his army against Sonoma. The American hope of military success was all in Frémont. The die had been cast and the question now was, what would Frémont do? His answer was swift and unhesitating.

"On June 23 he broke up his camp, and with ninety mounted men took the field. A backward glance through the mists of time at that little army, motley and picturesque to the last degree and made up of as good fighting material as the world has ever seen, is well worth while.

"Riding ahead was the leader, himself already a romantic figure. He was called 'The Pathfinder,' a title which posterity can not justly deny him. Physically he was a slender man, but well proportioned. He wore a blue woolen shirt, open at the neck, trimmed with white and with a star at each point of the collar; over this a deerskin hunting shirt. A light cotton handkerchief was worn bound around his head in lieu of hat or cap. His feet were encased in deerskin moccasins. He was mentally alert, brave and determined. Like most men he had his faults and had been much criticised, even cruelly so, but he had the qualifications and the character to hold rank as an officer in the Army of the United States, and he was an American, loyal to the heart's core.

"Following at Frémont's heels came his mounted rifles arrayed in thrice the colors of Joseph's coat. The majority were Americans and the rest were composed of French, English, Swiss, Russian, German, Greek and doubtless other nationalities, besides Pawnee, Delaware and California Indians. They were armed with rifles, ships' cutlasses, bowie knives and pepper-box revolvers. Some of the Indians carried bows and arrows.

"Forth they rode in the golden weather down through the great valley of the Sacramento and across the sun-swept lomas, forcing the marches. At 2 o'clock on the morning of June 25, Sonoma heard the thunder of Frémont's cavalcade. The garrison, sleeping lightly on its arms, was aroused by the cries of the sentinel, and it was at once known that the newcomers were Frémont and his men. Shouts of welcome from swelling hearts greeted the appearance of 'The Pathfinder.'

"In the meantime, Lieutenant Ford of the Bear Flag Army had mustered a squad of about twenty-three men for the purpose of rescuing two Americans who were held as prisoners by a por-

tion of Castro's forces. It was known that the Californians had already killed two other American prisoners, really murdering them in cold blood. Ford's squadron came upon the enemy at a place near San Rafael, called Laguna San Antonio, where there was a skirmish, Ford putting the Californians utterly to rout, wounding a number of them without loss to his own forces, capturing nearly all their horses and rescuing one of the prisoners whom he had been seeking. Returning to Sonoma with his victorious tidings and the spoils of the fight, Ford found Frémont and his riflemen in the garrison.

"Frémont allowed himself, his men and horses only a few hours' rest following his arrival at Sonoma. His information was that General Castro and de la Torre were at San Rafael with a force of two hundred and fifty men. Frémont sallied forth to make an attack. At about 4 o'clock on the afternoon of June 26 he came in sight of what was thought to be the enemy lying entrenched. The Americans cautiously approached the position and then charged upon the fortification. Frémont, followed closely by Kit Carson and by James W. Marshall, who was later to immortalize himself by the discovery of gold at Coloma, were the first to break through the fortification. They found only four Californians, the main body having departed. The Americans, however, caught sight of General Castro on the distant hills approaching the Bay.

"Frémont remained at San Rafael for several days, when one evening a scout brought into camp an Indian runner whom he had captured with a letter from Torre to Castro, in which it was stated that the California forces would be concentrated to march upon Sonoma and attack it the following morning. Frémont at once struck out with his forces for Sonoma, arriving there at midnight. But it appears that the letter found on the Indian runner may have been a ruse. At any rate Torre, hiding in his camp, saw the Americans rushing back to Sonoma. Whatever may have been their original intentions, the Californians did not attack the Bear Flag fortress, but retreated safely by way of Sausalito to Santa Clara.

"As Frémont and his forces approached in the midnight darkness the garrison lay awake, alert and nervous, but determined. The defenders thought surely it was Castro's army come to attack them. The advance sentries heard the tramp of horses and gave

the alarm. The garrison, standing tense upon its arms, realized that perhaps the moment had come when the fate of the new Republic was to be decided. What happened then can best be told in the words of William B. Ide, the commander, whose ability of expression has already been noted in the document in which he proclaimed the Bear Flag Republic.

" 'Thus prepared,' says Ide, 'in less than one minute from the first alarm, all listened for the sound of the tramping horses. We heard them coming!—then low down under the darkened canyon we saw them coming! In a moment the truth flashed across my mind; the Spaniards were deceiving us! In a moment orders were given to the captains of the eighteen-pounders to reserve fire until my rifles should give the word; and, to prevent mistake, I hastened to a position a hundred yards in front of the cannon, and a little to the right oblique, so as to gain a nearer view. "Come back you will lose your life!" said a dozen voices. "Silence!" roared Captain Grigsby; "I have seen the old man in a bullpen before today!" The blankets of the advancing host flowed in the breeze. They had advanced to within two hundred yards of the place where I stood. The impatience of the men at the guns became intense, lest the enemy come too near so as to lose the effect of the spreading of the shot. I made a motion to lay down my rifle. The matches were swinging. "My God! they swing the matches!" cried the well known voice of Kit Carson. "Hold on, hold on!" we shouted; " 'tis Frémont, 'tis Frèmont!" we cried, in a voice heard by every man of both parties, while Captain Frèmont dashed away to his left to cover behind an adobe house; and in a moment after he made one of his most gallant charges on our fort. It was a noble exploit; he came in a full gallop, right in the face and teeth of our two long 18's.'

"Frémont now saw that he had been outwitted, but he at once determined to yet catch Torre or Castro, or both, if possible. Delaying at Sonoma only long enough to give his men breakfast, he again struck out with his forces for San Rafael, arriving there at the old Mission twenty-four hours after the time he had left it, but he still found no traces of the Californians. During his absence the enemy had grasped the opportunity to retreat across the Bay. Captain Frémont then proceeded to the fortress at San Pablo, only to find it abandoned. He spiked the guns and set up his camp on shore, and it was at about this time that Captain

Semple, with a detachment of the Bear Flag army, appeared in the streets of San Francisco and captured Robert Ridley, the captain of the Port of Yerba Buena.

"As throwing some light on the retreat of the Californians from San Rafael and Frémont's presence on the shores of the Bay, at that juncture, the following statement from Capt. William B. Phelps of Lexington, Massachusetts, who was lying at Sausalito with his bark, the *Moscow*, is interesting and illuminating:

" 'When Frémont passed San Rafael in pursuit of Capt. de la Torre's party, I had just left them,' says Captain Phelps, 'and he sent me word that he would drive them to Sausalito that night, when they could not escape unless they got my boat. I hastened back to the ship and made all safe. There was a large launch lying near the beach; this was anchored farther off, and I put provisions on board to be ready for Frémont, should he need her. At night there was not a boat on the shore. Torre's party must shortly arrive and show fight, or surrender. Toward morning we heard them arrive, and to our surprise, they were seen passing with a small boat from the shore to the launch; (a small boat had arrived from Yerba Buena during the night, which had proved their salvation). I dispatched a note to the commander of the *Portsmouth*, sloop-of-war, then lying at Yerba Buena, a cove (now San Francisco), informing him of their movements and intimating that a couple of his boats could easily intercept and capture them. Captain Montgomery (United States naval officer in command of the *Portsmouth*) replied that not having received any official notice of war existing he could not act in the matter.

" 'It was thus the poor scamps escaped. They pulled clear of the ship and thus escaped supping on grape and cannister which we had prepared for them.

" 'Frémont arrived and camped opposite my vessel, the bark *Moscow*, the following night. They were early astir the next morning when I landed to visit Captain Frémont, and were all variously employed in taking care of their horses, mending saddles, cleaning their arms, etc. I had not, up to this time, seen Frémont, but from reports of his character and exploits my imagination had painted him as a large-sized, martial-looking man or personage, towering above his companions, whiskered and ferocious looking.

" 'I took a survey of the party, but could not discover any one

who looked as I thought the captain to look. Seeing a tall, lank, Kentucky-looking chap (Dr. R. Semple), dressed in a greasy deerskin hunting shirt, with trousers to match, and which terminated just below the knees, his head surmounted by a coonskin cap, tail in front, who, I supposed was an officer, as he was giving orders to the men, I approached and asked him if the captain was in camp. He looked and pointed out a slender made, well-proportioned man sitting in front of a tent. * * * A few minutes' conversation convinced me that I stood in the presence of the King of the Rocky Mountains.'

"Frémont lingered with his force at Sausalito and vicinity until the second day of July, when they returned to Sonoma. On the 4th, the national holiday was celebrated with great enthusiasm, and upon the following day Frémont organized his new California Battalion of Mounted Riflemen, two hundred and fifty strong. On this same day a meeting of all the soldiers and American settlers at Sonoma was held for the purpose of making a thorough reorganization of the affairs of the Bear Flag Republic. A Declaration of Independence was drawn up and signed, reiterating the position of California, from the American residents' point of view, to be a distinct, separate and sovereign nation. Frémont was made Commander and it appears that he was given authority over everything and everybody, even supplanting Ide.

"Frémont addressed the assembly and pointed out the fact that the country north of San Francisco Bay was now in complete control of his forces, and he declared his intentions of setting out forthwith with his new battalion of riflemen to find Castro and to prosecute the war until the Mexican power was destroyed. He caused all the participants in the rebellion to sign a document pledging themselves to obedience to their officers. All these things having been accomplished, Frémont with his forces left Sonoma on the following day to prosecute the war. In the meantime a vital incident had occurred at Monterey.

"Probably on the second day of July, 1846, the same day upon which Frémont left his camp at Sausalito for Sonoma, Commodore John Drake Sloat arrived in his flagship, the *Savannah*, at the harbor of Monterey, where he found two other United States ships, the *Cyane* and the *Levant*. The *Portsmouth*, with Captain Montgomery, was still in the harbor of San Francisco. Commodore Sloat carried with him instructions from the United States

Government to capture all California ports and hold them in event of war between the United States and Mexico. These instructions had been issued more than a year previously. Nearly two months prior to July 2, 1846, the date of Sloat's arrival at Monterey, war had been declared between the United States and Mexico, and hostilities were under way. This Sloat knew, and he had therefore come to California to put into force the instructions which he had so long carried. He had come from Mazatlan and as soon as he had anchored in the harbor of Monterey, he sent for Mr. Larkin, the United States Consul and confidential agent of the United States Government, and then learned of the Bear Flag Republic and Captain Frémont's participation in it.

"It clearly appears that the Commodore and the Consul were greatly troubled as to how to act in regard to the situation, seeming to feel that Frémont, through the course he had pursued, had in some way embarrassed them. Why they should have been embarrassed it is difficult to understand. Mr. Larkin, it was well known, had never sympathized with the Bear Flag Republic nor with Frémont's course, but certainly this had nothing to do with the case so far as Sloat was concerned. But that the Commodore was given to vacillation is not disputed. Indeed, he was officially censured for his indecision in this very matter.

"Instead of promptly and without parley seizing the port of Monterey, Sloat hesitated for a period of five days. The Commodore at length, on July 7, sent four of his officers ashore with a demand to the Mexican Comandante to surrender the port of Monterey, with all troops, arms and other public property. The Comandante replied that he had neither troops nor arms to surrender, which was the truth. Immediately upon receipt of this reply, two hundred and fifty American marines and seamen were landed under command of Captain Mervine. The force marched to the custom-house and the American colors were hoisted amid the cheers of the troops and a salute of twenty-one guns from each of the American men-of-war lying in the harbor.

"Three days after this memorable event a man named William Scott overtook Fremont and his riflemen within ten miles of the city of Sacramento, where Sutter's Fort was located, carrying with him the joyful news that Sloat had taken Monterey, where the American flag was at that moment floating on the breeze, and that war had been declared and was then raging between Mexico

and the United States. Frémont pushed on to Sutter's Fort. Arriving there the next day, the bear flag which was floating over the garrison was hauled down, and eager hands ran up the Stars and Stripes amid great rejoicing. A salute of twenty-one guns was fired from a brass four-pounder. Two days prior to this Lieut. Joseph Warren Revere of the *Portsmouth* left San Francisco harbor with a party and reached the garrison of Sonoma with the same great news that had overtaken Captain Frémont on his way to Sutter's Fort.

"Sonoma received the news with the same glad acclamation that Frémont and his army many miles away had received it. From its gleaming staff in the old plaza the crude ensign, which William Todd had made from a piece of cotton cloth and strips of a red flannel petticoat of Mrs. John Sears, and on which only a few weeks previously he had painted a lone star and a grizzly bear, was hauled down and the Bear Flag Republic and the bear flag itself were folded away with 'seven thousand yesterdays.'

"The flag is no more and the Republic which it represented has also passed into history. No man is now living who took part in its brief but stirring life. It existed for only a handful of days and at the will of only a handful of men, yet while it lasted it was as real a republic as any that ever existed. Its annals are as vivid as any other that have ever been written, and the tale they tell clothes now with a certain dignity, in the judgment of time, the immortal 'Pathfinder,' who was the soul of the adventure; Willam B. Ide, Henry Ford, Todd, Merritt, Semple and all who filled the breach and held the ground. Certainly the names and the memories of these men must remain dear to their countrymen, no matter how others have viewed them or may view them still.

"As time goes on and the years pass into centuries, this and many another fateful incident in the history of California will stand out with startling distinctness. The desperate valor of Cabrillo, the Discoverer, will grow more vivid as the mind makes pictures of the past. Ever clearer against the sunset skies will appear the brown-robed ghost of Junipero Serra as he kneels on the desolate shore praying for the white sail of salvation to come to the rescue of starving San Diego.

"So, alas, will the painter, the poet and the dreamer of dreams in days that are yet to be, thrill the souls of the people by epics

in literature and masterpieces on canvas that shall bring forth again from the shadows of time the 'California Republic' of 1846, with its Bear Flag and the heroic figures of the dauntless American men who raised that crude, quaint ensign to the free winds of heaven from the old Plaza of Sonoma in the Valley of the Seven Moons."

CHAPTER XXVI

VICTORIOUS AMERICA

Monterey, the oldest town of all California, now basked under a flag that was new to her—as she had twice previously done; for the United States was, as you know, the third nation to possess her. Although the Stars and Stripes now waved over California, the conquest was not yet over; and it looked for a time as though those Stars and Stripes might come down the flagpole with all the speed with which they had ascended. This, fortunately did not prove to be the case, but the events that made it so provide an important, and perhaps one of the most stirring chapters, to the history of California in general and our two counties in particular.

When Commodore Sloat had hauled his native flag aloft, he promptly wrote to General José Castro, Mexican Military Chief, and to Governor Pico, in which he stated the existence of war between the United States and Mexico and called for an immediate surrender of troops, munitions and public properties. Such a surrender, he intimated, would save the loss of perhaps many human lives. Sloat then continued to urge them to come to Monterey for a conference, assuring them they would be treated respectfully and that their lives or liberty would not be endangered.

At the time these letters were sent, a proclamation that Sloat had issued just prior to raising the flag, was gaining wide circulation. This, as well as the letters, were meant to allay any fears that might be felt by the Mexicans. The proclamation read as follows:

"The central Government of Mexico having commenced hostilities against the United States of America by invading its territory and attacking the troops on the north side of the Rio Grande, and with a force of 7,000 men under * * * General

Arista which army was totally destroyed * * * on the 8th or 9th day of May last by a force of 2,300 men under * * * General Taylor, and the City of Matamoras taken * * * and the two nations being actually at war by this transaction, I shall hoist the standard of the United States at Monterey immediately, and shall carry it throughout California. I declare to the inhabitants of California that, although I come armed with a powerful force, I do not come among them as an enemy to California; on the contrary, I come as their best friend, as henceforward California will be a portion of the United States and its peaceful inhabitants will enjoy the same rights and privileges as the citizens of any other portion of that territory with all the rights and privileges they now enjoy, together with the privilege of choosing their own magistrates and other officers for the administration of justice among themselves; and the same protection will be extended to them as to any other state in the Union.

"They will also enjoy a permanent government under which life, property and the constitutional right and lawful security to worship the Creator in the way most congenial to each one's sense of duty, will be secured, which, unfortunately, the central government of Mexico cannot afford them, destroyed as her resources are by internal factions and corrupt officers, who create constant revolutions to promote their own interests and oppress the people. Under the flag of the United States of America, California will be free from all such troubles and expense; consequently the country will rapidly advance and improve both in agriculture and commerce, as, of course, the revenue laws will be the same in California as in all other parts of the United States, affording them all manufactures and produce of the United States free of any duty and all foreign goods at one-quarter of the duty they now pay. A great increase in the value of real estate and the products of California may also be anticipated. With the great interest and kind feeling I know the Government and the people of the United States possess towards the citizens of California, the country cannot but improve more rapidly than any other on the continent of America.

"Such of the inhabitants of California, whether natives or foreigners, as may not be disposed to accept the high privileges of citizenship and to live peaceably under the Government of the United States will be allowed time to dispose of their property and to remove out of the country if they choose, without any restrictions; or remain in it, observing strict neutrality. With full

confidence in the honor and integrity of the inhabitants of the country I invite the judges, alcaldes, and other civil officers to retain their offices, and to execute their functions as heretofore that the public tranquillity may not be disturbed, at least until the government of the territory can be more definitely arranged. All persons holding titles to real estate or in quiet possession of lands under a color of right shall have those titles and rights guaranteed to them. All churches and the property they contain, in the possession of the clergy of California, shall continue in the same rights and possessions they now enjoy. All provisions and supplies of every kind furnished by the inhabitants for the use of the United States' ships and soldiers will be paid for at fair rates; and no private property will be taken for public use without just compensation at the moment."

The letters and the proclamation, however, decidedly did not pacify the growing anger of the Mexicans. Indeed, both Pico and Castro began concocting a bitter pill which they expected to feed the "Gringos." In the first place, Pico refused to answer the letter sent by Sloat; and, although Castro penned a reply to Sloat that did not commit him on the subject, he turned immediately about and wrote Pico that he had mustered one hundred and seventy men and was on the march. In this letter to Pico, Castro also urged the governor to band all Californians and oust the invaders. Pico's ire was up. He called a meeting of the provincial assembly, where there was a great deal of ranting and perhaps no little hissing and cursing the "Gringo", but the worst that this organization did at the time was to expel their venom.

Hatred was bubbling like hot oil, and the vortex of it seemed to be Monterey. It was here that the American aggressors did most of their campaigning and planning, and here that the furnaces grew ever ruddier in heating the feelings of the Mexicans. Fourteen days after Monterey had been occupied by the Americans, Sloat, in poor physical condition and disgusted with what he probably called the California mess, resigned from his command. He was succeeded by the firey Commodore Robert F. Stockton, who dropped anchor in the Monterey Bay July 15, 1846. The two leaders, Sloat and Stockton, warmly greeted each other; and later, on the 29th, Sloat took his departure, sailing on the *Levant* for Mazatlan and Panama.

Stockton lost no time in letting the populace of California

know that he meant business. He was fierce in his denunciation of Mexico and the policy they had adopted regarding the Americans, saying of General Castro that he had violated "every principle of international law and national hospitality by hunting and pursuing with several hundred soldiers and with wicked intent, Captain Frémont of the United States army, who came to refresh his men, about forty in number, after a perilous journey across the mountains on a scientific survey, for which repeated hostilities and outrages, military possession was ordered to be taken of Monterey and San Francisco, until redress should be obtained from the Government of Mexico." There can be little doubt but that this document, which went on to considerable length in the same vein, was almost too drastic. And Sloat, mild-mannered in comparison with Stockton, took offense at it. Although he did not read a copy until he was at sea, he immediately wrote to the Secretary of the Navy at Washington, denouncing the proclamation, saying that it misrepresented facts and intimating that it would surely do more harm than good.

Thomas O. Larkin also saw the matter in the light of Sloat, and tried to influence Stockton to proceed with more diplomacy, and, as McGroarty puts it, "to bring about a peaceful solution of the trouble." His plea was unavailing, however, and Stockton unwaveringly continued rolling up his sleeves for business. Having appointed Frémont a major and Gillespie a captain in the battalion, Stockton left for the conquest of Southern California. Monterey was now shifted out of the scene for a time—but only for a time—and the southland was, like a movie film of today, flashed upon the screen for a stirring bit of the reel. But blood was not yet to be featured in this conquest.

While Stockton, with some 360 men, landed at San Pedro, Frémont and his command continued on the *Cyane* to San Diego. The news of their coming was enough to disorganize the opposing forces. Inasmuch as the decree had been issued by Stockton that anyone whoever, who was found carrying arms and who was not a soldier of the United States army would be unceremoniously treated as a rebel, Pico and Castro thought discretion lay in flight. They discontinued attempting to negotiate the suspension of hostilities with Stockton, and proceeded to Mexico, Castro going by way of the Anza trail through the Colorado desert and Pico continuing due south into Lower California. Were these

two leaders actually motivated by fear? Many authorities think not. McGroarty says: "As to the real reason why Pico and Castro abandoned the field, it is contended that they were not actuated by fear, but by the desire to escape inevitable humiliation at the hands of the Americans. Everything in the character of General Castro gives color to the belief that he was by no means a coward and that he was loyal to California to his heart's core. He regarded England, France and the United States equally as the enemies of his country and he would have been glad to wipe them all from the face of the earth were he able to have done so. As to Pico's motives in running away, there must always remain more or less doubt. After he left he put his friends in danger by forcing them to conceal him. His career as a legislator and as a Governor of California stamps him all the way through as a shifty politician, always scheming for his own interests." At any rate, the field of Southern California was left devoid of leaders, and the Californians made no resistance to the advance of Stockton and Frémont.

Frémont joined forces with Stockton outside of Los Angeles and together, on August 13th, they marched into this city without resistance. The American flag was raised, allegiance received from important citizens, and then, four days later, the province was proclaimed a part of the United States. Thus what might be termed the first reel of the American conquest came to a peaceful finish—came to a "fade-out" of hat waving and rejoicing.

Reel number two, however started out with a scene of an entirely different kind. No serenity was here, no broad smiles, no comfortable smoking of cigarettes. The excitement of scurrying feet and popping muskets played an early part in the scene. As Time, the camera man, steadily ground out his film, Death, the organist, accompanied the act with a crescendo on the keyboard. The crescendo reached its smashing climax well along in the reel, but its early rumbling told of impending trouble.

Stockton and Frémont, after their easy victory over Los Angeles, soon made a move that was to prove for the worst. Under the impression that all would now be easy sailing, they left the City of the Angels in command of Captain Gillespie, and they themselves departed for the north, one by way of land and the other of sea, with the intention of joining in San Francisco. But the City of the Angels proved at this time to be a city of demons.

The Californians, resenting the dictations of Gillespie, sharpened their claws and prepared for revolt. A fearless young fellow by the name of Serbulo Varela took the leadership.

The night of September 23 was a dark one. Dim figures scurried through the twisting, black streets, intent upon organizing a fearless band of revolutionists. They met, these grim figures, with the inspired Varela, and, discussing their plans in whispered breath, became filled with "patriotism and perhaps with wine." No deed could have been too daring for them, no undertaking too hazardous, and they were but a fistful of men. Tightening their belts and their lips, they swooped down upon the adobe dwelling that housed Gillespie and his men. The attack was repulsed successfully, in spite of the determination of the revolutionists, but the affair did not end with the dawn. It was the forerunner of something far more dire. It gave, simply, color, an atmospheric prelude, to Father Time's war-like film.

The following day Gillespie thought it high time to stop such offenses, and he forthwith attempted to arrest the "night-raiders." He attempted to do this, but his attempt was throttled in its infancy; for the revolution had been fed in the meantime and had grown to menacing proportions. Before Gillespie was aware of the situation, he and his men were in the thick of several hundred Californians who meant to do business.

Varela was no longer alone with his miniature army, but was joined by a number of Castro's former officers, among whom were José Maria Flores, José Antonio Carrillo, and Andrés Pico. "The success of the movement which, all things considered, was quite surprising," Cleland says, "was due, however, not so much to the ability of these leaders, as to the popular enthusiasm which supported it and to the swiftness with which the revolutionists carried out their operations—a swiftness made possible by the superior horsemanship for which the Californians had long been noted." The business, for Gillespie, was not a pleasant one. His desperate attempts to meet the situation will be flashed on the screen in a moment. But first observe a "pronunciamento" posted by Serbulo Varela, a document with bristling red hair, but nevertheless of an eloquent turn that inspired the revolutionists to even greater daring than they had yet reached. McGroarty calls this an "immortal declaration of Serbulo Varela and his de-

voted men," and indeed it should be immortal. It is a document that only the spirit of war could inspire. It read:

"Citizens: For a month and a half, by a lamentable fatality resulting from the cowardice and incompetence of the Department chief authorities, we see ourselves subjugated and oppressed by an insignificant force of adventurers from the U. S. of N. America, who, putting us in a condition worse than that of slaves, are dictating to us despotic and arbitrary laws by which, loading us with contributions and onerous taxes, they wish to destroy our industries and agriculture, and to compel us to abandon our property, to be taken and divided among themselves. And shall we be capable of permitting ourselves to be subjugated, and to accept in silence the heavy shame of slavery? Shall we lose the soil inherited from our fathers, which cost them so much blood? Shall we leave our families victims of the most barbarous servitude? Shall we wait to see our wives violated, our innocent children beaten by the American whip, our property sacked, our temples profaned, to drag out a life full of shame and disgrace? No! a thousand times no, compatriots! Death rather than that! Who of you does not feel his heart beat and his blood boil on contemplating our situation? Who will be the Mexican that will not be indignant and rise in arms to destroy our oppressors? We believe there will be not one so vile and cowardly. Therefore, the majority of the inhabitants of this district, justly indignant at our tyrants, we raise the cry of war, and with arms in our hands, we swear with one accord to support the following articles:

"1. We, all the inhabitants of the Department of California, as members of the great Mexican nation, declare that it is and has been our wish to belong to her alone, free and independent.

"2. Therefore the intrusive authority appointed by the invading forces of the U. S. is held as null and void.

"3. All North Americans being foes of Mexico, we swear not to lay down our arms until we see them ejected from Mexican soil.

"4. Every Mexican citizen from 15 to 60 years of age who does not take up arms to carry out this plan is declared a traitor, under penalty of death.

"5. Every Mexican or foreigner who may directly or indirectly aid the foes of Mexico will be punished in the same manner.

"6. All property of resident North Americans, who may have directly or indirectly, taken part with or aided the enemies of Mexico, will be confiscated and used for the expenses of the war, and their persons will be sent to the interior of the Republic.

"7. All who may oppose the present plan will be put to death.

"8. All inhabitants of Santa Barbara and the northern districts will be immediately invited to accede to this plan."

This was the spirit with which the revolutionists attacked Gillespie and his command. He "had taken up his position," says Cleland, "on what was afterwards known as Fort Hill, back of the old Placa Church. * * * His supplies were cut off and a force, overwhelmingly superior to his own, kept him continually invested. The nearest assistance to which he could look was at Monterey, approximately four hundred miles away; and the route over which a courier had to pass, even should he elude the besieging force, lay through a country where every native inhabitant must be counted upon as an enemy." In the face of this dilemma, he held his ground and let one of his men, John Brown, or Juan Flaco, start out with a message appealing for aid to Stockton (who actually was not in Monterey but in San Francisco, one hundred and twenty-five miles farther).

The ride of Paul Revere may have been a famous one, but surely this journey should bear a tinge of almost equal glory. Think of the obstacles to overcome, of the dangers to pass,—and Father Time grinding away at his camera, ready at any moment to "shoot" a picture of wholesale slaughter.

It was on the evening of September 24 that Gillespie wrote a short note on cigarette papers to Frémont, which Brown carefully hid in his hair. Every precaution was taken to make Brown appear innocent of his mission; and to this end, he discarded even his firearms. Thus, with only spurs and riaga, he left Gillespie's camp, slipped through the enemy's lines, and was off! But Fate, the director, was not to dismiss him with an easy escape. His trip was to be made with more hazardous stuff than this! And the hazards began when fifteen Mexicans caught sight of him and gave chase. "He escaped from them," says Cleland, "by jumping his horse, already mortally wounded, across a thirteen foot ravine. Two miles more and the horse died. Lean John walked twenty-seven miles to the ranch of an American, where he secured another horse with which he reached Santa Barbara. From here,

obtaining fresh horses as he could, he rode almost continuously until he arrived at Monterey on the evening of the 29th. Up to this time, according to the report of an eye witness of his arrival, Brown had had neither rest nor sleep since leaving Los Angeles. He slept three hours at Monterey, then pushed on to San Francisco which he reached late on the 30th or early the next morning. The distance covered was over 500 miles. Brown's actual riding time was less than five days. It is a record not easily matched."

But in spite of the spectacular ride, Gillespie was not to be saved the humiliation of handing back the governmental reins to the Spaniards. Cleland tells the story thus:

"Upon receipt of Gillespie's message, Stockton at once ordered Captain Mervine to sail for San Pedro in the *Savannah* with 350 men. At Sausalito, however, the relief ship encountered such a heavy fog that progress was impossible for several days, and Mervine did not reach San Pedro until the 7th of October. As it proved, however, even without this delay, Mervine's assistance would have been too late. On the 30th, even before Lean John's arrival at San Francisco, Gillespie had realized the hopelessness of his position and accepted the only chance of escape by surrendering to the California commander. Under the terms of the agreement the Americans were allowed to withdraw unmolested to San Pedro, without the loss of flags or weapons. Here they were under pledge to embark immediately upon a merchant vessel then in the harbor. But Gillespie, hoping for the arrival of one of Stockton's fleet, delayed this feature of the agreement for four days after his arrival at the harbor. At the end of that time, not knowing whether or not the message carried by Brown had reached Stockton, he spiked the cannon he had brought from Los Angeles on ox carts, threw one of them into the bay, and took his men on board the waiting *Vandalia*. Here Mervine found him when the *Savannah* reached San Pedro on the 7th."

Mervine joined the forces of Gillespie and together they marched toward Los Angeles. Battle followed on the Dominguez rancho, which brought a defeat to the Americans. One of the most powerful assets in the hands of the Mexicans was what was called the "Old Woman's Gun," a bronze four pounder known as a *pedrero*, or swivel gun. This, and the intolerable heat, wrought havoc upon the Americans and they retreated to San Pedro. The

casualties on the American side amounted to four men, with six others dangerously wounded.

After the battle of the Dominguez rancho, an interval of sinister quiet followed. With Flores installed as provisional governor in Los Angeles, the revolt spread throughout the state wherever Americans were not in complete power. The Mexicans regained San Diego and Santa Barbara, and in the north Manuel Castro, Joaquin de le Torre, and a few others started a guerrilla warfare which finally brought on a hotly-contested skirmish known as the Battle of Natividad—of which the Salinas plains were the scene.

According to J. M. Guinn, this battle differed from most of the engagements in the south in that no regular United States troops took part in it. The Salinas Valley, as we have said, was the scene of the encounter. The exact location was about fifteen miles from Monterey at one of the fords of the river.

The battle came about in this way. The Mexicans, whose eyes were so frequently drooping in slumber, had ears that were usually attuned to every passing remark—at least in those days when the state's future hung by a hair. It came to the ears of the Mexicans, then, that a company of some seventy Americans, with over three hundred horses brought from the Sacramento, were on their way from San Juan Bautista to Monterey, where they expected to join Frémont. Straightway, the Californians gathered their scattered bands and prepared for a surprise attack, hoping to get possession of the horses and possibly to delay Frémont's journey to Los Angeles, thus handicapping Stockton in his attack against that city.

Manuel Castro, Francisco Rico, José Chavez, and both the De la Torres, were at the head of the Californians, who numbered about one hundred and fifty grim men. Charles Burroughs and B. K. Thompson commanded the Americans, who for the most part, were settlers and immigrants. The first skirmish occurred when Castro's men caught a small scouting party, composed of whites and several Indians, who were in advance of the Americans. In this encounter, the Californians killed and wounded a number of the scouts, and the first blood sank into the soil of the Salinas Valley.

The next skirmish resulted when the main body of the Americans arrived on the scene. Again the Californians seemed to

have an unwholesome appetite for blood, when, after a short but severe encounter, they inflicted severe injuries upon the Americans and withdrew. Although the casualties suffered by the Americans amounted to four or five, it is reported that the Californians suffered an even heavier loss.

"After the engagement," says J. M. Guinn, "most of the Californians, taking with them Thomas O. Larkin, whom they had captured the night before, retired down the coast toward Los Angeles. The Americans in turn, withdrawing to a ranch near San Juan Bautista, united with Frémont's force of 300 men from Monterey, and a little later moved south to coöperate in the capture of Los Angeles.

"In the meantime, the Californians had been called upon to face another American force, which was coming upon them from an unexpected quarter. The plans of the United States War Department for the conquest of Mexico called for four lines of invasion of the enemy's territory. The first, under General Taylor, aimed at the subjugation of Tamalpais, Neuvo Leon and Coahuila; the second, in charge of General Wool, proposed to subdue the important state of Chihuahua; the third, commanded by General Scott, struck at the Mexican capital by way of Vera Cruz; and the fourth, with which this narrative is alone concerned, had as its objective the conquest of New Mexico and California.

"This last force was under the command of Col. (afterwards Gen.) Stephen W. Kearny, an officer of considerable skill and force of character. Leaving Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, in the spring of 1846, this Army of the West, as Kearny's command was known, marched to Santa Fe and took possession of the province of New Mexico without serious difficulty. From Santa Fe, Kearny set out for the coast, where he expected to coöperate with the naval forces under Stockton and volunteers from the American settlers in taking complete possession of California and establishing there a new government under American control.

"To aid Kearny in the enterprise, the War Department later sent a considerable body of reënforcements to the coast, selecting for this purpose a battalion recruited from the Mormon immigrants in Salt Lake, and a regiment of New York volunteers under Colonel Stephens. The Mormon battalion, as it was called, marched overland; the New York regiment went by sea around

Cape Horn. Neither force, however, reached California in time to be of any actual assistance in the conquest.

"With about 300 dragoons under his command, Kearny left Santa Fé on September 25th over the old Gila River trail, which the Patties had followed twenty years before. Near Socorro, however, he met Kit Carson, who was on his way to Washington with despatches from Stockton. Carson, having left California before the uprising in Los Angeles against Gillespie had broken out, of course knew nothing of the general revolt that had turned the province topsy-turvy since his departure. He therefore informed Kearny that American rule had been established on the coast with little opposition, and that the natives had accepted it in good part.

"Acting upon this information, Kearny sent back nearly two-thirds of his battalion; but having requisitioned the reluctant services of Carson as a guide, he continued his own way to California with the hundred men who remained. At the Colorado, through intercepted despatches, he learned something of the revolt in California; but the information was too meager for him to determine how serious the situation really was.

"In crossing the desert west of the Colorado, Kearny's force experienced the greatest privations. The animals were sometimes without water for forty-eight and sixty hours at a time, so that many of them died of thirst. And it was not until the party reached the little stream known as Carisso Creek that the way again became endurable. By this time, however, both men and beasts were so exhausted that they were in no condition for a serious test of arms."

An abundance of food was at last obtained when, on the 2nd of December, Kearny arrived at Warner's ranch. A reinforcement of thirty-five men joined Kearny on the 5th, whom Stockton had sent under Gillespie and Lieutenant Beal from San Diego, which town was again in Stockton's possession. "There was now between the American position and San Diego, a considerable body of well mounted Californians led by Andres Pico," says Guinn. "This force was camped near the Indian village of San Pasqual, and Kearny, with the approval of Gillespie, resolved to order an attack against it the following morning. Camp was broken, accordingly, before daybreak of December 6th. But the American troops were already exhausted by the long march from

Santa Fe, and as the preceding night had been cold and rainy, their vitality was running at a low ebb. The Californians, moreover, had already been warned of the impending danger and were prepared to meet the advancing force. In the first attack, Captain Johnson, the leader of the charge, was instantly killed, and only the arrival of the main body under Kearny saved the advance guard from annihilation.

"With the appearance of this larger number of the enemy, the Californians fled. But when Kearny's troopers, poorly mounted and somewhat disorganized, were strung out in a long line of pursuit, Pico's forces suddenly wheeled and almost swept the Americans from the field. This contest, the bloodiest in the entire conquest of California, lasted upwards of half an hour before the Californians withdrew. Sixteen or eighteen Americans were killed, most of them with lances, and nearly a score seriously wounded. Among the latter were General Kearny and Captain Gillespie."

Although the Americans were now in the ascendency, they were low in provisions, and the Californians continued to harass them. Reinforcements of one hundred and eighty men under Stockton's command at last reached Kearny, and with this improved army a march was made upon Los Angeles.

Came the excitement with General Flores, whom the Americans encountered on their march into Los Angeles. The American force, coming across five or six hundred Californians, under General Flores, with Andres Pico and Jose Carrillo also taking part, prepared for attack, but dawn found no trace of the enemy. The Californians had apparently taken fright during the night and had hastily retreated.

The last battle was fought on January 9 near the Los Angeles River. It was not of long duration, however, and proved an easy victory for the Americans. The following day Gillespie raised the flag over Los Angeles which, four months before, he had been forced to lower. Never again was this city to bask beneath the Mexican flag.

"After some preliminary negotiations," says J. M. Guinn, "articles of capitulation were accordingly drawn up and signed at the old Cahuenga ranch house, to which Frémont had moved his headquarters. * * *

"The terms of this 'Cahuenga Capitulation,' as it is sometimes

called, were dictated by liberality and common sense. There was to be no revenge for broken paroles, no condemnation of property, no discrimination between Californians and Americans, no restriction against the departure of anyone from the province, no oath of allegiance, even, until peace had been signed between the United States and Mexico. All that was required of the Californians was the surrender of their artillery and public arms (consisting of two cannon and perhaps half a dozen muskets); a pledge to obey the laws of the United States; and a promise to refrain from joining the war again on behalf of Mexico. It was a treaty drawn in the spirit of Polk's desire for conciliation, and contained little to show that it was the result of military conquest."

And on January 13, 1847, when Frémont and Andres Pico signed this document, the war between Californians and Americans was at an end for all time.

CHAPTER XXVII

NUGGETS OF GOLD

Gold! Gold! Gold! Gold means wealth, and wealth is a magnet that draws mankind as perhaps nothing else in the modern world does. When the discovery of gold was made in California in 1848, the cry spread with lightning speed, spanning great distances, intriguing men in almost every quarter of the world. The discovery brought thousands to California, enriching other parts of the state while it impoverished the two counties of our history. For while men were rushing to El Dorado County to ferret out the yellow nuggets, they were quite naturally leaving Monterey and Santa Cruz counties.

Within a very short time after James W. Marshall made his startling discovery on the South Fork of the American River—in the tail race of a saw mill owned by John A. Sutter and under the supervision of Marshall—the news took wings and was soon soaring over the length of California and, indeed, throughout the United States. The fact that poor means of communication had heretofore handicapped the country now seemed to be of no importance, for it is certain that the news traveled and traveled fast; and in traveling brought hordes to the Pacific coast.

"Not only from every available sailing vessel on the Atlantic seaboard of America chartered and overloaded with passengers headed for the gold fields," says McGroarty, "but the harbor of San Francisco soon beheld also within its portals ship after ship from every sea in all parts of the earth. And while it is true that the hosts which came were composed largely of Americans, the muddy streets and hillsides of the old Mission town of Yerba Buena were colorful with the Oriental stranger, the Celt, the Teuton, the yellow-haired Scandinavian and men of every race and clime.

"Then ensued a wild, free-handed life that was without precedent to guide it and that, when it passed at last, vanished to re-

turn no more. The farmer boys of New England and of the Eastern states, the clerk, the lawyer and even the adventurous clergyman, found themselves suddenly relieved from the staid provincial restriction which had hedged them in from birth. They had left their mothers, sisters, and sweethearts behind them. Sunday came and the bell of the meeting-house no longer rang in their ears. The few women that the exodus had gathered with it were bedizened and painted and not the best company for unsophisticated villagers for the first time set free from a century of accumulated decency."

With all this rush to the gold fields, as said, Monterey and Santa Cruz counties found themselves rapidly being drained of their important citizens.

It was probably on the 29th of May that Monterey first heard of the gold find, for on that day Walter Colton made the following entry in his diary:

"Our town was startled out of its quiet dreams today, by the announcement that gold had been discovered on the American Fork. The men wondered and talked, and the women, too; but neither believed. The sibyls were less skeptical; they said the moon had, for several nights, appeared not more than a cable's length from the earth; that a white ram had been seen playing with an infant; and that an owl had rung the church bells."

The excitement continued to surge through Monterey and within a month had reached a feverish point. The following entry was made in Colton's diary on June 20th:

"My messenger has returned with specimens of gold; he dismounted in a sea of upturned faces. As he drew forth the yellow lumps from his pockets, and passed them around among the eager crowd, the doubts, which had lingered till now, fled. * * * The excitement produced was intense; and many were soon busy in their hasty preparations for a departure to the mines. The family who had kept house for me caught the moving infection. Husband and wife were both packing up; the blacksmith dropped his hammer, the carpenter his plane, the mason his trowel, the farmer his sickle, the baker his loaf, and the tapster his bottle. All were off for the mines, some on horses, some on carts, and some on crutches, and one went in a litter. An American woman, who had recently established a boarding-house here, pulled up stakes, and went off before her lodgers had even time to pay their

bills. Debtors ran, of course. I have only a community of women left, and a gang of prisoners with here and there a soldier, who will give his captain the slip at the first chance."

Indeed, everybody and everybody's brother was feeling the lure and answering it, until, as Cleland quotes from another author: "Monterey, San Francisco, Sonoma, San Jose and Santa Cruz are emptied of their male population. * * * Every bowl, tray, warming pan, and piggin has gone to the mines. Everything, in short, that has a scoop in it that will hold sand and water. All the iron has been worked up into crow-bars, pick axes and spades."

Another of the countless examples of people deserting Monterey was that of B. P. Kooser, editor of the *San Andreas Independent.* The following appeared in that paper in 1858:

"At the time gold was discovered in California, we lived in Monterey, and had been more than a year a resident of the State. The gold was discovered in January, at Sutter's mill; the very first report of the richness of the mines were accompanied by the gold itself, as a voucher to the news. We well remember with what pleasure we lifted a saucer full of the precious metal, brought down in February, 1848, from the Old Diggins, by a Frenchman named Rousshane, an old resident of Monterey. He told his story and exhibited the gold, which convinced all of the wonderful discovery. Next Sutter Creek was discovered; then in rapid succession, gold was found in all the rivers south to the San Joaquin. On the fourth of July, 1848, miners were working at Ford's bar, on the Middle Fork of the American River, already a soldier named Haggerty had at that place taken out 65 pounds of dust. In September, 1848, we visited the mines, intending to work at the Hagtown diggings; but in crossing the Mokelumne, at what is now known as Staple's ranch and ferry, we were informed of rich gold discoveries up the river. Our party started up, prospecting in the banks as we travelled, but did not see the color until our arrival at Gig Bar (now bridged), where Tom Fallon, Mide Lodge, and John Tabor were mining and had a store. Gold dust was selling at twelve dollars per ounce, and all kinds of coarse food at two dollars per pound. * * *"

In spite of the fact that we today see a richness of agricultural soil in the counties of Monterey and Santa Cruz that can scarcely be bettered anywhere, we can readily understand how

the early settlers felt the urge to seek out the gleaming yellow flakes in the mining regions, even though it necessitated leaving the counties of our history. Stories, reputed to be true, are told of the phenomenal "finds" in the gold regions—finds that literally made men rich over night. In illustration of this, Cleland says:

"Two men in seven days obtained $17,000 from a trench a few feet wide and a hundred feet long. A soldier on twenty days' furlough, who spent half his time going to and from the mines, made $1,500 in ten days of actual mining. Seven Americans, with the aid of fifty Indians, whom they paid presumably in cheap merchandise, took out 275 pounds of gold in a little more than six weeks. Ten men made $1,500 each in ten days. A single miner obtained two pounds and a half of gold in fifteen minutes. A group of Mexicans were seen gambling, with a hundred pounds of gold dust and nuggets serving as the 'bank.' In less than half an hour a man picked between five and six ounces of gold 'out of an open hole in the rock, as fast as one can pick the kernels out of a lot of well cracked shell barks.' A rancher named Sinclair, employing Indians as helpers, cleaned up fourteen pounds (avoirdupois *not* troy) in a week's time. On a tour of the mines the editor of the *Californian*, which had recently been established at Monterey, averaged $100 a day, using only a shovel, pick, and pan.

"The striking thing about the mining industry as it was carried on for the first few months, however, was not the lucky finds of a few; but the assured profit for practically every one who engaged in it. The average return was from $10 to $50 a day, and by August it was reliably estimated that $600,000 had been secured from the various 'diggings.' "

Many harrowing tales are told of the men and women who made the trip from the east to the west to be on hand at these aforesaid diggings. There was a great influx of people from the eastern states, and naturally many stories of hardships recounted of their perilous, hasty journeys California-ward. Of course, so many people coming to California naturally boosted the state as a whole and greatly increased its population. For the time, however, that is, during the gold rush, the mining fields were being populated at the expense of Santa Cruz and Monterey counties. The towns of Santa Cruz and Monterey, as we have shown by example, were almost totally devastated of people. The scenes of

excitement of the day before—the rambling, adobe-house lined streets of Monterey that had felt the ring of high-pitched voices and the trampling of many feet—were now desolate and quiet. In the twinkling of an eye the crowds poured out of the "Old Pacific Capital," and there it lay slumbering again much like an out-of-the-way cemetery. This condition, however, was not to last for long. Modern times have infused these counties with new life, as will be shown in the chapters following, making living profitable and pleasant today, and promising an even more brilliant future.

PART TWO

CHAPTER XXVIII

MONTEREY COUNTY

THE CITY OF MONTEREY

You have followed the historic events throughout the state that moulded Monterey and Santa Cruz counties. You have seen the early and memorable work of Portola, the discoverer. You have followed the pioneers across the plains, coming to sun-bathed California. You have followed the "makings" of Santa Cruz and Monterey counties only through historic incident that necessarily involved other parts of the state. From the beginnings of the Bear Flag Revolt, as said, we should devote more space to the two counties proper. It will be the purpose of "Part Two" to deal exclusively with these counties, to repeat a synopsis of their beginnings, to bring events up to the present time, and to discuss important historic landmarks in each county. Inasmuch as Monterey had the earliest birth, we shall deal first with it.

A brief resumé of Monterey County, which should refresh the memory of the reader and make the events to follow more understandable as well as to reveal heretofore unrecorded data, based, in part, upon "The Hand Book of Monterey and Vicinity," as printed by Bacon and Company of San Francisco in 1875, follows:

Monterey was one of the original counties, being created in 1850. The southern line of the boundary was changed several times before its position became permanently located. In 1851 the area of Monterey County was enlarged by the shifting of the line farther south. It was described in the terms of San Louis Obispo County as running from a point on the summit of the Coast Range. In 1847 San Benito was created out of a part of Monterey County. Since that date the boundaries have remained the same. The county seat, as we shall presently see, was removed from Monterey to Salinas in the year 1873.

It was early in the spring of 1602 that the Viceroy of Mexico, acting under instructions from Philip III of Spain, who was anxious to obtain possession of California, dispatched Don Sebastian Viscaíño, in command of three small vessels, on a voyage of discovery up the coast. Their passage was rendered extremely slow by prevailing head winds, and the exploration of the peninsula, now known as Lower California, was not completed until the beginning of November. On the 10th of that month they arrived at the harbor of San Diego, where they remained ten days, and departed highly pleased with the climate, soil, and peaceful disposition of the Indians. After landing on Santa Catalina Island, and at other places, for the purpose of celebrating Mass, they rounded the Point of the Pines, and cast anchor in the storm-sheltered waters of our beautiful bay on the 10th day of December, 1602.

Viscaíño, who was probably the first white man to place foot upon the soil of this town, took possession of the country in the name of the King of Spain. The holy sacrament was then partaken of under the spreading branches of an oak tree, at the mouth of a small ravine, and the spot named Monterey, in honor of Gaspar de Zuniga, Count de Monterey, the Viceroy of Mexico, who had fitted out the expedition.

Viscaíño was unprepared to establish a Mission; so, after a stay of eighteen days, he continued on his voyage; first, however, taking a full description of the country, its productions, and the character of the natives. He described the country as being clad in the deepest verdure, the soil most productive, the natives extremely docile, and, therefore, easily converted. Although Viscaíño hoped soon to return with material for the founding of a Mission, his hopes were never realized, and Monterey still remained a wilderness.

Over 166 years elapsed ere Monterey was again visited by the white man. On July 14, 1769, Gaspar de Portola, Governor of Lower California, at the head of a party of sixty-five persons, set out from San Diego to rediscover Monterey. He arrived at Monterey, but failing to identify the place, merely erected a cross and proceeded on his way north.

The third attempt to establish a settlement at Monterey, however, proved more successful. The following extract from a letter of the leader of the expedition to Father Francisco Palou,

gives a graphic account of the ceremonies attending the formal founding of the Mission of San Carlos de Monterey, by Padre Junipero Serra, on that memorable day, June 3rd, 1770:

"On the 31st of May, 1770, by favor of God, after rather a painful voyage of a month and a half, the packet *San Antonio*, commanded by Don Juan Perez, arrived and anchored in this beautiful port of Monterey, which is unadulterated in any degree from what it was when visited by the expedition of Don Sebastian Viscaiño, in 1602. It gave me great consolation to find that the land expedition had arrived eight days before us, and that Father Crespi and all others were in good health. On the third of June, being the holy day of Pentecost, the whole of the officers of sea and land, and all the people, assembled on a bank at the foot of an oak, where we caused an altar to be erected, and the bells rang; we then chanted the *Veni Creator*, blessed the water, erected and blessed a grand cross, hoisted the royal standard, and chanted the first mass that was ever performed in this place; we afterwards sung the *Salve* to Our Lady before an image of the illustrious Virgin, which occupied the altar; and at the same time preached a sermon, concluding the whole with a *Te Deum*. After this the officers took possession of the country in the name of the King, (Charles III) our Lord, whom God preserve. We then all dined together in a shady place on the beach; the whole ceremony being accompanied by many vollies and salutes by the troops and vessels."

Later, on the same day, was solemnized the first funeral, being that of a caulker named Alejo Nino, who died on board the *San Antonio* a few days previous. He was buried with the honors of the Church at the foot of the cross they had erected.

"The *San Antonio* soon sailed for Mexico, leaving behind Father Junipero, five priests, Lieutenant Pedro Fages and thirty soldiers. The Indians, as Viscaiño had predicted, were ready converts, and "seated under those dark Monterey pines, told ghostly stories of how brightly the crosses shone that each white man wore on his breast the first time they had passed through there, not knowing the place; and of the great cross that was planted by Portola before he knew he was at the spot he coveted; how it would grow at night till its point rested among the stars, glistening the while with a splendor that outshone the sun; that when their superstitious dread wore off they had approached,

planted arrows and feathers in the earth around it, and hung strings of sardines, as their choicest offering, upon its arms."

Monterey was at once selected as the capital of Alta California, and Portola appointed as its first governor. Owing to the small amount of available agricultural land within the semicircle of hills surrounding Monterey, the Mission was soon removed to the neighboring valley of Carmelo. The presidio or military establishment, however, still remained at Monterey. This consisted of an enclosure about 300 yards square, containing a chapel, storehouses, offices, residences and barracks for the soldiers. It was located where the Catholic church now stands. A rude fort was built on the hill overlooking the bay, and armed with a few small cannon. These constituted the nucleus of the future town.

Calmly the years drifted away, scarcely causing a ripple upon the slowly swelling tide of progress. Governor succeeded governor, and each was content to render tribute to the Viceroy of Mexico, while the fruitful land over which he ruled maintained him in rather luxurious style. In 1822, Mexico, becoming tired of Spanish rule, established herself as a separate empire. Upon receiving intelligence of this important event, Governor Pablos Vicente de Sola summoned a council of the principal military officials and church dignitaries at Monterey, and formally announced the action of their mother country. The council unanimously decided that henceforth California was subject to Mexico alone. The oaths were changed and Sola became the first Mexican governor, or more correctly, "Political Chief of the Territory." The apathetic inhabitants offered no resistance, and the change was effected without a struggle.

In 1828 the Mexican Congress adopted a plan of colonization, which authorized the Governors of dependent territories to grant unoccupied lands to all persons who properly petitioned for them, and agreed to cultivate and reside upon them a certain portion of the time. These grants were subject to the approval of the territorial legislature. Many of the old settlers availed themselves of the privilege thus accorded them and obtained a title to vast ranchos, then of little value, but destined in after years to render those who were fortunate enough to hold them immensely wealthy.

The harbor of Monterey was visited about this time by numer-



HALL OF RECORDS IN 1834, MONTEREY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

ous vessels, which realized an enormous profit by trading their assorted cargoes for hides.

On the 25th of September, 1834, Hijar, Director of Colonization, arrived at Monterey on the brig *Natalie*, for the purpose of secularizing the Missions. The *Natalie*, which was the same vessel in which Napoleon the Great made his memorable escape from Elba, was thrown upon the beach by a storm and totally wrecked. The wreckage has since been salvaged and may today be seen in the Monterey Chamber of Commerce offices. The secularization scheme was successfully accomplished, and the missions placed under the charge of Governor Figueroa.

Figueroa, who was the best ruler California had yet seen, died on the 29th of September, 1835. Then ensued a series of insurrections which were terminated only by the American conquest. A dissension first arose between Nicholas Gutierrez, who was governor after Figueroa's death, and Juan Bautista Alvarado, Secretary of the Territorial Deputation, concerning a question of Custom House discipline. Alvarado, who was a native Californian of talent and education, insisted so strongly upon his position that Gutierrez ordered his arrest. Before the warrant could be served Alvarado had escaped, and found refuge in the cabin of Isaac Graham, a pioneer of Santa Cruz. Here a plan was laid to seize Monterey and declare the independence of California. They organized a company of one hundred natives under Jose Castro, and fifty riflemen led by Graham; entered Monterey at night; imprisoned the Governor and his soldiers in the presidio; and after firing one shot from a four-pounder, obtained possession of the town. Alvarado was declared Governor, and Guadalupe Vallejo placed at the head of the military.

Early in 1840, Governor Alvarado, who had become exceedingly jealous of all foreigners, especially of his former friend Graham, pretended to have received information of a deep-laid plot to overturn the government. Castro was ordered to arrest all connected with the conspiracy, and by a strategic movement succeeded in surprising and arresting nearly a hundred persons, principally Americans. Afterward, about twenty of the supposed ringleaders were transported in chains to San Blas. In July of the same year, the American man-of-war *St. Louis* and a French ship arrived at Monterey for the purpose of demanding satisfaction. Alvarado was so badly frightened at their arrival that he

fled to the interior, on a pretext of business, and did not return to the Capital until the coast was again clear. For two years everything remained quiet.

In July, 1842, the foreigners, so summarily banished, unexpectedly returned on board a vessel furnished them by the Mexican Government, which had not approved of Alvarado's uncalled-for action. They brought news that General Micheltorena had been appointed to both the civil and military command of California. He arrived at San Diego in August, and was traveling northward in grand style, when intelligence reached him that caused him suddenly to stop at Los Angeles. This was that Commander Jones, in command of the frigate *United States* and sloop-of-war *Cyane*, had taken possession of the country, and hoisted the Stars and Stripes at Monterey. Alvarado surrendered on the 20th of October, and California was, apparently, a portion of the American Union. The next day, however, Jones discovered that he had made a blunder—that Mexico was not yet at war with the United States—and therefore he gracefully hauled down the flag and apologized. Micheltorena now came to Monterey and assumed the duties of his office. He ruled until February 1st, 1845, when he was ousted by Vallejo, Alvarado and Castro, and Don Pío Pico placed in his stead.

The year 1846 was a notable one in the annals of Monterey. On July 7th, of that year, Commodore Sloat, who had arrived in the U. S. frigate *Savannah* a few days previously, dispatched Captain Mervine, at the head of 250 men, on shore, with instructions to hoist the American flag over Monterey. Amid the firing of cannon from the shipping in the harbor and the cheers of the assembled citizens, the glorious Stars and Stripes were raised, and a proclamation read, declaring California henceforth a portion of the United States. The people accepted the change with characteristic resignation, and Walter Colton was appointed the first Alcalde under the new regime.

Colton, who had previously been Chaplain of the frigate *Congress*, held the office of alcalde for three years, during which time he figured prominently in the affairs of the town. In connection with Semple, a pioneer from Kentucky, he established the first newspaper ever published in California. It was called the *Californian*, and made its first appearance on Saturday, August 15th, 1846. It was printed on paper originally intended for the manu-

facture of cigaritos, and was a little larger than a sheet of foolscap. The office was resurrected from the remains of a small concern formerly used for printing Roman Catholic tracts in Spanish. There being no W in the Spanish alphabet, they were compelled to use two V's (thus, VV) whenever a W occurred. The *Californian*, it is needless to say, was eagerly welcomed, and soon attained quite a circulation. It was finally merged into the *Alta-Californian* when the latter paper was established at San Francisco.

The first jury summoned in California was empaneled by Colton, on September 4th, 1846. It was composed of one-third Mexicans, one-third Californians, and the other third Americans. This new system of trial proved eminently satisfactory, as it always must when properly administered. To Colton also belongs the honor of having erected the building, intended for a town hall and schoolhouse, which bears his name.

In 1847 Monterey witnessed her first stage production, enacted in what was originally a sailors' boarding house. A company of strolling players from Los Angeles in this year staged "Putnam, in the Lion Son of '76." However, Monterey was not long to be entertained with dramatic work on the stage, but drama of an entirely different kind; for in '48 came the gold rush which almost depopulated the town. We shall have more to say of the first theatre in California anon.

On the 3rd of June, 1849, (the 79th anniversary of the settlement of Monterey) Governor Riley issued a "Proclamation recommending the formation of a State Constitution, or plan of a Territorial Government." In pursuance of this proclamation, the Convention for forming a State Constitution met in Colton Hall—which had been completed that year—on the first of the following September. Monterey was represented by the following delegates: H. W. Halleck, T. O. Larkin, C. T. Botts, P. Ord and L. Dent.

The labors of the Convention were successful beyond its most sanguine expectations. A Constitution, remarkable for the wisdom and liberality of its provisions, was adopted, and shortly afterward ratified by the people. Upon adjournment, a salute of thirty-one guns was fired, which echoed grandly back from the pine-wreathed hills, proclaiming that soon a queen would step forth among the sisterhood of states.

An account of this convention and attendant circumstances brings back the glamour of the times. As told briefly by A. C. Jochmus of Pacific Grove, we learn that:

"Doña Dolores Osio (resident of Monterey in 1924) an only surviving relative of the old Constitutional signer, Don Jacinto Roderiguez, gives the following version of the signing of the historical document framed in Colton Hall in the year 1849, the Constitution which endured without change or amendment until 1879: 'Don Roderiguez invited his felow delegates of the Convention to be his guests at his home (located on Alvarado Street). The old boys dined and imbibed in "vino tinto" and other good cheer until they were unable to return to the convention hall, consequently, the document was sent for and signed upon an old fashioned mahogany table, still in the possession of Mrs. Osio. The personnel of the convention were: Mariano Guadaloupe Vallejo, Antonio Maria Pico, Jacinto Roderiguez, these three were born in Monterey; Pablo de la Guerra, Jose Antonio Carrillo, Manuel Dominguez, Miguel de Pedrorena, Dr. Robert Semple, who became a partner of Colton in the *Californian*, and who was the President of the Convention; Wm. G. Macey, J. Ross Brown, Dr. Wm. M. Gwin, Elam Brown, Joseph Aram, J. D. Hoppe, K. H. Dimmick, Julian Hanks, Pedro Sainsevan, Thomas O. Larkin, Captain Henry W. Halleck, Lewis Dent, son-in-law of Gen. U. S. Grant; Henry Hill, Chas. T. Botts, Pacificus Ord, John A. Sutter, Wm. Stuart, Joseph Hobson, Thomas L. Vermeule, O. M. Wurzencraft, B. M. Moore, Wm. E. Shannon, Winfield S. Sherwood, John McDougal, Elisha O. Crosby, M. McCarber, Francis Lippett, Rodman M. Price, Myron Norton, J. M. Jones, Jose M. Covarrubias, Steven C. Foster, composer of "Old Folks at Home"; Henri Tefft, J. M. Hollingsworth, Abel Stearns, Hugh Reid, Benjamin S. Lippencott, Joseph P. Walker, Jacob R. Snyder, L. W. Hastings, Edward Gilbert, who was killed in a duel by Captain William Denver in San Francisco in 1852; and A. J. Ellis. The clergymen who officiated at the openings of the sessions were: Padre Antonio Ramirez, Rev. Mr. Willey and Rev. Mr. Hunt.

" 'The Seal that was affixed to the document was designed by Major Robert Seldon Garnett, presented to the convention by Caleb Lyon and engraved by Albert Kuner, a native of Bavaria.

" 'Garnett was breveted Captain and Major for gallant and meritorious conduct at Monterey in 1849; Lyon was appointed

Consul at Shanghai, China, by President Polk in 1845. The original seal is now in the custody of the Native Sons of the Golden West and rests in their lodge hall, in the Custom House.

" 'Bayard Taylor, poet, essayist and travel writer, walked from San Francisco to Monterey in 1849 and was a spectator at the proceedings of the Constitutional Convention.

" 'Lieut. Lucien Loser was sent by Governor Mason, August 30, 1849, to Washington with dispatches. To reach the Capital he was obliged to sail from Monterey to Peru in a brig, thence to Panama. Crossing the isthmus he took a steamer to Jamaica, then to New Orleans from where he telegraphed to the President.' "

Although the convention accomplished such great results, it temporarily injured the prospects of Monterey by the passage of a resolution removing the State capital to San Jose.

From this time forward Monterey was never again to be the center of California law-making; and she was to lose much by it. However, she arose in other ways. It was in the same year, in 1849, that the Monterey Library Association was organized; and the means of wisdom was put within the reach of all. This association was, it is believed, the first Public Library in California. Containing about five thousand volumes purchased in New York and treating upon the various subjects of human knowledge, together with a large collection of Maps, Congressional and Legislative Documents, and well-selected American, English and Spanish books, it was a permanent nucleus "around which," said the *Morning Sentinel*, "the friends of literary and social refinement, and elevation, may cordially unite." This was perhaps the beginning of the Monterey Peninsula's literary trend—a trend that has made this section famous.

By an Act of Legislature, passed April 30th, 1851, the town was duly incorporated. Philip A. Roach, who was then Alcalde, was elected the first Mayor. His administration was unmarked by any events that call for special comment. He was succeeded by Gilbert Murdock, of the firm of Curtis & Murdock, merchants, who was followed by W. H. McDowell.

Although Monterey did not long remain a city, she kept her city council busy with legal enactments until, on May 11th, 1853, an Act was approved which amended her charter and vested the control of her municipal affairs in a board of three trustees. Early

records of the City Council and Board of Trustees, which are still preserved in the city archives, are interesting, not alone from the standpoint of their comparative antiquity but from the fact that they throw light upon the early businesses of the city and lend "atmosphere." The following are excerpts from the "Meeting of the Ayuntamiento of Monterey at Colton Hall on January 2, 1850, at 10:00 P. M." The men present were:

P. A. Roach ---------- 1st Alcalde
Frcs. L. Riplety ----------2nd Alcalde
James McKinlay ---------- 1st Regidor
Jos. Boston ----------2nd Regidor
Benito Diaz ----------3rd Regidor
John O'Neil ---------- 4th Regidor
Wm. L. Johnson ----------Lindico

On January 7th, 1850, with all present, the following were voted on:

Sec. 2. "That all hotels, taverns, barrooms, booths, or tents engaged in selling wines or liquors be taxed ten dollars per month payable monthly in advance. Adopted unanimously."

This liquor tax was a source of a bountiful income, for almost every neighbor "and his dog" drank liquor. It was a diversion that is not so heartily indulged in today. But the Alcoholic Yesterdays, whether or not healthful for the drinkers, certainly infused life into the city treasury. A "receipe" printed in the *Morning Sentinel* in this era before the advent of the malted milk and the fudge sundae, about reveals the spirits of the times. In spite of a slight digression, we take the liberty of printing the "household hint." It reads:

"Take one pint of good whisky, stir in well one spoonful of whisky; then add another pint of whisky; beat carefully with a spoon, and keep pouring in whisky. Fill a large bowl with water, and make the servant set it out of your reach. Take a small tumbler, pour in two spoonsful of water; pour out the water and fill up with whisky, and add to the above. Flavor with whisky to suit your taste."

Also the rattling of poker chips sounded sweetly to the ears of the town hall, for here was another diversion on which to lay a tax. To this end the following article was adopted:

Sec. 3. "That all taverns or other places where gambling is

carried on shall pay ten dollars per month in addition to the foregoing (liquor tax) payable monthly in advance."

"Artists" of the drama were not exempt from taxation as the following shows:

Sec. 5. "That all Theatrical companies, circus companies, companies of rope dancers, or any other public diversion to pay ten dollars per month, payable in advance.—adopted."

The type of entertainers in those days differed, for the most part, from the theatrical professionals of today. Their monthly ten dollar tax covered a multitude of sins, but their antics were nevertheless usually appreciated. Stages, other than that in the famous First Theatre in California, soon sprang into being. An account given in the *Monterey Cypress* on April 18, 1891, of an entertainment is as amusing now as it was thrilling in that dim but not so very distant day.

"Last evening at the opera house," ran the story, "a sort of stirring up took place among the dwellers of Monterey. Pawnee Medicine Company No. 1 advertised the best show outside of San Francisco and judging from the appreciative audience that greeted them, all in the face of rain they filled the bill. This old reliable company headed by the long haired doctor whose face adorns every bottle of 'Too-re,' is praised unanimously by the press of the State. They go to Santa Clara next summer, are now in Calaveras County. Company No. 3 are traveling up the Sacramento.

"Messrs. Burgess, the proprietors, are fair and upright business men, residents of California, and their general office and factory for the renowned Pawnee remedies is at 937 Howard Street, San Francisco.

"Tonight will be their last in Monterey. Don't miss the treat. Admission 25 and 15 cents."

The city not only went avidly after taxes, but, in turn, practically gave land away. At a motion of Mr. Boston, the following was adopted:

"Resolved that all the public lands belonging to this town shall be granted to actual residents at a uniform price and granted only to such as have not heretofore received grants."

Further proceedings on this subject on January 21, 1850, were at the motion of Mr. O'Neil:

"Resolved that all lands purchased of the Town of Monterey

shall be improved by the purchaser of the same within the space of Two Years by putting up a house, and designating the corners of such lands by proper posts or land marks and if not complied with within such time such lands shall revert to the town."

Considerable agitation over the trusteeship of Colton Hall arose at one time. The following letters and enactments will make clear just how the dispute arose and in what manner it was settled. From the report of the meeting of the Ayuntamiento at Colton Hall, January 14th, 1850, we find that:

"His honor, the Alcalde, appointed J. Boston in conjunction with himself to enquire whether the building known as the Cuartel, or Government House, belongs to the municipality, and also to confer with D. King in relation to a Hospital Communication from Trustee Colton in relation to Colton Hall. On motion of Mr. O'Neil, the Secretary be instructed to inform the trustee appointed by Mr. Colton, formerly Alcalde, that the Ayuntamiento consider themselves 'ex-officio' trustees of the building known as Colton Hall.—Adopted."

On motion of Mr. Diaz: "Resolved that the thanks of this body be tendered to the former trustees appointed by Mr. Colton for the good charge they have taken of the building known as Colton Hall.—Adopted."

And then the following to the former trustees of Colton Hall, "Messrs. D. Spence and others," dated Monterey, January 15, 1850:

"Gentlemen: Your communication relative to the Trusteeship of Colton Hall has been received by the Ayuntamiento and the board instructs me, their secretary, to say—That according to the trust placed in your hands by Mr. Colton it is to remain 'pro tempore' or for the time being 'until some provision is made emanating from the action of the community.'

"Now the board does not consider Mr. Colton can entail his authority after the withdrawal from the official station, for an indefinite length of time.

"Furthermore the board considers itself 'ex-officio' custodian of the public property, and as this building is certainly public property according to the report of 'Commissioners to inquire into the accounts of Mr. Colton' filed in the Alcaldes office, it appears this edifice was built from the proceeds of 20,000 varas of the public domain and from moneys accruing from the public

revenue. As there are claims now pending for building materials for which the applicants look to this board and not the trustees appointed by Mr. Colton it is further evidence that this board as the direct representatives of the people have the control of the public buildings.

"With all due deference to your opinion and charge placed in your hands of which you have taken such good care, the Board would call your attention to the following resolutions passed by them.

" 'Resolved. That all the public property belonging to the town be placed under the wardenship of the Ayuntamiento as the proper representatives of the people.

" 'Resolved. That the thanks of this board be tendered to the trustees of Colton Hall as appointed by Mr. Colton for the manner they have transmitted the building.'

"The Board does not wish to imply that the saloon can be used at present for any purpose consistent with decency and good order.

"In behalf of the Board I have the honor to be

"Your obt. humble Svt.

(Signed) Joseph Boston."

Another interesting item taken up by the Ayuntamiento was the lighting of the homes. Streets in those days were dark. Lights shining through windows would help, not only to disperse darkness but marauders and thugs as well. Hence the following enactment was adopted in January of 1850:

"Sec. 4. All persons shall on dark nights expose a lantern (containing a light) in some conspicuous part of their homes, or dwellings, or be liable to a fine of fifty cents for the first omission, one dollar for the second, and for any other omissions they shall be liable to such penalties as the Alcalde may in his discretion seem fit." [sic.]

It was not until 1891 that Monterey had electric lights. In March of that year the Monterey Electric Light and Development Company formulated contracts with the Edison Electric Light Company for a plant to supply a much-needed effulgence to Monterey and Pacific Grove. The contract for the engine was let to Gregory and Company, of San Francisco, the machinery being known as Payne's automatic engine. The power was furnished by H. Prinz, who erected a brick plant on his property

"adjoining his planing mill." This system originally had a capacity of 540 incandescent lights of 16 candle power each, "which," said a contemporary newspaper account, "will be all that Monterey and Pacific Grove will need for years to come." 540 lights of 16 candle power! This seems frightfully inadequate to us, and yet, in those days, it was a blessing; it was far superior to the lanterns which had, up to that time, been in use.

Another forward step of this same year (February, 1891), we shall mention here, although it did not concern the Ayuntamiento. This step was the installation of telephones. The lines had already been in use between Salinas and San Francisco and were now extended to Monterey. It was an instrument "of the latest improved order," over which" a whisper could be heard at either end of the line."

Such was the progress of the town and the duties of the Ayuntamiento. But, as said, Monterey was deprived of the name of "City" in 1853. Her condition from that time forward was not as prosperous as it probably should have been.

In December, 1858, W. Lovett, Assessor of Monterey County, made a report to the Surveyor General of the resources of Monterey County, showing precisely how conditions stood throughout the county. The following data, gleaned from this report, will throw light upon the industries and activities of the era:

"Farming.—The industrious portion of our agricultural community are mostly located on the eastern side of the Pajaro River, on the lands known as the Vallejo Rancho, and the valley of the Salinas, giving their whole attention to farming—a well disposed, intelligent and order loving people. It is sincerely to be hoped that at an early day the Spanish land titles will be properly segregated from the public domain, and patents be issued for the land, so that the laboring man can purchase under good and valid titles, and thus become more permanently settled, with health and plenty surrounding him, under the shade of his own 'vine and fig tree.'

"Agricultural Products.—Aware of the importance that is attached to the returns of the Assessors in estimating the quantity of Agricultural products of the State, I will take occasion to remark that the results arrived at by me are collected from a knowledge of the amount that has been gathered. During the early part of the season it is customary, I believe, for the Asses-

sors to ascertain the amount of seed sown and the number of acres planted, and base the calculation upon the probable yield. Yet we find that by calculating the usual yield at so much the acre we fall short of what has been actually gathered; as in some localities the calculation would be correct, while in others, owing to the dryness of the season, or other unforeseen circumstances, the crop will fall far short. I have endeavored to arrive at the amount we have harvested in this county, and, owing to that fact and the lateness of our harvest season, some delay has been caused in sending you my report. I feel satisfied, however, that the amount as set forth is a close approximation to the yield of this county.

"Stock and Beef Cattle.—The native Californians have, within the last two years, paid unusual attention to improving their stock. The result has been a large increase of their cattle and a decided improvement in blood; the beef cattle of this county commanding a higher price than any of the more southern counties. —It is here worthy of remark that, while in the lower counties the amount of neat cattle has been decreasing, in this county they have, for the last three years, gradually increased in quantity and quality, and this has been mostly accomplished by the care and attention of the old Californians to their stock raising. As yet but few Americans who are permanently located here have given any attention to the raising of beef cattle. Some few of a migratory character, are located in spots about the county, suddenly disposing of their cattle and then disappearing from amongst us.

"Horses.—Stock raising being the prominent feature of this county, more attention has been given to that branch of business than any other, and I feel assured that this county has advantages over any other in the State for stock raising. I am borne out in this conclusion from the fact of the increase for the last three years and the fine appearance of the stock. Stock raisers are taking much pains to improve their breeds by the introduction of some of the finest Eastern blood and crossing with the Californian. The results are a choice quality of half breeds that must soon become a distinguished qualification in horses of this country.

"Fruit.—There is at San Juan the orchard confirmed to the Catholic Church; contains about 360 apple and pear trees; has

produced the last season about 1800 quintals of fruit. At the Mission of Carmel there are about 40 trees bearing fruit; also, at San Antonio, there are several huertes, or gardens, where fruit and grapes are raised of very fine quality. In the garden of the San Felipe, or Pacheco Rancho, located at the foot of the mountain of the Pacheco Pass, in the mild and salubrious climate of the Pacheco valley, there are some beautiful almond and olive trees. This last named locality is evidently destined to be the garden spot of our county, on account of the exceeding richness of its soil, valuable and desirable location, besides having the advantage of being protected from the cold winds which sweep with much violence over other portions of our valleys during the summer months.

"Wool.—The wool trade of this county amounts to 190,000 pounds of wool clipped this season, mostly of a superior quality of French and Spanish Marino crossed with the American and Spanish sheep. This is evidently destined to be the great wealth of the county at no distant period; the lands and climate being admirably adapted to sheep raising, and much attention is being given by growers to improving their stock by the introduction of the best blooded sheep from the celebrated Patterson stock of New York, and others of equal fineness and value.

"Stone Quarries.—At Carmel near Monterey City, are employed about 60 men, under the management of Bassett & Emery, who have furnished a large quantity of stone for the United States Government; the stone is dressed and finished at the quarry before shipment. It has the reputation of being an excellent and durable granite.

"Whale Fisheries.—At Monterey, under the superintendence of Captain Davenport, an experienced whaleman, the 'Cummings gun,' a California invention, has been used with very satisfactory results; and for coast whaling, supersedes any mode that has yet been adopted. * * *

"Library.—The 'Monterey Library Association,' at Monterey, contains about 1,200 volumes, mostly historical works. It is the oldest established library in the state.

"Saw Mills.—One in this county owned by D. S. Gregory and H. Degraw, situated on the Point Pinos rancho, 60 horse power steam, cuts 20,000 feet of lumber in 24 hours; a superior quality

of pine for planking streets or bridging; where toughness and durability are essential, it possesses qualities superior to any lumber in this State or Oregon. It commands the highest price of any lumber in our market for street planking, except eastern oak.—Total cost of mill, $10,000.

"Turnpike Roads.—One constructed by Messrs. Firebaugh & Brandon, through the Pacheco Pass, is four miles in length, and cost $5,000. Being on the route of the Overland Mail, it has recently assumed a considerable degree of importance, the amount of trade being continually on the increase, heavily loaded teams passing through to different parts of the State.

"Artesian Wells in this county have heretofore received but little attention; attempts, however, have been very recently made in the vicinity of San Juan town to procure water by such means. The results have been quite favorable. A fine stream of water has been brought forth at a depth of 80 feet, on the premises of Wm. Prescott. Operations are being conducted at different parts of the San Juan valley with flattering prospects.

"Ferries.—There are three ferries in this county: One crossing the Pajaro River on the line of travel from San Juan to Gilroy town, formerly known as 'Beale's Ferry,' at present owned and conducted by Messrs. Crane and Fulgham; cost, about $1,200. The two other ferries cross the Salinas River at what is known as 'Paul's ferry,' and 'Hill's crossing.' The late dry seasons have rendered the two latter comparatively useless. Cost about $1,000 each.

"Agricultural Products.—29,054 acres land cultivated; 2,861 acres of wheat, 28,610 bushels; 2,544 acres of barley, 76,428 bushels; 216 acres oats, 12,960 bushels; 43 acres corn, 430 bushels; 40 acres buckwheat, 400; 300 acres beans, 6,000; 980 acres potatoes, 245,000; 2,687 acres hay, 4,030 tons; 20,000 pounds butter; 30,000 pounds cheese; 3,000 dozen eggs; 190,000 pounds wool.

"Fruit Trees and Vines.—1,204 apple trees, 775 peach, 1,243 pear, 113 plum, 91 cherry, 5 nectarine, 20 quince, 33 apricot, 30 fig, 60 olive, 40 almond, 20 walnut, 25,500 strawberry vines, 50,000 grape vines.

"Live Stock.—296 American horses, 2,848 tame Spanish, 3,711 wild Spanish—total, 6,355; 255 mules, 27 asses, 4,035 cows,

2,300 calves, 44,448 stock cattle, 461 oxen, 74,339 sheep, 400 goats, 168 ducks, 40 geese.

"Taxable Property.—Value of real estate, $348,174; improvements on real estate, $105,331; personal, $690,056; total, $1,143,561.)"

By 1859 the town of Monterey found herself so much in debt that it became necessary, in order to meet her obligations, to sell the greater portion of the Pueblo grant. Such extravagance brought the trustees into disrepute, and at the next session of the legislature the charter was again amended in such a manner as to render their powers, either for good or for evil, exceedingly limited.

During the legislative session of 1869-70 an attempt at re-incorporation was made; the bill passed the Assembly, but was defeated in the Senate. Another attempt was then made, but in some manner the bill again miscarried. A third effort to obtain the desired result proved somewhat more successful. In 1873-74 the "Act to Re-incorporate the City of Monterey" carried through both Houses and reached the Governor, who, it is alleged, failed to return it within the specified time. Be this as it may, nothing more was heard of the bill, and Monterey still remained under the nominal control of its trustees. It was not until June 3, 1889, that Monterey was re-incorporated and once again became a full-fledged city.

The way the re-incorporation came about was not a smooth one. It was in February, 1889, that the people of Monterey held meetings to boost the proposition—to express views and exchange ideas. Newspaper accounts of the event will cast light—considerably greater than 16 candle power—upon the excitement of those days. An item appearing in the *Monterey Cypress* of February 23, 1889, under the headlines of "INCORPORATION! THE PEOPLE UNANIMOUS FOR IT," read:

"Last Monday morning notices were posted in prominent places calling a citizens' meeting for Wednesday evening at Bagby's Opera House, for the purpose of taking steps to incorporate the city. About 7:00 Urbanus band marched through our principal streets playing some choice selections thus reminding our citizens of their duty and calling them to the assembly. By 8:00 the club room of the Opera House was jammed to the very door, the partisans of incorporation vieing with each other in their

endeavors to lend more weight to the deliberations of the meeting by their presence.

"W. J. Towle called the meeting to order and nominations for officers being declared in order, Dr. A. Westfall was elected chairman and S. J. Duckworth, secretary. Dr. Westfall stated the objects of the meeting and called for the views of those in attendance. Capt. T. G. Lambert said he was in favor of almost any system that would give Monterey a legal and proper incorporation. He believed it would redound to the benefit of the entire community and as far as he was concerned he would pledge the project his hearty support. Walter C. Little said he had spoken to but very few, but with those he had spoken to opinion seemed to be unanimous in favor of including New Monterey and excluding the Hotel del Monte. His idea would be to make the starting point on the beach near Chinatown following the Point Pinos ranch line to its intersection with the Pescadero line, thence along the Pescadero line to a little point opposite the western boundary of the Del Monte grounds, thence in a northerly direction along the western boundary of the Del Monte grounds to the beach. This would include the Del Monte bath-house in the corporate limits, but he thought it would meet with but very slight opposition from the railroad people.

"The above remarks very fairly represent the sentiments of the citizens of Monterey—with but few exceptions they meet with the approval of the community. There has been some talk of excluding the Delmas portion of New Monterey but from what can be learned it is confined to a few residents there who do not wish to be incorporated under any circumstances. The majority of the residents of New Monterey as a whole are heartily in favor of being included in the limits of Monterey. The only dissatisfaction, as above stated, is confined to a portion of those living on the Delmas tract.

"Captain Lambert moved that a committee of not less than seven or more than ten be elected by the meeting to examine the lines likely to be decided upon as the limits of Monterey, confer with the people interested in the project and report the result of their investigation at the earliest possible moment at a meeting to be called for that purpose.

"Mr. Duckworth moved to amend by fixing the number at nine. The amendment was accepted and the motion carried.

"The following were elected: Messrs. T. G. Lambert, J. B. Snively, W. C. Little, H. Prinz, Martin Doud, W. J. Towle, Wm. Hannon, W. D. Robinson, and H. N. Whitcomb.

"Rosario Duarte and W. A. Kearney were nominated by S. Koffle and S. J. Duckworth respectively, but they declined to serve, the former on account of his poor health and the latter on account of the pressure of private business.

"J. W. Bagby suggested that Mr. Kearney be employed to prepare the necessary papers to petition the Board of Supervisors to call the election for incorporation. Mr. Kearney said it should first be decided to incorporate and come to some understanding about the limits.

"The following resolution was then introduced by S. J. Duckworth and it was unanimously carried by a standing vote:

"Resolved: That it is the sense of the people of Monterey that the City of Monterey should incorporate under the general laws.

"Mr. Kearney moved that a conference be held between the Monterey committee on limits and a like committee from Pacific Grove for the purpose of arriving at some definite conclusions as to the dividing line between the two cities.—carried.

"Mr. Kent, of Pacific Grove, said it was his opinion that the dividing line between Monterey and Pacific Grove should be the Point Pinos ranch line. As far as he was concerned he would not object to having Chinatown included in the Monterey limits. He said that the committee representing Pacific Grove would be ready to meet the Monterey committee about Friday.

"J. A. Pell of Pacific Grove was disposed to let the Delmas tract go wherever the citizens there wanted it. As far as he was concerned it could be taken into Monterey.

"Geo. D. Clark was in favor of including the new reservoir. As the question of limits and boundaries had been referred to the committee cited above, no action was taken on this matter."

But after all this enthusiasm, a great disappointment was to come, for in March the bill was vetoed and the town still remained unincorporated. Such were the twistings of fate in the former glorious capital of California.

An account in the *Cypress* of March 2, 1889, showed the keen disappointment the town felt—the public attitude. The article ran:

"VETOED! GOVERNOR WATERMAN SITS DOWN ON THE BILL

"A telegram from Assemblyman Renison was received here Thursday informing us that Governor Waterman had vetoed the bill reincorporating Monterey. To say that the news fell like a wet blanket over the entire community would be putting it lightly. It had a most discouraging effect on every business man as well as on the majority of property owners, who looked upon the re-incorporation of Monterey as the only means through which the town might be modernized and become thus more attractive and inviting to the stranger. The veto became the sole topic of conversation and 'how is the bath-house?' 'how is Waterman?' 'and how about the incorporation?' became by-words with everybody we met. At this writing the Governor's reason for vetoing the bill has not been learned here, consequently many opinions were expressed by our citizens. Some saw in the veto the work of the railroad company, while many were not slow in bewailing the fact that in our eagerness to become re-incorporated we did not wait until the bill had been signed before taking steps to reorganize. * * *

"In conversation with Mr. Thomas Field, a gentleman identified with the railroad here, a *Cypress* reporter learned that that gentleman was as much surprised at the veto as any of us. 'Why, I had no idea that he would veto it,' remarked Mr. Field, and furthermore that gentleman was emphatic in his assertion that the P. I. Company had nothing to do with it: 'I was instructed this morning,' remarked Mr. Field, who had just arrived from the city 'to try and have the people decide to leave out the bath house and if possible to bring about that result, to agree to pay taxes on the bath houses, grade and gravel Alvarado Street, which would be equivalent to paying city taxes for years, or do anything with consistency to bring about a compromise between the people and the P. I. Company.' Mr. Field was much grieved. It is hardly necessary to say that the silurian is now overjoyed.

"Last night, the firing of anvils and blowing of trumpets conveyed the news that the people were assembling on the plaza for the purpose of holding an indignation meeting, and to express their views regarding the Governor's action in vetoing the bill. The plaza was crowded with people and from amidst the throng Dr. Westfall called the meeting to order and announced the ob-

jects of the gathering. Mr. Martin Doud was elected chairman and on mounting the stand addressed the people on the veto. The Governor, he thought, had been imposed upon. He never would have vetoed the bill had not some one misrepresented matters to him. The bill, the speaker thought, would surely be passed over the veto if the Assembly fully understood our condition.

"Mr. S. J. Duckworth, next addressed the meeting and made a most forcible and logical argument in favor of the passage of the bill. He also attached the vetoing of the bill to David Jacks' underhanded work and characterized the latter as being a pronounced enemy to the town, whose only aim in life had been to appropriate the best lands in our midst. Mr. Duckworth concluded by offering a set of lengthy resolutions condemning the veto and those who had been instrumental in securing it. The resolutions were adopted unanimously. Dr. Westfall was next called; he endorsed all that had been said and referred to Jacks as a hypocrite and a vampire. Mr. Hamilton of Pacific Grove was also called upon and compared the vetoing of the bill to the boy who was the other day struck by lightning, while the sky was clear. Ex-Senator Sargent made a lengthy speech in which he condemned those who had imposed on the Governor by misrepresenting to him the state of affairs."

But with the sunshine of June came a change! Monterey heard of her incorporation and was once again warmed to happiness. In the issue of the *Cypress* of June 8, 1889, under an illustration of a rooster crowing into a trumpet, ran the following story:

"INCORPORATED! MONTEREY A CITY AT LAST! A DEATH KNELL TO SILURIANISM!

"A thin mist hung over the old capital Monday morning last, but as the hour hand pointed towards the meridian, the fog had disappeared and 'Old Sol' smiled upon the crowds of busy humanity that moved to and fro along our uneven sidewalks. The stranger who chanced here on that day, could not help but wonder: 'What has struck this old town? What is it that has wakened these people from their lethargic state?' The answer was simply: 'Incorporation!' It was simply an election held to determine whether or not Monterey should wrap around itself the mantle of cityhood, or whether it would elect to remain a blot

upon this side of the bay. The question seemed to be understood by all, and the humblest and most ignorant grew eloquent in explaining the many advantages to be derived through incorporation.

"Since the landing of Padre Serra, at the little beach north of the Custom House, just one hundred and nineteen years ago to a day, nothing of so much importance to Monterey had occurred. The 3rd of June, 1770, meant the invasion of Monterey by the representatives of the civilized world; it meant the beginning of a Christian era; the opening to the world a new continent along the golden shores of the beautiful Pacific. But while the hand of civilization has since done telling work on every side, the 'Old Town' still clings to its garb of antiquity. A century's time has failed to fade away the old tiles, and ungainly adobes still hold their places in our town. But what a change of sentiment! The native born, whose silvery hair now hangs in straight and stubborn locks upon his shoulders has at last awakened from his long sleep, and with cat-like tread grasps his ballot and joins the phalanx of incorporationists. He seems to realize that the hand of progress is sweeping away the cobwebs of silurianism and he assists in the work. The 'Old Pioneer' whose destiny brought him hither almost half a century ago, rushes by as nimbly as a youth, eager to cast one vote in behalf of civilization. 'I knew this would be a city some day,' he says 'and my only prayer has been that I might live to see it.' Even the old crooked streets seem to twist and strain in vain endeavors to assume a more symmetrical form—thus we find the 3rd of June, 1889, a grand day. A day made doubly historic because on that date the people decided to erect a monument in honor of the first invaders, in the shape of a live, picturesque, modern city. So harmoniously did they work, so interested were they in their efforts, that when the polls closed only 24 votes out of 341 were found to declare against incorporation. Who those lonely 24 souls were, will, no doubt, always remain a mystery. They are to be forgiven, however, for perhaps they feared that it could not properly be called an election unless some opposition was manifested, and they did not propose to jeopardize the legality of the election by having it all one-sided. At any rate 317 votes were found 'For Incorporation.' * * *

"The result of the election was received with great outbursts

of enthusiasm. Men shouted like boys. Women felt they were girls again and children danced with glee at the result. In the evening bonfires and the booming of cannon announced that the event was about to be celebrated. Bands of music soon followed upon the scene, and the whole multitude as though by impulse moved up Alvarado Street to the Pacific Ocean House, where all hands halted, many not knowing what they were there for excepting that they were to celebrate. Presently lamps and chairs appeared on the balcony and as Assemblyman Renison accompanied by M. R. Merritt of Castroville, came out, shout after shout rent the air. Mr. Merritt acted as master of ceremonies and began by announcing the object of the meeting. Being a native of the old Capital he rejoiced at the step the people had taken in behalf of progress. He congratulated Monterey for having thrown off the tyrant's yoke. He could see a bright future for the place of his nativity. He introduced Assemblyman Renison, who followed with a neat and modest speech. Like his predecessor he rejoiced at the result of the election. It had been a hard struggle. He spoke of the impediments placed in the way of re-incorporating the town, before the Legislature, and remarked that in assisting the measure he had but done his duty. He spoke highly of our State Senator the Honorable Thos. Flint, Jr., who, Mr. Renison said, had worked hard and earnestly for our bill. The special representatives sent by the people did remarkably well; had it not been for them the bill never would have passed, as neither the speaker nor Mr. Flint knew enough about the matter to carry it through without assistance.

"W. A. Kearney was next called, and in his usual manner congratulated Monterey on the victory achieved. He felt too full for utterance. He felt too happy to talk. The battle of thirty-odd years had been won; the people of Monterey had forever shaken off the old yoke of '53, and now were in position to keep pace with the live, progressive cities of the coast. He had no fault to find with any of the tickets in the field. No matter who got elected we would have had good men. B. V. Sargent, Jr., spoke next and like Mr. Merritt was glad to see his birth-place take its stand in the march of progress. B. V. Sargent, Sr., was also called on. Mr. Sargent too had cause to be joyful, but was not willing to allow anybody credit for the victory excepting the P. I. Company.

"Little Tommy Lambert was next called on and expressed himself as being also happy. The day of barb-wire rule was over. He congratulated himself for having lived to see the old Capital on the road to progress.

"After the speaking the crowd dispersed and the bands busied themselves serenading friends of incorporation."

Thus Monterey once again came into its own!

Simultaneously with the growth of Salinas City, which was becoming the liveliest town in the county, arose the question of county seat removal. Monterey had held this honor ever since the organization of the county, and the attempt of her younger rival to wrest it from her was bitterly opposed. In spite of her efforts, however, a petition signed by the requisite number of voters was presented to the Board of Supervisors, who, as in duty bound, ordered an election; this was held on the 6th of November, 1872, the day of the presidential election. The result was a victory for Salinas City, and on the following February the county seat was removed to its present location.

From that time until the commencement of the narrow-gauge railroad in April, 1874, the fortunes of Monterey were at their lowest ebb. Business of every description was almost stagnant; enterprise and improvement seemed to have no foothold within her quiet precincts, and aptly was she called "The Sleepy Hollow of California." Like Atri in Abbruzo, described by Longfellow as

> "One of those little places that have run
> Half up the hill beneath a blazing sun,
> And then sat down to rest, as if to say,
> 'I climb no farther upward, come what may'."

CHAPTER XXIX

PRESENT DAY MONTEREY

The foundation for the prosperity that was later to strike Monterey was laid when the first narrow-gauge railroad in the state was completed, running from Monterey to Salinas. Thus, with improved means of travel and communication, people began to hear again of Monterey and to learn of its advantages. Furthermore, the railroad, built to "contend with a great and powerful monopoly," saved the grain-growers of the district no less than $200,000 yearly, it was estimated. We find in contemporary records that the railroad was commenced in April, and finished in October, 1874. All interested in it devoted their time and means without stint, especially C. S. Abbott, the President; D. Jacks, the Treasurer; and John Markley, the Secretary. Mr. J. F. Kidder was the chief engineer and superintendent of construction. The iron came from the Pacific Rolling Mills of San Francisco, the Falkner, Bell and Company of the same place; the locomotives, "C. S. Abbott" and "Monterey," from the Baldwin Locomotive Company in Pennsylvania. The cars, which were superior to the average railway coaches of that day, were built in Monterey, by Thomas Carter.

The railroad commenced running October 28th, 1874, too late to carry much of the grain of the valley of that season; but its early completion had been a fixed fact in August, thereby compelling the S. P. R. R. to make a reduction from $5.50 per ton to $4.25 freight on grain to San Francisco. The M. & S. V. R. R. carried about 6,000 tons in 1874; loaded the H. L. Richardson at Monterey (2,400 long tons). The freight on merchandise from San Francisco to Salinas City was $7.20; the S. P. R. R. reduced to $6.00. Salinas was supplied with redwood lumber from Watsonville and pine from San Francisco; later, in '74, two other markets were opened, and redwood was brought from Santa Cruz, and pine from Puget Sound, which then came to Monterey as



ALVARADO STREET, MONTEREY.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
N L

cheaply as to San Francisco and had only to be freighted 20 miles instead of 120 miles.

The total cost of the railroad, including road, warehouses, wharves, cars, engines, etc., was $357,000.

It was a railroad era. Other lines had been laid in the state, and they were all indirectly helpful to Monterey and Santa Cruz counties, helpful in bringing more people to California, in making the dissemination of news easier, and transportation far more readily done. Prior to the Monterey and Salinas Valley Railroad there were several hundred miles of railway in California, small roads running in and out and around the Bay of San Francisco. The road between Sacramento and Folsom, the oldest in the state, ran a distance of twenty-one miles. Another road ran between Marysville and Oroville, and still another between San Francisco and San Jose. In addition to these still other lesser ones existed.

The laying of the important Central Pacific road which linked the East with the West in steel, was profoundly significant, not only to the state as a whole, but to our two counties. This, completed five years before the creation of Monterey County's local railroad, was now beginning to show marked effects on the growth and development of the part of the state with which the present history is concerned. Accounts of founding the International railroad, the Central Pacific, as evolved through the masterful thinking of a bare handful of men (Leland Stanford, C. P. Huntington, the Crockers, Mark Hopkins and a few others) can be found in the pages of numerous histories. As the Central Pacific did not, of course, run through Monterey or Santa Cruze county, we shall devote but little space to it. The hardships that had to be undergone in order to finance the railroad and to lay it has been thoroughly, adequately, even persistently handled by almost every historian of the United States; and therefore are known by the majority of Californians. Yet, that eventful day when the tracks from the East and those from the West were joined (now having such a profound effect upon the local territory) has been so picturesquely and beautifully told by McGroarty that it bears repetition, many repetitions.

"It was indeed a fateful day," he says, "that tenth of May, 1869, when the two roads came together and the greatest achievement of the nineteenth century, or of any century that preceded

it, was consummated. At that hour the attention of the civilized world was concentrated on the sagebrush plains of Nevada where California was joined by rail with the Atlantic seaboard.

"Besides the hundreds of laborers, mechanics, engineers and builders present, a number of distinguished men were in attendance. The ceremonies were unique and such as to appeal to the most fervid powers of the imagination. On the last day Charles Crocker made the world's record in railroad construction when the forces under his command laid ten miles and one hundred and eighty-five feet of track.

"The last spike to be driven was made of California gold, and the railway tie in which the silver sledge-hammer was to drive it was of the wood of the California laurel. The territory of Arizona sent an offering of a spike made of gold, silver and iron. A silver spike was presented by Nevada.

"As the epoch-making moment arrived, Leland Stanford and Vice-President Durant of the Union Pacific each struck the golden spike with blows from the silver hammer. Telegraph wires attached to the spike repeated the blows east and west. The electric wave rang bells in the City Hall at San Francisco and fired a cannon at Fort Point. At that instant the whole city went mad with joy. And in the East the excitement was no less. Celebrations were held in Buffalo, Boston and other cities, while away on the wild plains of the West the engines were advancing and backing in an exchange of eloquent courtesies * * *"

Other railroads have spanned the continent since, linking the East with the West even more substantially, helping both sides of the United States. The Central Pacific, certainly having a deep significance to every hamlet in California, was spectacular in its design and execution. The narrow-gauge railroad leading out of Monterey had not this showiness and yet to the county of Monterey it was also deeply important. Following five years after the Central Pacific, it bound Monterey County together like its big brother bound the United States. The railroad was an innovation—as much an innovation as the Pony Express had been in the era preceding (of which we shall have something to say in the chapter on Santa Cruz County); and Monterey, the town, once again blinked its eyes and began coming out of its lethargy.

It was not a great while until the town was to have a street railway connecting Monterey with Pacific Grove. A petition pre-

sented to the Board of Trustees by T. J. Field (financier) in 1888 for the proposed street railway, was unique, not only in wording, but in the "meanderings" the railway was to take. His petition read:

"To the Hon. Board of Trustees of the City of Monterey, Cal. Gentlemen: I hereby respectfully petition your Honorable Body and show: That I desire as soon as practicable and convenient to construct and operate a street car railroad track in the city of Monterey between the following points to wit: commencing at a point in the center of the county road leading from Castroville to the City of Monterey in front of the premises now occupied by Capt. E. S. Joslyn as a residence, running thence along said road westerly past the Monterey Cemetery to the street and at the rear of the Catholic church and along the meanderings of that street to California Street. Thence along California Street to Alvarado Street north to the point of intersection with Decatur Street. Thence west on Decatur Street to the intersection of junction of Pacific Street and Light House road. Thence following the meanderings of said Light House road northerly and westerly to the land of the United States Government upon which is located the Point Pinos Light House, to construct and operate on all of said streets, said track together with necessary side tracks, and turnouts—said road to be operated by horses, electricity, or cable power or any approved power or method as to this petitioner or his assigns may seem best.

"That said road shall be constructed and maintained and operated for the convenience and benefit of the public who for the use thereof shall pay such compensation as may from time to time be fixed by petition of his askings.

"That petitioner believes that such a road would be of great benefit and furnish a much needed convenience to the public of the city.

"Wherefore petitioner prays that your Honorable Body grant to him and his assigns the exclusive right of way and franchise to build, construct and maintain and operate a street car track, double or single, as herein indicated with the right to collect fare of the public for the use thereof, on the streets and between the points herein named, and for the usual number of years.

"And your petitioner will ever pray.

Monterey, March 22, 1888. (Signed) T. J. Field."

In April of that year the franchise (with few alterations) was granted by the city and accepted by Mr. Field. In 1891, a Mr. Juan Malarin, took over the work, and by April of that year started the laying of track. Originally the cars were horsedrawn, and although moving at a considerably slower pace than the electrical vehicles of the cities today, usually arrived at their destination "just the same." The *Santa Clara Journal* had this pretty compliment to pay the work of Malarin in '91:

"It affords the *Journal* pleasure at all times to chronicle the success of the citizens of Santa Clara who are among us, and quite as great a sense of pleasure to record the success of those who were formerly citizens of our town, but who have sought other fields of labor.

"A striking illustration of business energy and clear cut grit has been manifested by Mr. Juan Malarin, who has recently completed a street car line from Monterey to Pacific Grove.

"The road has been built by Mr. Malarin, alone and unaided.

"It is now furnished with elegant open horse cars, from which the tourist can view one of the finest bays in the world as he travels over it, a distance of some five miles.

"Mr. Malarin began work on this road about the first of last April, and with his accustomed energy and push rushed the work to completion, and on the fifth day of August last, was running his cars over the entire five miles of road. The greatest care has been taken in securing a perfect road bed, which makes the ride over it a pleasant one. Add to this the magnificent view that is to be had all along the road, and it makes it without doubt, one among the grandest scenic roads on the Pacific Coast.

"Already new towns have been laid out along the road and lots sold at a rapid rate, on which elegant residences are now being erected.

"Obstacles that appeared well nigh insurmountable were encountered by Mr. Malarin in the building of this road. He was assured it would not, could not pay. Some complimented him upon being a crank and much similar encouragement was given him, but through it all the courage and determination of Mr. Malarin never faltered. He had set out to build the road and he purposed to sink or swim in the attempt. Mr. Malarin's numerous friends will be glad to learn that he has met with a crowning success,

and today rejoices over a victory that but a short time ago promised to be a discouraging defeat."

The railway was indeed a success for a number of years. Then automobile travel reached such popularity that the patronage of the street railway rapidly fell off. It reached such a state of non-use in 1923 that on December 4 of that year it was totally abandoned, discontinued for once and all. The tracks running through Monterey were removed in the summer of 1924; and now smooth boulevards stretch invitingly before the motorist. Automobile buses now ply between Monterey and Pacific Grove, taking passengers quickly and comfortably to their destinations.

Since the days of the narrow-gauge railway running between Monterey and Salinas Valley, the Southern Pacific with a broad gauge track has entered the environs of Monterey. This makes daily connections with Watsonville Junction where trains can be caught for Los Angeles, San Francisco and other points of California.

A booklet printed the year after the local railroad was installed, showed not only a "booster's" spirit—a desire to get people to come to the county, but was an unmistakable sign of returning life. Its descriptive work, showing just what condition the county was in in that era, will be of interest to the student of history. Excerpts from it, supplemented with other details of that day of 1875, follow.

Monterey has undoubtedly all the natural advantages for becoming one of the leading watering places and summer resorts of the state. Her natural beauty of scenery, the crescent-shaped, pine-fringed hills, sloping down through park-like groves and flowery swards on to the quaint old Spanish town nestling at their feet, and on again to the silvery sands and creamy ripple of the surge of the broad, beautiful, blue waters of the bay; the eye at length resting on the bold outlines of the lofty Santa Cruz Mountains, towering to the sky. On the right we have Frémont's Peak and the Gabilan Range, breaking the long view over the rolling plains. The lights and shadows create a perpetual change, and the variety of scenes is such that the eye never tires of gazing at nature's handiwork. Our sands are without rival—one long, bold sweep of wide, gently sloping, clean white sands—the perfection of a bathing beach. Around from the old wharf to the lighthouse there are nooks and alcoves such as poets love to sing of

as the haunts of the mermaids. The great desideratum of a seaside resort is a beach upon which children can with safety play and bathe, and such as we certainly have. Sea mosses, shells, and pebbles we have in great variety, while for the amateur naturalist, geologist, mineralogist, and several scientists, there are unrivaled opportunities for augmenting their information and collections. Tire of the town, and you can have a trip to Carmel or Pescadero bays, beautiful in the extreme; the old Mission of Carmel, full of historical interest and beauty; Point Cypress, or the light-house on Point Pinos; the Hot Springs at Tassajara, or go fishing either in the bay or the rivers of the neighboring mountains as they flow through the rocky cañons; if of a nautical turn of mind you can have sailing or rowing in safe waters. The salubrity of the climate is almost proverbial. Let a worn-out invalid, or a man whose brains have been racked with toil, come to us—the magnetic influence of the atmosphere grants him sleep and restful health.

From our point of view, also, Monterey has great industrial resources in addition to her claims as a pleasant location and fine climate, but these resources are in embryo, and await the hand of energy and capital to bring them to birth. Communication with the outside world was the first great desideratum, and that, within the past twelve months, has been to a great extent accomplished; the narrow-gauge railroad to Salinas connects us by land with San Francisco, the Salinas Valley, and indirectly with all points of the State. By sea we have regular and frequent intercourse with the city and the ports of the coast. The proposed extension of the railroad to Hollister and a loop-line to Castroville will be the means of bringing to Monterey for direct shipment to foreign ports the greater portion of the grain and other products of the fertile counties of Monterey and San Benito. It is also proposed, we believe, to connect the M. & S. V. R. R., *via* Soledad, with Santa Barbara in one direction; and in the other with the Watsonville and Santa Cruz Railroad.

These communications not only offer a means of carrying away the products when made, but indirectly create a demand for them by assisting in the subdivision of large ranches into small farms, and the consequent settling-up of the country and the increased wealth of its inhabitants. The production of the raw article and the demand which Monterey could make had she the men of en-

terprise and capital to carry them out, are the following, among others: Tanneries—the stock-raisers of the county can supply the hides, and the materials for tanning we have at hand cheaper than in most parts of the State; the same remarks apply to wool and cloth mills, and shoe factories. San Francisco has had to send to the East for bricks, while we have the clay capable of making bricks of very good quality, as is shown by those already turned out; the pottery clay is good, and ware is already manufactured in small quantities. Our sand is considered the best in the State for glass-making, and is exported in large quantities to San Francisco for that purpose. San Jose is making building-blocks out of the sands of the Coyote—our sands are of purer quality, and as superior to theirs for that purpose as it is possible to imagine. Experts say that our indications of coal and iron are of the most promising character, and no less than six or seven companies are vigorously prospecting in this direction. Many other minerals are also found in small quantities, but have not yet been thoroughly searched for. Lime kilns, flour mills and planing mills are wanted, and there are good openings for them. Stock-raising, farming, and dairying are sure roads to fortune in this county, and there are yet openings for all. Our fisheries, whale, and edible fish are increasing in importance. The great State Camp-meeting location at Pacific (with which we shall presently speak in detail), close to town, will give ample opportunities for strangers to invest in small residential properties, and more than one land-owner has announced his intention of dividing his land into building lots this year.

Such are the views of some of our resources, but above all we have that priceless boon of heaven, a healthy climate; no agues and fever, no chills or rheumatism, no sickness save that of old age. The class of men who will be welcomed here are men of energy and capital. As regards our town of Monterey, we have enough grocers, saloonists, and mechanics; what is actually needed is a first-class hotel, or manufactories—above all, men who will stay with us a year or two and help to build us up, and not fly away with the first breeze of disappointment.

We require two first-class hotels, competent to accommodate visitors by the hundreds and not by the score—one in the town and one on the hill-side, or at Littletown—there are two sites admirably adapted for the purpose, which will be donated free of

expense to any one erecting the buildings; a race course, which might be advantageously placed in Toombs' grove, or at the foot of the Carmel road; bathing houses along the beach, and one good large *etablissement de bains*, after the French fashion, in which one can take his hot or cold bath, and afterwards find amusement for the body and mind, or lounge away the day luxuriously and idly. Handsome stores and a thriving town would soon follow as a matter of course. It is no idle dream of a sanguine visionary to believe that all these things will come sooner or later, and that Monterey will become one of the most fashionable summer resorts for the wealthy. Santa Cruz, Aptos, and Santa Barbara have already become so. Their natural advantages are, in many respects, inferior to those possessed by Monterey; but they have that which Monterey has not—American enterprise, and capital to assist it; a hospitable welcome to the stranger, and the hand of friendship extended to all who will cast in their lot with them.

Monterey dreams idly on, and will so dream until a fresh race of men, such men as are now building up our California cities, enters her dreamy Eden, and with the rough but kindly hand of energy, arouses her from her lethargy.

It cannot be long before this change takes place. All down the coast, towns, not so well favored as Monterey, are being built up, and her turn *must* come. San Francisco is now too firmly fixed to fear the competition of Monterey, and that opposition on the part of the press to her advancement, which has done so much to keep our town back, will now probably be withdrawn, if we may judge from the spirit of fair play exhibited by the *Alta*, *Chronicle*, and *Call*, in admitting in their columns lengthy letters from Monterey.

One very natural thought must arise in the minds of reflective readers—and to such we address this work—and it is this: If Monterey is so blessed by Nature as you state it to be, how is it that she is so decayed in her glory and sunk in her worth? How is it that while San Francisco, Santa Cruz, San Luis, Santa Barbara, and many other towns, have sprung from nothingness into position and wealth, Monterey has only retrograded from wealth and position into comparative oblivion?

To such a thought we would reply: The gold fever caused a migration of the people from Monterey; the establishment of Sacramento and San Francisco, whither congregated all the energy

and enterprise, and the consequent removal of the capital to a more populated spot; the want of communication with the interior farming country, Monterey not having in her immediate vicinity resources or population sufficient to support herself by herself; and, lastly, the character of her inhabitants—good-tempered, kind and hospitable, easy-going and listless, as are all the Spanish-speaking races—they lived to enjoy life easily and comfortably, not to be harassed with the cares and turmoils attending energy and enterprise. Nature was bountiful to them, and they lived on Nature's gifts. Mirth, music, and "mañana," with just sufficient exertion as was absolutely requisite to provide for their necessities, constituted their rule of life. They drifted down with the stream. The capital went, and then the county seat—and no great exertion was made to retain either of them. A few men looked ahead, and worked, and they are now enjoying their reward; but the majority adopted the *dolce far niente* habits of the natives, and did nothing but exist.

There is also another section of residents, whose policy it has been to retard, by every means in their power, the growth of the place, any consequent entry of competition, to be soon followed, as they truly thought, by the loss of their influence, prosperity, and position; fortunately, in the ordinary course of nature their retirement to more congenial realms cannot be far distant.

Disquieting and prejudicial rumors of bad land titles have also been sown broadcast, by interested parties, to prevent the sales of property to willing investors.

The railroad has changed the state of affairs not a little; and events of the past year clearly prove that, with an American population working in harmony with the more enlightened portion of the old residents and natives, a great and prosperous city may yet be built upon the site of the old capital. It is for our readers to pay us a visit and judge for themselves of our prospects.

The Valley of the Carmelo River affords attractions to lovers of Nature such as few other places in the State can furnish. The passing traveler—be he artist or antiquary, geologist or "grizzly shootist," piscator or pedestrian, "prospector" or pleasure seeker—may here find something congenial to his taste. The road from Monterey passes the old Cuartel, and branches off to the right,

having on one side a woody ravine and low, flat, level lands, studded, park-like, with live oaks; on the other the well-wooded, pine-feathered hills. Half way up the steep hill, we command a magnificent view of Monterey, Santa Cruz, and the Castroville and Salinas Valleys, with Frémont Peak and the Gabilan for a background. Reaching the summit, and looking to the right, through a pretty wooded glen, the eye rests upon the broad ocean. A shady road, up hill and down dale, with ever-changing views, all beautiful, until the hill overlooking the Carmel vale is reached, and there we have a sight worthy of Eden in its happiest days. On our right, the mountain, which looms before us, heavy and massive, gloomy and severe, tapers off into a narrow, pine-fringed, sea-girt point, against which the blue waters of the Carmel Bay dash with ever varying beauty. This point is named Point Lobos, so called from the "lobos del mar" (sea wolves, a species of seal) that collect on the point, and can be seen from the shore in large numbers. Silvery sands line the Bay, whiter almost than the sea foam as it splashes and sprays against the dark green background. To our right, the valley winds between the mountains, and at our feet the Carmel glistens in the sunlight as it flows through the willows to the sea. Descend the hill, turn to the right, and we have reached the ruins of the old Mission. Hardly a pleasing sight to any one possessing the bump of veneration even in the smallest degree. A few ruined, broken-down adobes encircle a dreary, desolate, semi-roofless building, beautiful even in decay —all that is left of the second Mission in California, and one that in its day must have been a grand edifice, for it bears unmistakable evidence of an accurate knowledge of architecture, blended with a bold conception in detail and skillful workmanship, considering the materials at hand. In 1770, a little more than one hundred years ago, the venerable Franciscan, Junipero Serra, wandering over the mountains and through the vales, preaching the gospel of good tidings and great joy, hung his bells on a tree in this spot, and shouted, "Hear, hear, O ye gentiles, come to the Holy Church!" and thus gathered around him the Indian tribes of the Rumsienes or Runsiens, the Escelenes or Eslens, the Eclemaches and Achastlies. Captivated by the scenery, its proximity to the sea, and, above all, the beautiful stream of water and the general fertility of the valley, Serra

"Sought in these mountain solitudes a home;
He founded here his convent, and his rule
Of prayer and work, and counted work as prayer."

He labored zealously among his native converts, and died in 1784, loved by them all. He lies buried in the Mission which he founded.

Visitors should inspect the curious old pictures and relics of antiquity in the chapel on the right.

We climb up into the deserted belfry, where erst the bells have pealed, calling the worshipers to mass; and rouse from his day-dreams its sole tenant—the traditional old, grey owl, that stares wonderingly at us from its saucer-like eyes.

As we sit upon one of the fallen roof-beams, and gaze upon the shattered font, the broken-down crosses, the ruined altar, and the general scene of devastation and desolation around us, and remember that this is one of the most ancient and important historical monuments of California, the home and the grave of the moral hero of the age, the true pioneer of California progress—Junipero Serra, and the tomb of no less than fifteen Governors of this State, a painful feeling controls us. Carmel Mission is the old Westminster Abbey of the State, the mausoleum of the great and the good, and the nation rewards the services of the past by giving up the dust of the good and brave to the guardianship of gophers and squirrels. Thorns and briars, nettles and loathsome weeds, adorn their graves. A few short years, and naught will remain of this holy edifice save an undistinguishable mass of debris. A few more years, and it will be too late—even now it will be somewhat difficult—to restore it. Whatever is done should be done quickly, nobly, and generously, for the present state of the Mission is a standing reproach to the church which owns it and a disgrace to the whole State of California. It is a monument for the preservation of which every Californian, especially the wealthy pioneers, should exert themselves to have the work of renovating the building commenced as soon as possible. The day will come when history will mark with contempt the present generation for permitting the decay of this, the last resting place of the great and good Padre Junipero.

Passing down the coast road the geologist may pursue his investigations; or by obtaining a "permit" from Mr. A. Manuel, the obliging secretary of the "Monterey Coal Mine Company,"

may visit that mine and judge for himself of the prospects of our coal deposits.

Still farther down the coast, he may find more coal mines, wild and romantic scenery, grizzly bears, deer, trout-fishing, and other interesting and exciting "kill-times".

Returning, he will find a small and pretty bay, forming a splendid fishing boat harbor, and occupied by a company of Portuguese whalers and Chinese fishermen. Here fresh fish and salmon-spearing may be had.

Cypress Point is the one spot more perfectly adapted than any other place in the State for picnics and camping out.

Start out along the Carmel road, and take the path through the woods; climb the hill, and, resting on the flower-bedecked turf, surrounded by ferns and groves, take in the view. Adown the wooded slope, carpeted with a profusion of flowers of all colors under the sun, the brown, barren-looking moorlands of the Salinas plain rising and falling like an inanimate sea of motionless billows, with here and there a bright emerald patch of some small, well-tilled farm shining like a rough-set jewel. The stern and sombre Gabilian range, with its serrated ridges and dark clusters of pine woods, mellowed down with a filmy haze enshrouding its base. On our left, the beautifully blue waters of the Bay of Monterey, as smooth as a lake, half crescented with the lofty Santa Cruz range, its pine-feathered ridges, the white sands upon which the milk-white foam creeps and crawls with a sinuous motion like some hugh leviathan of the deep. The azure heavens flecked with clouds. The whole panorama is one which the all-souled artist lives and loves to paint. Surely the "Naples of the New World" is the Bay of Monterey.

On once again. We now enter a well shaded road, and catch charming glimpses, here and there, of the grand old Carmel range, and then suddenly there bursts upon our entranced sight a panorama of sky, ocean, and woods. The broad Pacific is only distinguishable from the heavens above it by its glittering sheen as the sunlight plays upon its heaving breast. Anon, a little snowflake of foam dances on the molten surface as one billow, more playful than the rest, shakes its snowy crest, or the white sails of a ship appear, as swan-like she glides along the water. The weird forest, with its gaunt, ghoul-like, black pines, moaning in harmony with the ceaseless roar of the waves as the breeze plays

through the branches. Cold and uninviting is the distant view of this grim protector of the mysterious shades of the melancholy cypress. Enter the forest, and as you pass through the flowery glades the fragrance of the shrubs and the songs of the birds fall pleasantly on the senses. Pass on, and crossing an open space of green turf, startling the rabbits and quail, we enter another grove; the sun-flecks through the moss-hung and bearded trees, creating a pleasant, subdued light, such as is met with in the ancient minsters and Moorish alcazars of Europe. An involuntary thrill of delight runs through one, and from the storehouse of the mind rushes a flood of memory of childhood's days with its ancient legends of enchanted groves and fairies. A few steps farther, and the mystical grove is reached and crossed, and we gaze with rapture on the beauty of the sea coast. Surely God's world, beautiful as it is, can scarcely show fairer spots.

Landward the imperturbable cypress grove, silent as the Pyramids, mystical as the Sphinx, the gnarled gray trunks supporting the golden green branches—a fit haunt for departed spirits, a Merlin, or a slumbering cot for a child of Cain.

The Sierras of the Santa Lucia droop down into the sea, brown, barren, and velvety, like some old dust-begrimed tome in the old library at home, uninviting on the outside, but containing untold riches under its gloomy and forbidding garb. The ill starred Moro rock lifts its dome-shaped head with threatening aspect, warning mariners of the dangers of a rock-bound coast. The craggy rocks jut out into the ocean, and the playful breakers as they dash upon them send aloft showers of spray white as driven snow, while the sunlight shines through the bright green billows as they curl and dash along in their impetuous, never-ending race. At our feet the silvery crystal sands are sprinkled with glistening abalone shells, sea polished, and the varied colors of the beautiful sea mosses. Little pools teem with marine life and form a perfect aquarium, and the broad Pacific sweeps on in its uncontrollable course, bearing upon its bosom the wealth of empires.

Cross the point through the woody glades towards Point Pinos, passing pretty bays with white crystal sands and shelving beaches. Here the billows charge in with a greater impetuosity, but well in hand they break in a creamy ripple at the foot of the green-patched sand dunes. The black pines from which the point was named three hundred years ago, almost skirt the water. The moun-

tains of Santa Cruz bound the view. The many-plumaged sea birds flit by, and the sea lions dive under the foaming billows. Stay and watch the setting sun gild the trees and cast a golden haze upon the swelling waters, and then ride home through the moonlit groves, and if your trip to Cypress Point has not been a happy one blame yourself; for the beauty of all nature is there in bountiful store.

The Bay of Monterey also played a prominent part in this early booklet. Upon this topic an item was quoted from the *Salinas City Index*, which read as follows:

"It requires no great stretch of the imagination to predict that the products of a very large area of California, both to the south and east of Monterey and Salinas, are ultimately to find their way to tide-water across our Valley. In truth, between San Francisco and San Pedro, a distance of over four hundred miles, we hold the gateway to the only accessible harbor for general commerce with the world. It is only a question of time in regard to the centering of other railroads to this point. To the doubting ones we say, examine the profile maps of the country, then scan any map of the Atlantic seaboard, and answer us, whether in the light of what has come to pass elsewhere, we are extravagant in our prediction for the future.

"We would not give a fig for the judgment of that man who is despondent over our future prospects. There were just such in San Francisco twenty years ago, and with about as much reason and judgment as those who are fearful there is no further room for progress here."

And continuing with quotations concerning the Bay, the *Monterey Herald* said:

"Only a few years have elapsed since the first ship loaded grain at San Francisco for Europe; and when we compare the great fleet of vessels engaged in transporting our cereals to foreign ports with the number that were so engaged a few years ago, is it any wonder that the Californian's heart swells with pride, and that he dreams of how this great fleet shall be multiplied until it shall astonish the world?

"It is well, while the Californian is conjuring up such a brilliant future for his State, that he should pause in his reverie and ask himself what should be done for the proper protection of such vessels. It is well known that, during the prevalence of rough

weather outside, a vessel cannot enter the harbor of San Francisco, and any arriving at such a time must of necessity put to sea, or come to Monterey, where nature has modeled a Port of Refuge, with no 'bar' to guard its entrance, and free from all dangerous shoals and rocks. The storm of last Fall bears out this assertion, for the Bay was filled with all vessels within reach seeking refuge there, entering and leaving just as they pleased.

"But nature has not made our harbor so good that the hand of man cannot improve it; and we believe it to be the duty of those interested in the future welfare of our State, to properly represent to Congress the great good that would result from the expenditure of a small sum of money, compared to the benefits that would accrue to the shipping interests of this coast, in improving the port of Monterey.

"The harbor, properly, is in the shape of a horse-shoe, the mouth opening to the north, and it is amply protected from the south, east, and west; and with a breakwater extending half a mile into the Bay from the northwestern shore, the harbor would afford perfect safety from winds from any and all points of the compass. Even now the largest ships in the navies of the world can ride with safety through any gale that blows in the Bay of Monterey; but no doubt improvements can be made.

"There is also a large natural laguna, which could be without difficulty transformed into a dry or wet dock. In fact, the natural position of Monterey is such that she is bound to become, next to San Francisco, the most flourishing port on the coast. Her growth may be retarded, but it cannot be prevented."

So much for what the newspapers of the day said of the famous Monterey Bay. Hon. P. A. Roach, first mayor of Monterey, said the following in June of 1870:

"Look at this magnificent bay. It stretches from point to point twenty-eight miles. It can shelter the navies of the world. Its anchorage is secure. No pilot has ever needed to bring vessels even to its wharf. The largest ships ever constructed can ride at anchor within a few hundred yards of the beach. The great sea-ports of the world are obliged to lay heavy charges on shipping for inward and outward pilotage. The cost of this service in San Francisco for one year, or at the most, two years, would build in Monterey Bay a breakwater that would give perfect security in all weather; but the United States Government ought

to perform this duty. Of late it has been seeking to obtain harbors in various sections of the world, which will require immense sums to place them in security.

"Why not devote some of the treasure to improve this harbor? The ports of Monterey and Santa Cruz can soon be made great centers of shipment of merchandise. A railroad could be constructed to bring, for shipment hence, immense quantities of grain from the San Joaquin region. A railroad even within the county would bring produce to fill your grain elevators, and as in the past, Monterey would become again in the markets of the world a place of commercial importance. Look at yonder Estero, bridged to lead from the Church to the Cemetery. There is a natural dockyard by removing the sand bar that obstructs its mouth. It is deep enough to take in the largest ship, and was favorably reported on by many of the Naval Commanders. Why not adopted? Because there was a combination on foot in 1849, of high speculators. Our people who owned land were made to believe that the convention, if called, would continue the Capital at Monterey; that the Barracks would be used, and that a naval depot would be established here. Then your people swapped lots in San Francisco for those in Monterey. You remember many of these bargains to your sorrow.

"Soon came the change; the Capital was removed to San Jose; then we saw the naval depot taken from us; next we heard that wooden shanties were to be erected in the *healthier* climate of Benicia, for the army. These tinder boxes, and the expense entailed by the change, cost over a million dollars. I asked Governor Riley, the last military Governor of the Territory, why this change? Why abandon fire-proof quarters for the others? The gallant soldier, and the honest, scar-marked veteran answered in his stammering manner, spec-spec-spec-speculation. That is what caused the quick blow against your city."

The foregoing, it must be remembered, were the opinions of 1875. It may readily be seen that many of the prophesies have come true, while many others have not. As a "watering" or bathing place it has not achieved the fame that perhaps is due it. Its near neighbor, Santa Cruz, on the other hand, has become famous for its excellent beach and its all-the-year-round bathing.

Manufactories of various kinds have not developed with the speed and abundance with which they were expected. It cannot

be denied that the resources are in the county for manufactories of many kinds—and many manufactories do exist—but what the county lacks in this respect it makes up in other ways. For instance, while the Monterey Peninsula does not manufacture boots and shoes and cloth, it does manufacture literature and the arts —manufactures them in the minds of a whole host of writers, sculptors, and artists who literally absorb inspiration from the lavishly strewn natural beauty. So the pines and the sea and the beaches do serve an admirable purpose in the giving of the "urge" to craftsmen of pen and brush and chisel.

The fishing industry of Monterey has perhaps exceeded the expectations of the early prophets. As one of the principal fishing centers along the Pacific coast, it supplies sea food for all parts of America and many other parts of the world. The supply of fish in adjacent fishing grounds has seemed inexhaustible. Larger and larger catches are made, previous records are yearly being broken, and the business is on a sounder basis than it has ever been. The fishermen may be heard clumping down to their boats in great rubber shoes at all hours of the night. The cannery folk toil through long hours—and at high wages—cutting, sorting, and packing the fish.

As astounding number of varieties of fish are found in the local waters. Monterey is so situated as to be the meeting place of the warm water fish that swim up from the south and the cold water fish that swim down from the north. Literally, great schools of each class arrive for their tutelage here; and the fishermen spare not the rod, nor, for that matter, the reel or net or spear. The whaling industry has fallen off until it is a shade of its past importance; while on the other hand new fish are found edible and are hotly pursued. The abalone, a shell fish that a few years ago was ignored as not worth bothering with, has now become a delicacy, what with improved culinary skill and scientific study. "Pop" Ernest Doelter was the man to popularize the abalone. His dishes attracted people from afar and his arts of preparing the muscled abalone soon gained wide circulation. Indeed, recent years have found so much interest displayed in this particular food (which, it will be remembered, was considered worthless an era ago) that the Fish and Game Commission has had to pass laws regarding the capture of it, making it unlawful to take the

abalone from the sea until it has matured, and then to limit each person's catch.

The matter of hotels, which was a problem in the days of '75, no longer troubles the sleep of the tourist. The town is adequately supplied with beautiful hotels. The Hotel Del Monte has long been the resort for the wealthy class. It has been the haven of the better class of tourists for years. In view of its prestige, of its glamor of many years, it is only proper to speak of its history. In 1882 a number of progressive Californians, with Charles Crocker, the railroad magnate, at their head, planned to make Monterey a great and popular resort for the winter as well as the summer. The first thing they would do, it was decided, was to erect a fine hotel, the grounds of which were secured in a choice part of the Peninsula, in a large natural park of live oaks and pines, about a mile from the town proper. In this natural park, then, the hotel was built. "The hotel was built in the best style, and with its grounds and facilities for the amusement of guests, was unequalled on the Pacific Coast." Over 127 acres were laid out in pleasure walks and drives about the hotel. The Monterey cypress and pine were planted thickly, and these with the venerable oaks added greatly to the beauty of the numerous lawns. In places these lawns bore a striking resemblance to the parks in English domains, the turf being as brilliantly green in December as in August. One of the most picturesque features of the grounds was furnished by the old oaks, many of which had been bent by the wind into the most fantastic shapes. Every resource of the landscape gardener had been lavished on the grounds, and artistic beds of choice flowers alternated with bits of rare shrubbery to make the place a paradise of dainty devices. A novel sight to the easterner was the "Arizona Garden," where more than a score of different species of the cactus were growing. This plot of ground—a bit of old Arizona—was carefully planned and planted so as to bring the color of the desert into this fairyland of verdure. An artificial lake, a race-track, lawn tennis, archery and croquet grounds, billiard and club rooms, united to make this resort full of resources for recreation and amusement. Down on the beach, but a short stroll from the hotel, were the large bathing-houses, with four tanks of salt water, graduated in temperature, for the use of the bathers.

This paradise of the tourists, however, was doomed to have

more than its share of fires. On April 1, 1887, at midnight, the Hotel del Monte was razed by greedy flames. Within one hour after the fire started the famous hotel was but a mound of smoking ashes—nothing more. Fortunately all the guests escaped without injury, but "the majority lost wardrobe, jewels, and baggage." However, the set-back incurred by the fire was not to be the last of the old resort, for the work of rebuilding was at once begun and pushed rapidly forward, reproducing the main structure, greatly enlarged by the new annexes. The new dining-room was, in that day, one of the most spacious and elegant in the country.

Again in 1924 this hotel was visited by fire, and once again suffered a heavy loss. The main part of the hotel went completely up in smoke, only the two wings being saved. And once more every one escaped without injury. The work of rebuilding was not long delayed, and this year of 1925 promises to see the labors well along in the construction of an ultra-superior resort.

The following vivid description of the fire and its subsequent events was given in the *Oakland Tribune:*

"A brick chimney or two, piles of heat-twisted iron, little clouds of smoke arising from masses of hot embers, a doleful throng of tired fire-fighters and casual onlookers.

"This is the Del Monte today, the scene of yesterday's hectic events, of Friday's joviality and good cheer.

"Saturday night has been a great night in the history of the Del Monte hotel. For thirty years or more it has seen drama of life enacted within its four walls. Debutantes have danced with cheeks aglow, old age has received new life as it cavorted to the music that ranged from the mazurkas of one period to the camels' walks of another.

"But there was no music in Del Monte last night. Only the hissing of steam on the ruins, as the firemen wet the smouldering brands, arose above the whispered chatterings of the visitors.

"But the spirit of gloom that attends the last act of the drama at the historic hostelry does not extend beyond the cordon that is stretched to prevent the unwary from accident in and about the ruins.

"Already, to borrow the bromide, the Hotel Del Monte is preparing to rise phoenix-like. Already architects and contractors are making plans for the erection of a new building that will far

outshine the wooden pile that gave way last night before the flames of mysterious origin.

"Announcement was made while the fire was at its height that California would lose nothing by the fire. S. F. B. Morse, president of the Del Monte Properties company, owner of the hotel, stood watching the blaze yesterday morning the while he formulated plans for the new structure.

"The fire which destroyed the main building of the hotel is believed to have started from a defective flue in one of the chimneys that stands like a spectre of the past grimly surveying the damage it has wrought today. The cost figured in monetary terms aggregates $3,000,000.

"But it is the sentimental damage that will be difficult to replace in the minds of Californians. They are recalling not the investure of the rooms, not the beauties of the climate, not the appointments of the place, but the fact that it was within these walls that some of the happiest moments of their lives were spent.

"Hotel Del Monte was the scene of the honeymoons of a great portion of California's residents. It was the scene of the 'coming outs' of some of the most important names in the blue books. It was the place where were held some of the most colorful of dances and banquets.

"In fact the destruction of the hotel temporarily halts the plans of the townsfolk to hold the grand fandango to culminate their Junipero Serra celebration early next month. This was to have been the crowning event of Del Monte's long career as a locale for famous events.

"Due to the bravery of the seven hundred guests and attendants of the hotel the famous collection of antiques, the valuable Shreve collection of jewelry and the notable paintings and other works of art contributed to the hotel by guests of fame have been saved.

"These will be installed in the new home, according to the plans of Morse, who expects to start the new building directly when the ashes of the old have been swept away."

Other hotels of the Monterey Peninsula (outside of the more commercial class in the heart of town) that were to achieve fame and greet the traveler with a hospitality far to seek elsewhere, were the Highlands Inn, La Playa Hotel (destroyed by fire in 1924 and rebuilt in 1925), Pebble Beach Lodge, Pine Inn, and a

number of lesser ones. These resorts, however, have achieved statewide, if not nationwide fame, and dispersed the gloom of the days of '75 when a night's lodging meant sleeping between crumbling adobe walls.

The shooting of grizzly bears, of course, has long become a sport of the past. However, there still exists the sport of hunting smaller game—the field of such sport lying in the wooded valleys of Monterey County.

The Carmel Mission, which local people almost deplored of restoring in '75, has been brought back to most of its pristine beauty; and historians no longer have the fear of its crumbling to nothingness. The restoration of the mission has already been dealt with fully, showing how and at what labor the work was carried on.

So much for the development of Monterey. One set-back, which threatened to wipe out the town, was experienced late in the summer of 1924. On September 14 of that year one of the huge oil tanks of the Associated Oil Company, located just below the military post in Monterey, was struck by lightning and burst into demoniacal flames. The heat was so intense that neighboring oil tanks were soon ignited and poured their hot blasts of smoke and fire into the heavens. As the burning oil ran from the steel tanks, which were melting like tallow, it coursed through the streets, and into the bay where it continued to blaze. Not until the 17th, when a million dollars in damage had been done, was the fire brought under control. It was a fire that brought newspaper men scurrying from the larger cities to report the disaster; a fire that gripped many Montereyans in fear and took two of their lives; a fire that not only threatened much of the town itself, but seriously handicapped the Serra Pilgrimage which was slated for the following month. We have already gone into detail over the famous Pilgrimage, but we have not spoken of the set-back the oil fire wrought. A newspaper account at the time of the fire links the two together, showing the effect one had upon the other!

"Monterey Peninsula squared its figurative shoulders this morning, cleared its equally figurative eyes, and, after taking stock of the results of the immense oil fire of Sunday and Monday, again went about its way, preparing for the Serra Pilgrimage, the annual Spanish fiesta, October 12-19. When the offices of the Pilgrimage opened this morning, Director General Perry Newberry

was met by a delegation of local business men who increased their already large contributions to the underwriting plan, and assured him that 'the show will go on, just as if nothing had happened.'

"One of the first contributions to come in this morning was that of the Associated Oil Company, heaviest losers in the fire, who handed their check for a nice, tidy sum to Mr. Newberry, in appreciation of the work of Monterey Peninsula people toward saving property in the early stages of the fire.

"Despite alarming reports sent out on Sunday night, it was found that the damage, although quite heavy, was confined to a small area, and would in no way serve to detract from the beauty of the city, or hinder plans for the Pilgrimage. On the other hand, it was pointed out, visitors to the Peninsula during the Spanish Fiesta week will have an opportunity of visiting the scene of the largest oil conflagration of the year in the state of California.

"During the heaviest of the fire, at an early hour last night, a party of actors from the cast of the pageant 'Fra Junipero Serra,' rehearsed their parts, under the watchful eye of Mr. Newberry in the Monterey Chamber of Commerce rooms, less than a mile from the fire.

"The funerals of Robert Boleo and Eustace Watkins (the two soldiers who perished in the flames), being over, Col. Herbert J. Brees, commandant at Presidio of Monterey, ordered his men to renew their preparations for participation in the Pilgrimage. Rehearsals will be under way every night this week. * * *"

Since the fire, the oil tanks have been rebuilt at Seaside, a safe distance, to prevent another similar disaster.

Another disappointment to Monterey is that its bay has not yet come into its just deserts. Much shipping that probably should belong to it is taken elsewhere. Yet, shipping is done through this medium, and the value of the bay is yearly becoming better known and more popular. In time it will probably have a patronage of shipping lines that is due it.

As far as beauty of the countryside goes, this exists today as it did in all ages of the past. "A Simple Tribute" recently paid Monterey by Gouverneur Morris makes clear the fact that Monterey Peninsula and the old Pacific Capital is still the scene of some of the richest and rarest beauty of the world. In the delightful language of Mr. Morris, we hear, as a song, that

"Jules Simoneau was still alive when I (Morris) first came to Monterey. He had a big porcelain bowl filled to the brim with letters from Robert Louis Stevenson. This was very many years ago.

"There was probably very good bear shooting where Carmel now rhymes and paints, and Pebble Beach was a Chinese fishing village.

"I had been loaned in those happy dusty days a grey pony named Fiddlesticks, who could find his way blindfolded into the heart of the Maze at Del Monte and with whom I became intimately acquainted with every square foot of the beautiful land on the Peninsula.

"Now unless it be the Island of Mount Desert, off the Maine coast, there is no small geographical unit in all this immense world so variedly, deliciously and peacefully beautiful as the Monterey Peninsula. Nor has any other region an air so sweet, so fresh and compelling.

"But this same sweet air is divided and subdivided into as many climates, separate and distinct as a man has wishes. He may keep himself as warm or as cool as he chooses. He may set up his Lares and Penates in a pool of sunshine and captivate the affection of horned toads, or he may live where the wind blows salt from the sea, and the fogs temper the sun.

"I went away, those very many years ago, so saturated with the beauties and varieties of Monterey, and with its easy good nature and cheerfulness, that my judgment of other places has never been without a bias in its favor.

"If there are people still left in this restless world who care more about homes which grow more beautiful through occupancy and care—people, in short, who can be content to pick on some place and live in it—I have always thought that from January 1 round to January 1 again there is no place in all the world that has so much to lavish as the Monterey Peninsula.

"If you love a wild coast, it is here. So is the deep tranquil forest and the rolling uplands, set richly with live oaks and in the spring time exploding into flowers.

"The Peninsula has not stood still but its progress has not been the mushroom growth of certain regions, which, less sure of their real natural charms and advantages, have made up for

it by riots of boasting and self-laudation. Such regions are wise to boast. It is best for them to grow while the growing is good.

"But the Peninsula's future is of a better and surer kind. Some day there will be twenty million people in California and this will be their playground. It cannot be otherwise for there is no other region upon the whole California coast which can hold a candle to it or which for beauty of contour and vegetation and climate is fit to be mentioned in the same breath with it."

CHAPTER XXX

POINTS OF INTEREST IN THE OLD CAPITAL

Naturally in a town of the historical importance of Monterey there would be many points of statewide, nationwide interest. We have touched upon many of them in the development of old Monterey from the earliest times to the present. Many of them, however, have scarcely been mentioned. It is the purpose of this chapter to list each place of historical value and to tell something of its importance. Not only will the objects of the romantic "yesterdays" play a part, but a number of the monuments to the twentieth century will be treated.

It is not the claim of the writer to tell anything new or startling about these objects. Historians have been poking about these interest-points for over a century. They have dug up nearly every grain of importance from them, and have sown them in the pages of countless books. However, it is not often that one sees them all listed together and correlated. It is our aim to do this, and to augment what others have said with what is hoped to be a fresh angle.

Abrego Home.

The Abrego Home was built by Don Jose Abrego, a Mexican merchant of Spanish parentage, who came to Monterey in 1834, with Hijar colonists, on the vessel *La Natalie,* which is said to be the vessel on which Emperor Napoleon escaped from the Isle of Elba. Later the vessel was sold to smugglers who carried on their business for a few months. One night while the men were on shore a heavy northeast gale parted the anchor chain and she drifted ashore and was wrecked. A great part of the timbers of this historic vessel were used by Don Abrego in building his home. In 1836 he married Josefa Estrada, a half sister of Governor Alvarado, and moved at once into a part of the house which he had built, and to which additions were made afterwards.

In this home was one of the first pianos ever brought to California. This home was the scene of many a social gathering, cascarone parties and receptions, up to the time of Mrs. Abrego's death in the 'nineties.

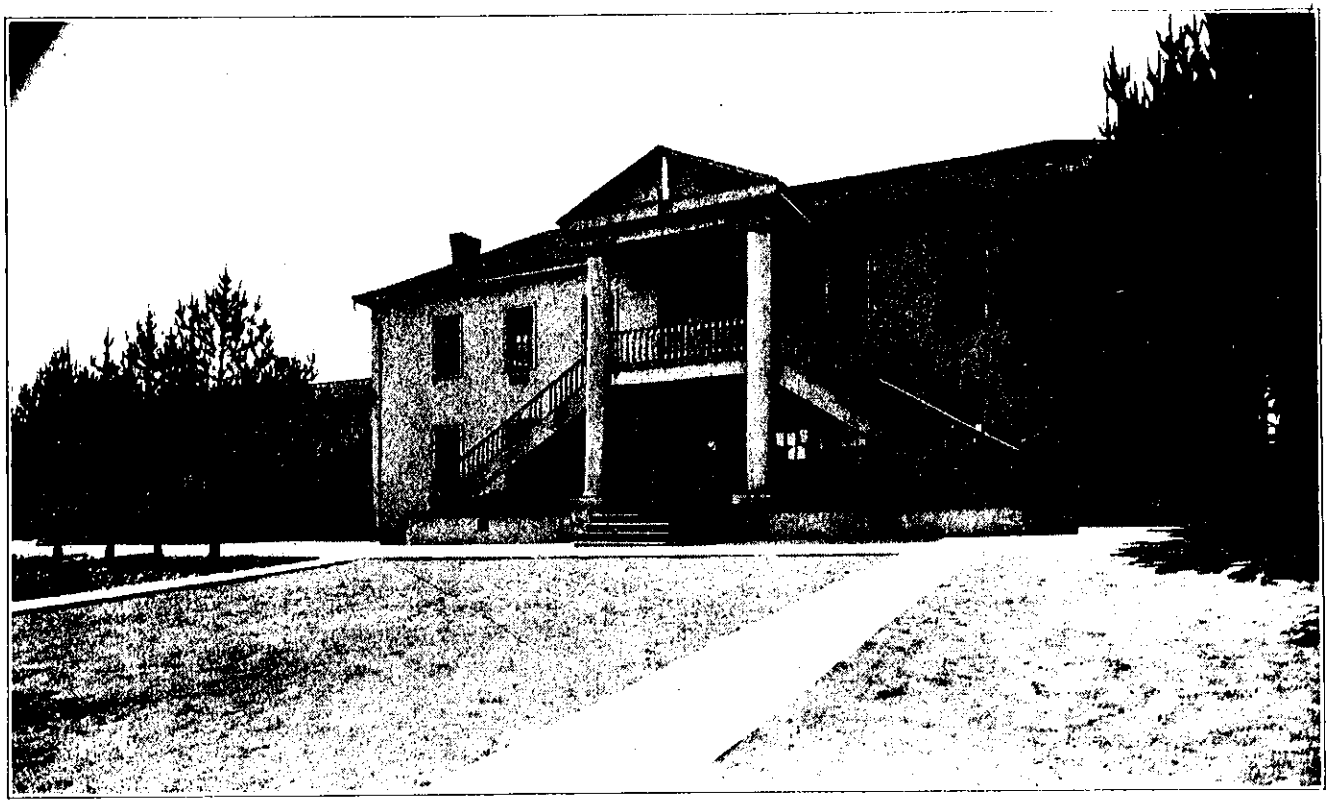
Additional Relics of the Natalie.

Other parts of the *Natalie* which were rescued from the sea have been placed on exhibition in the Monterey Chamber of Commerce. Here one may see a number of the ship's "knees"—the very last remains of the old five-masted schooner, *La Natalie,* formerly the French sloop-of-war *Inconstant,* which, as we have said, was wrecked on the shores of Monterey Bay. The historic value of the relics lies in the fact that the *Inconstant* or *La Natalie,* was the ship upon which, as said above, Emporer Napoleon Bonaparte escaped from the Isle of Elba when he returned to France for the One Hundred Days' War, which ended in the Battle of Waterloo and Napoleon's subsequent incarceration at St. Helena.

On the last night of her life *La Natalie,* then in the hands of smugglers, lay off the foot of what is now Figueroa Street. Her crew came ashore to attend a "Cascarone Ball." When the revelry was at its height a storm arose, and the ship was blown ashore, where she soon began to break up. Her master, Jose Abrego, dismantled the ship's upper works, and used the lumber to build the home of which we have spoken.

Three times in a century the remaining portions of the wrecked ship came above the surface of the water, due to a shifting of the sands and an extremely low tide. On the night of September 12, 1924, Henry J. Leppert, of Monterey, risked his life in the undertow and treacherous sands off the beach, to rescue these portions (the knees) of the ship. Still later, "Pop" Ernest Doelter and his sons saved still another portion of the ship, together with a large amount of copper and brass bolts and fittings.

The "knees" of this ship are of teak. Ninety-three years in the water and sand, and still showing the marks of the adz and saw! This wood came from Australia, the "knees" being cut from the natural outcroppings of the tree, the trunk forming one angle and the limb the other.



COLTON HALL, MONTEREY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Amesti House.

This house is a two story adobe building with a garden in front, and is situated at 514 Polk Street, near the Cooper home. As nearly as can be ascertained it was built in 1825 by Don Jose Amesti, a Spanish Basque who came to Monterey in 1822, at the age of thirty. In 1824 he married Prudenciana Vallejo, sister of General Vallejo.

Colton Hall.

Colton Hall was the first capitol building of California and was the meeting place of the "First Constitutional Convention."

It was built by Rev. Walter Colton, a chaplain of the frigate "Congress" and who was appointed Alcalde on July 28, 1846, by Commodore Stockton, the successor of Commodore Sloat. He was afterwards elected to the same office by the people.

For many years the office of the city clerk of Monterey has been occupying the building.

Convent.

On the northwest corner of Main and Franklin streets is a large vacant lot, where once stood one of the leading educational institutions of the state. St. Catherine's Academy, as this school was called, was opened in 1851 by three nuns of the Dominican order, under the direction of the Right Rev. Joseph Alemany, Bishop of Monterey.

Joseph Alemany, O. P., was a native of Spain and feeling the call of the missionary, left his native country, in the early forties to come to America. After laboring zealously in the Atlantic states, he resolved to pass the remainder of his life in the Spanish speaking settlements on the Pacific coast. In 1850 he was consecrated bishop of Monterey, and fully realizing the need of a school for girls, and the necessity of having religious women to instruct the children of his new flock, he sent east for Mary Goemare, a French nun of the Dominican order and a most cultured woman.

She came in answer to his appeal, accompanied by two other nuns, Mary Frances Stafford and Mary Aloysia O'Neal. They

came to California by way of Aspinwall and Panama. From Aspinwall to Panama they traveled on mule back and on November 16, 1850, they left Panama on the steamer *Columbus*, reaching San Francisco on December 6 and arriving in Monterey a few days later.

On the first of the new year they opened a school at the residence of W. E. P. Hartnell, a prominent member of the Roman Catholic church and one whose life was intimately connected with the early history of California. On account of increased attendance the school was soon moved to a new building on Main Street near Franklin, which was purchased from Don Manuel Jimeno, a brother-in-law of Mrs. Hartnell. This building had been erected for a hotel. The convent was formally opened and placed under the care of St. Catherine of Sienna and named St. Catherine's Academy.

Instruction in the Monterey Convent was given in the elementary branches: Reading, writing, grammar and mathematics, also French, Spanish, English, music and needle work. The charge for tuition in the regular branches and board was $400 a year, while the day pupils were received for the sum of $2 a month. The school accommodated about one hundred and fifty pupils, many coming from the different parts of the state.

In 1854 the convent was removed to Benicia, where, with Notre Dame at San Jose in later years, it still ranked as one of the foremost educational institutions. After the convent was closed at Monterey, the Rev. Sorrentini, the parish priest of San Carlos church, acting under instructions from the bishop, had the lower floor of the building made into a chapel and the large dormitory in the upper story was turned into a banquet hall. Many old time Fiestas were held in this room, such as the celebrating of baptisms and marriages of prominent members of the church. For many years the other rooms were reserved as guest rooms for the bishop and visiting priests.

Later the building was rented to private parties and rapidly took on evidences of decay, finally degenerating into an ill-kept tenement, a shelter for California Indians.

A few years afterward the building was wrecked by order of the parish priest, the Rev. Casanova, and the adobe was used to level some of the streets of Monterey.

THE OLD CUSTOM HOUSE, MONTEREY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Cooper Home.

The Cooper home stands at 508 Munras Avenue. It was built in 1829 by Captain J. B. R. Cooper, a pioneer of 1823. Mr. Cooper was a native of Alderney Island, England, and came to Massachusetts as a boy with his mother, who, by a second marriage became the mother of Thomas Larkin, the first and only American consul. Capt. Cooper came to Monterey from Boston in 1823, as master of the *Rover*. He sold the vessel afterwards to Governor Arguello but continued to command her until 1826. In 1827 he was baptized in the Roman Catholic church and the same year he married Encarnacion Vallejo, a sister of General Guadalupe Vallejo. From 1826 until 1848 Mr. Cooper's name appears frequently in the original records. He was well liked and of a splendid character. The Cooper home is now the property of the E. J. Molera family, San Francisco, and is used as a summer home. Mrs. Molera was formerly Amelia Cooper, and is a daughter of the late Captain Cooper.

Custom House.

No other building on the Pacific coast occupies so prominent a place in history as the Old Custom House. The flags of three nations have flown over this structure.

As nearly as can be ascertained, the north end of the building was erected in 1814, when the country was under Spanish rule. The central or one story section was built by Mexico in 1822, after its independence from Spain, and the lower end, which is exactly like the north end, was built after the American occupation in 1846. The Custom House became the headquarters of Captain Mervine and a party of marines, after the taking of Monterey by the United States naval forces under Commodore Sloat on July 7, 1846.

The state now owns the property, which is under the care of the Native Sons of the Golden West and the Native Sons and Daughters have their headquarters there.

First Brick House.

The first brick house stands on Decatur Street and has an interesting history. Duncan Dickinson, a Virginian, with his

wife, four sons and two daughters, was a member of the Donner party, which started for California in May, 1846, from Independence, Missouri. At Fort Bridger, the Dickinson party separated from the Donner party and took the route more generally travelled and finally reached Santa Clara. Hearing that war had broken out between Mexico and the United States Dickinson and his two sons, with A. G. Lawrie, who afterwards became his son-in-law, enlisted in Captain C. M. Weber's company.

Returning from their service, they continued on to Monterey. On May 31, 1848, Dickinson bought the land on Decatur Street, 90 yards long, for the sum of $29.00. Lawrie, who was a brick-mason, was the builder of the house. The building was never completed. The house as it stands today is only a wing of the building originally planned. The "Gold Rush" diverted the plans of its builder, who never returned to complete it.

First Frame Building.

This historic building was brought from Australia by way of Cape Horn, in sections, in the year 1847. The owner was William Bushton, a sea captain, who had come to California with his wife and sick daughter, thinking that the climate would restore her to health. The lumber was nine months on the way to Monterey. Soon after the house was put up, Bushton died and his widow married William Allen. Two sons were born to that union, the eldest, Ed. Allen, one of the city councilmen of Monterey, and Tom Allen, who served as a constable for 18 years in Monterey. Until two years ago, when the property was sold and the house torn down, Tom Allen, with his family, had been occupying the old frame house. Here children to the fifth generation of the Allen family, were born, the last being a great-great-grandson, Robert Winslow, born October 1, 1922.

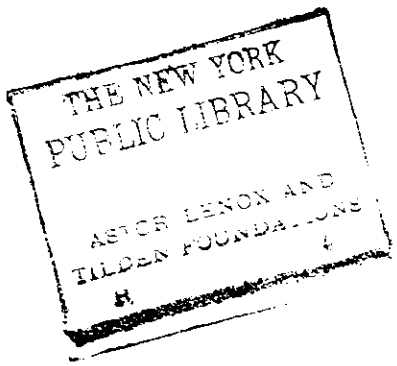
At present J. C. Anthony has possession of the lumber from the building. A few gavels have been made from the wood and presented to various civic organizations in Monterey.

House of Four Winds.

This rambling old structure was the first in this community to boast a weather vane. Thus it received its name. Thomas Larkin also was the builder of this adobe. It was the first Hall



FIRST LUMBER BUILDING IN CALIFORNIA. LUMBER SHIPPED FROM AUSTRALIA. MONTEREY.


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

of Records in the state, and the first recorder of Monterey County, the late W. C. Johnson had his office in that building for several years as well as his home.

Larkin House.

On the corner of Main and Jefferson streets stands the home built by Thomas Larkin in 1834. Mr. Larkin came to Monterey in 1832 and opened the first retail and wholesale store in California. He became United States Consul and was instrumental in bringing the country under the American flag. He was the first and only American Consul. In 1844 he established a small-pox hospital in Monterey, to the expenses of which the Mexican government contributed liberally. Larkin House was a political and social center. It is now the property of Robt. F. Johnson, an ex-mayor of Monterey.

Munras Home (Now the home of T. J. Field).

Usually landmarks bear out their name, and have about them evidence of the wear and tear of time, but not so with a modern looking edifice that stands conspicuously at the very gateway of Monterey. As Monterey boasts of so many landmarks, it seems but an act of justice that public attention be called to its origin and builder, and that it be accorded its proper place among the things noteworthy in this historic locality. This house was erected in 1824 by Don Esteban Munras, a Spaniard from Barcelona, who left his native country to go to Lima, Peru, in the employ of the Spanish government. In 1820 he came to Monterey with the purpose of engaging in trading operations. After two years residence, he married Catalina Manzanelli, the daughter of Nicolas Manzanelli, a silk merchant from Genoa, Italy, and of Casilda Ponce de Leon, a lineal descendant of the great Spanish explorer and navigator.

Don Esteban was the first to build a pretentious dwelling in Monterey. In the early days of the settlement, the presidio housed practically the entire population. Besides the barracks, officers' quarters and dwelling houses for the officers' families, civilians and their families also had their residences within the confines; due, no doubt, to the danger of attacks by Indians the country became thoroughly subdued.

The interior of this house has not been changed. The exterior has a modern coating, hiding the faithful adobe that still retains its strength and security against future years. Its roof has also added angles and is a substantial departure from the old, making it necessary in order to give honor where honor is due, that its story be repeated to those who are shut out from the light by its modern aspect.

In this was constructed, what is probably the first fireplace built in a home in California, and the original andirons are still preserved in the fireplace of the home.

The Munras home has not passed to strangers, but still remains in the family. Catalina Danglada Field, grand-daughter of Don Esteban, and daughter of Professor Danglada and Maria Antonia Munras, is the presiding mistress. Miss Danglada married the Hon. Thomas J. Field, president of one of the local banks.

Pacheco House.

The Pacheco house is on the southwest corner of Abrego and Webster streets, and was built in 1819, by the artillery detachment under Jose Ramirez, Mexican sub-lieutenant with the artillery. Don Francisco Pacheco was claimant for the San Felipe, San Justo and San Lucas Gonzaga ranchos, and became one of the wealthiest land owners of Monterey County, besides being always a man of good character, excellent reputation and much influence. His daughter married Don Mariano Malarin, a member of another prominent California family. For many years this was the summer home of the Malarin family.

Pacific House.

The Pacific House stands at the intersection of Alvarado, Main and Scott streets. It was built for a hotel by James McKinley, a native of Scotland, and a pioneer of 1842. The property was later sold to David Jacks. For many years the Presbyterian church held services in this building and now the upper floor is the headquarters of the Salvation Army. The Army-Navy Y. M. C. A. is also established in the building.

Presidio.

The present Presidio of Monterey was established in 1900 and is one of the important military posts of the United States. The

presidio was founded at the same time as the mission of Monterey, in 1770. The year following, the mission was removed to Carmel but the presidio and chapel remained at Monterey, where San Carlos church now stands. Guns were mounted by the Spaniards on the hill overlooking the bay, where the presidio now is. In 1822 after Mexico obtained her independence from Spain, a fort was built by the Mexicans, and about the year 1843, Governor Micheltorena ordered a deep ditch dug on the site of the present fort. After the American occupation, a block house was built and ship guns mounted, by orders of Commodore Stockton, the successor of Commodore Sloat. The Fort was named Fort Stockton but the name was later changed to Fort Mervine, in honor of Captain Mervine, the officer in charge. Fort Halleck was built in 1847 by Company F, Third Artillery. Dr. James Ord, a member of that company, who visited Monterey in 1892, gave the following information to the *Monterey New Era*, regarding this fort: "The fort was named Fort Halleck in honor of Lieut. Halleck of the corps of engineers by whom it was laid out. It was built by Lieut. E. O. Ord and Lieut. W. T. Sherman in 1847, and the earthworks were thrown up by Colonel Stevenson's command, the New York Volunteers and the regulars then stationed on the hill."

Point Pinos Light House.

Point Pinos Light House is located at Point Pinos, about two miles west of Pacific Grove. It is one of the oldest stations on the coast, being first erected February 5, 1855. It is a "fixed light"—it does not revolve and flash. A history of Monterey County, published in 1893 gives the following description of the light: "It is a white light of the third order of ninety candle power, and is visible at a distance of fifteen and one-fourth nautical miles. The light is supplemented by a whistling buoy of the first class, audible for a distance of six miles. The light is surrounded by a catoptric lens of the third order." Point Pinos is a one-keeper show station and its first keeper was Charles Layton.

Robert Louis Stevenson House.

The Stevenson house, properly speaking, is the larger of two adjoining houses on Houston Street between Pearl and Webster streets, though each of these two houses is known as Stevenson House. The larger house was the home of Jules Simoneau in

1879, with whom Stevenson lived. The buildings are now owned by Captain Randall, and several artists retain studios and make their home in the historic structure.

It is only just at this point to say a word of the master craftsman of the English language who inhabited this house for a lucrative period of writing. The following is based upon a pamphlet printed by the Monterey Peninsula Communities, Inc.

It was in September of 1879 that Stevenson came to Monterey. He was so ill that he was forced to live outdoors for three weeks. He chose a goat ranch in the Santa Lucia Mountains. Returning to Monterey he found rooms in the old house in Houston Street—"two airy rooms with five windows." Here he wrote "The Pavilion on the Links," prepared copious notes for "The Amateur Emigrant," and planned "Prince Otto." Here he made the first draft of what is probably the best descriptive article ever written on Monterey—"The Old Pacific Capital."

For his meals he frequented an adobe restaurant kept by a Frenchman, Jules Simoneau, his devoted friend. It was Simoneau who ministered to him during a desperate illness, cheered him through dark days of adversity, and opened his slender purse when the great romancer was without money.

The Monterey portrayed by Dana was the capital of Mexican California. The Monterey of Stevenson was a sleepy town that remembered the days of its glory only as a dream. Yet it had a fascination for one of his romantic temperament. He was a fellow to its moods, and wrote of it lovingly. Also he used the scenery of the Monterey Peninsula as a background for "Treasure Island." The literary pilgrim may discover on the Seventeen Mile Drive the very cove in which the treasure seekers of the *Hispaniola* landed; the long stretches of sand dunes over which they toiled; and the thicket of live oaks in which Jim Hawkins overheard the pirate conference and saw Long John Silver strike down with his crutch one of his mates who had refused to join in his plan of murder. It is just such a place, these weird cypress groves of the Monterey Peninsula, that Flint and his merry men would pick to bury their chests of doubloons and pieces of eight.

The trip to "Treasure Island" makes an ideal jaunt for the motorist, and it is within easy walking distance of Monterey, Pacific Grove and Carmel. The Stevenson House itself is picturesque in its very bareness. It inspires the tourist to marvel



HOME OF ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON, MONTEREY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

at the master mind that rose to such glorious heights within its adobe walls.

Stoddard—His Grave.

The grave of Charles Warren Stoddard in the Monterey cemetery is another of the Monterey Peninsula's historically literary points. A word also of this man, whose "South Sea Idyls" is an American classic. His rare literary gifts shine out in the pages of "A Memory of Monterey." Stoddard came to Monterey in the early 'eighties and abode here until his death in 1909.

"She was a dear old stupid town in my day," he wrote. "Geese fed in the gutters and hissed at the passers-by. Cows grazed by the wayside and eyed the wayfarer in grave surprise. Overhead the snow-white sea gulls wheeled and cried peevishly, and on the heights that ring the old capital round on the landward side, the pine trees moaned and held the sea fog in their branches while the little town was basking in the sunshine and dreaming its endless dream."

This gentle brother of the pen, a fellow of infinite jest, with "a mustang humor forever kicking its silver heels into the honeyed sweetness of his flowing poetry," sleeps within sound of the long blue rollers breaking on the tawny beach at Monterey. It was the sound that he, like his crony Stevenson, loved best of all. And like Stevenson, he "lies where he longed to be." The pine-strewn dust of the little Monterey cemetery lies light over him, and the trade wind, blowing salt from the sea, brings with it the soft perfume of those "Islands of Tranquil Delight" he loved so well.

Serra Monument.

One of the most beautiful and fitting memorials to Father Junipero Serra is the monument erected in 1891 by Mrs. Jane Stanford. It stands on an eminence fronting the beautiful bay of Monterey and close by the spot where Father Serra landed.

This monument not alone marks a historical spot in Monterey, but is significant to the whole state of California; for largely through the work of this one Padre California was transformed from a state of barbarity into one of civilized advancement. It was the work of Serra that laid the foundation for the great

strides that have been made today in California. It seems only befitting that we speak at greater length of this idealistic monument to the noble figure. A newspaper account of the unveiling of the monument on the 3rd of June, 1891, furnishes a colorful and accurate picture of the celebration. The article was run in the *Cypress* on June 6, 1891, and read as follows:

"The 3rd of June has come and gone, and the excellent monument presented to the old capital by that benevolent and respected lady, Mrs. Leland Stanford, now adorns the most historic spot within the Golden State. The press throughout the coast had been exceedingly liberal in its mention of this great gift, and the people all along the line between San Diego and San Francisco evinced an ardent desire to see the monument erected to the memory of a man whose life had been devoted to the work of Christianization in this then wild and uncivilized sphere.

"The consequence was that for several days prior to the 3rd of June many persons from the adjoining counties had assembled here to witness the unveiling of the Rev. Father's statue, and, when the time came, thousands more had swelled the influx to such an extent that the streets of the old town were thronged with humanity to their full capacity.

"The excursion train from San Francisco, bearing members of the Society of the Pacific Coast Pioneers from that and other cities, and representatives of other societies from abroad, arrived here a little before 11:30 a. m., and were met at the depot by the Grand Marshal C. I. Burks, the Monterey Military Band, California Pioneers, Native Sons of the Golden West, the Young Men's Institute, Watsonville Zuaves, (who had come on a special earlier), officers of the day and citizens. The procession formed in five divisions in the order named and marched to the monument, where thousands of people were already waiting for the contingent to arrive. A platform had been erected near the monument for the convenience of the officers and this became so crowded immediately after the arrival of the excursion that it became advisable to deny many the privilege of occupying it, among those so excluded being the representatives of the press.

"The unveiling exercises were opened by President Rev. A. D. Casanova, who introduced Rev. Father Clementine Deymann, of Watsonville, who delivered an interesting address, reciting, in brief, a biography of Father Junipero Serra. The Rev. Father

began his address by impressing upon the people the uniqueness of the celebration. The speaker in a clear, distinct voice told of the excellent qualities of Junipero Serra, relating, in brief, the history of the Father * * * dwelling at length on the heroism and true devotion manifested by the noble priest all through life, concluding with words of gratitude for the donor, Mrs. Leland Stanford, and praised Rev. Father Casanova for his efforts in keeping fresh the name of the pioneer friar. Miss Alice McQuade read a poem composed by Betty Tisdale, of Notre Dame, which was followed by another poem in two parts by Alanson Hosmer Phelps, of San Francisco, after which Hon. Judge W. H. Webb, of Salinas, was introduced and delivered in sum and substance, the following address:

" 'When great things are to be done,' said the orator, 'when great exertions become necessary, the men appear whose talents and powers are of the sort to cope with the problems. These men often, by their disinterested services, extreme sufferings and devotion to the cause espoused by them, become the wonder as well as the examples of their own and future generations. Such was Father Junipero. He discovered no new principle of politics or of morals, he invented nothing in science, he disclosed no new phenomenon in the laws of nature; but as you have read of him and learned of him from the history of his life * * * the principles of religion, Christianity and civilization took possession of his heart and mind as if by inspiraton from above. Born and educated in the old world, he came to another hemisphere and devoted his talents and life, his all, to the advancement of those causes. Truly may it be said of him, that "he needs no monumental pile to rear its head to heaven to tell posterity his name and fame; his deeds—his worthy deeds alone have rendered his name and fame immortal." But it was and is meet and proper that upon this spot, the scene and place of his landing upon the golden shores of the Pacific, and where was planted by him the cross, that symbol and emblem of the church, Christianity and civilization, that there should be erected to his memory and his worthy deeds, the ever-enduring stone which will give to this and coming generations his form and features that the traveler of future ages may look upon the same, pause and reflect upon what he did for the human race. Verily shall this place be a spot for the pilgrimage for all nations.'

"Judge Webb's oration was loudly applauded.

"The band played the 'Star Spangled Banner' and the simple services were over.

"Probably 5,000 people watched the unveiling of the statue. There were quite a number of Catholic clergymen from other towns. Among Father Casanova's guests were Very Rev. Clementine Deymann, Orator of the Day, and Rev. Jose Godiol, both of Watsonville; Revs. J. J. O'Keefe and Raynerius Dickneite from the old mission, Santa Barbara; Rev. Eugenias Puers of San Francisco; Rev. Gregory Kuepper of Lake County, and Rev. J. B. Tomah of Wisconsin.

"The patriotic strains of 'Hail Columbia,' by the band had scarcely died away, when two little flaxen haired children, Miss Antoinette and Master Stephen Field, daughter and son of Supervisor T. J. Field, were carried to the monument, and with their tiny hands raised back the folds and exposed to view the statue, representing Father Junipero Serra in the costume of the Franciscan friars, stepping out of a boat, upon which rests a huge cross, upon which are carved the letters, 'June 3, 1770.' The Father's right hand * * * is partly outstretched as though in the act of expounding Christianity; the left hand is held close to the body which is visible, a crucifix hangs by the side, and the feet, which are protected only by the common sandal of that day, show the toes of the divine Father."

Sloat Monument.

The Sloat Monument stands on the hill in the government reservation. It is a memorial to Commodore John Drake Sloat, who raised the United States flag over the Custom House on July 7, 1846, taking possession of California for the United States.

San Carlos Church.

One of the most sacred objects of veneration in Old Monterey is the church of San Carlos de Monterey. The present building was erected at the Presidio in 1794, and was called the Royal Chapel because it was the place of worship for the Governors of California who were the representatives of the King of Spain.



FIRST THEATER IN CALIFORNIA, AT MONTEREY, WHERE JENNY LIND SANG

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

In 1858, the transept was added and main altar erected. The Rev. Casanova, during his pastorate in Monterey from 1868 to 1893 did a great deal to keep the building in repair. He was succeeded by the present pastor, Monseignor R. M. Mestres, whose breeding and culture are shown in the interior remodeling of the church and in all improvements belonging to the church since his connection with San Carlos.

San Carlos Mission.

On June 3, 1770, Pentecost Sunday, was founded San Carlos Mission, under the same oak tree where Viscaiño had held services one hundred and sixty years before. Owing to the insufficiency of good soil, and water for irrigation, San Carlos Mission was removed to the banks of the Rio del Carmelo, five miles from Monterey, but the Presidio and chapel still remained at Monterey. San Carlos (St. Charles), was the son of an Italian nobleman. He gave up the material pleasures of a life at court to enter the priesthood. He died in 1584 and was canonized a saint in 1610. For him the mission was named and to him dedicated.

Sherman and Halleck's Headquarters.

Next to the Larkin House is a small adobe, built also by Larkin in 1834. It was the headquarters of Lieutenant Wm. T. Sherman in 1847. At that time the man who was later to be a famous Civil war general, was a lieutenant. General Halleck was headquartered at the same place.

Theatres—The First in California.

The First Theatre in California stands on the corner of Pacific and Scott streets. It is a long rectangular adobe, typical of the time in which it was built. It was first used as a sailor's boarding house and was built by John Swan, who came to Monterey in the spring of 1843 from Mazatlan, Mexico. He had been a deep sea sailor in many parts of the world.

The first theatrical performance given in this theatre was produced by soldiers of Colonel J. D. Stevenson's regiment of New York Volunteers who were disbanded at the close of the Mexican

war and came to Monterey with the Colonel. It was given outside and was a great success.

But perhaps the best way to describe California's First Theatre is to contrast it with California's latest theatre, the Theatre of the Golden Bough.

Theatres—The Latest in California.

The Theatre of the Golden Bough is tucked away in Carmel-by-the-Sea and is a pleasant four-mile walk from the First Theatre, where the vaqueros, dons, duennas, senoritas, and then a smattering of Yankees came in 1847 to witness "Old Squibob" reel through his drunken antics. Ironically and perhaps fortunately this earlier theatre has long since closed its doors to half-shot thespians and is now doing business as a tea parlor and gift shop.

The Theatre of the Golden Bough was conceived, planned and built by Edward Gerhard Kuster in 1924; and it was such an innovation in theatredom that it merits lengthy consideration.

Situated on quaint Ocean Avenue, the main street of Carmel, nestling amid a riot of enchanting shops, the Theatre of the Golden Bough is a convenient stroll for every inhabitant of the artists' colony as well as for every browsing visitor. Exteriorally the theatre is plain almost to bareness, following in general the architecture of the Lombards. When one enters the arched doorway, he has an immediate feeling of restfulness that is so necessary for the full enjoyment of a stage production. The interior is not large, but containing only 390 seats, it appears roomy. Each of the individual wicker arm chairs is commodious and comfortable; they are well spaced from one another and from the rows before and behind. One is led to remember and to sympathize with the audience of California's First Theatre, who used to sit upon wooden benches, boxes, and splintery chairs that were packed together like olives in a bottle.

The Theatre of the Golden Bough is illuminated by lights that, concealed by projecting cornices, sift soothingly over the warm tan, slightly pinkish, walls. Curtains of madonna blue cover the proscenium opening and the two cloisteral arches on either side of the auditorium.

The curved forestage is unique in that it extends sixteen feet

into the auditorium and is approached from the floor by three steps that follow the curve. Four steps ascend from the forestage to the main stage, which has a depth of thirty feet. A scene dock, thirty-two feet long and thirteen feet deep is located directly beneath the front of the main stage. Here scenery may be stored out of the way and safe from rough handling; when needed, it can be hoisted into position by overhead tackle.

The proscenium opening of twenty-eight feet can be reduced to a minimum of twelve feet by the use of two sliding tormentors on either side of the opening. Thus the use of several flats to cut down the width of the opening is avoided, and, as there is no intervening shadow-box, one looks directly into the scene of the play and finds a greater sense of reality. Connected with the tormentors on the stage side is an equipment of spot and flood lights which are always in place and properly focused no matter what position the tormentors may be in. Finally, a modern cyclorama, or sky dome, constructed of five tons of steel and 18,000 pounds of plaster, arching gracefully at the back of the stage, may be called into play, giving the effect of vast spaces.

A member of the audience can scarce but marvel at the rich and yet very subtle way the stage is lighted; how the lights deftly change in hue with the tone of the play, how they blend with the emotions of the actor. Could a member of this audience see what was going on, not back stage, but in the projection box at the rear of the house, he would doubtless marvel even more. For a radical departure from stage custom has been made regarding the matter of lighting. Instead of the customary switchboard in the right first entrance, Mr. Kuster has installed a switchboard with 120 numbered keys in the projection box. The switchboard operator has the whole stage before him much as a canvas stands on an easel before an artist, and being able to watch the progress of the play, he can paint the scenes at will with his vari-colored lights. In this system, footlights, sidelights, and borders have been dispensed with; upper and oblique lights alone being used. Forty-two flood lights above the stage, twenty-one large and twenty-four baby spotlights, supplied with current from 167 circuits of electricity, adequately illuminate the passing play.

But the enthralled theatre-goer would not only wonder about the lighting system. He would hear the strains of music, but would look in vain for an orchestra. Concealed beneath the fore-

stage the orchestra moans its melody—an elfish melody, if you please—and the sound is wafted unimpeded through a cloth-covered metal netting that composes the risers of the three steps leading from the auditorium floor to the fore-stage. The orchestra room is comfortable, and large enough to accommodate from thirty to forty musicians. It is equipped with a sounding board which throws the music into the auditorium. An instrument resembling a periscope extends above the fore-stage and projects a picture of the entire stage upon a screen in the orchestra room. Thus the leader of the orchestra is enabled to watch the play and to coordinate his music with its progress.

Again hark back, if you will, to California's First Theatre. The stage here was really no stage at all, being flush with the floor, or, rather, good old mother earth herself; and what corresponded to a curtain was a wooden partition that was hinged to the ceiling and swung up when the strolling comedians from what was then the flea-bitten village of Los Angeles were ready to make their appearance. This palace of pleasure was illuminated with lamps, candles, and the ruddy and profuse glowing of cigarettes in the audience. Music was battered out of the first piano that was brought around the Horn, and the wan-eyed pianist no doubt tossed down many a whiskey between measures. Withal it was a merry place (not morally worse than many a similar institution today), and it provides an interesting study in theatrical history. However, in comparison with its newest neighbor, the First Theatre becomes a shabby relic.

Such is the history of two theatres on California soil—the crumbling old and the sprucily new. Romance, yes, and even glamour enshroud the adobe walls of the First Theatre in California—it is a memoir and a shrine of early theatrical days. But it is hoped and believed that the latest theatre—the Theatre of the Golden Bough—will, oh, pardon, señor, offer something more substantial and progressive in dramatic art; in short, that its *product* rather than simply its *structure* will be worthy of remembrance and veneration.

Theatres—Forest Theatre and Arts and Crafts.

These two theatres, the Forest Theatre and Arts and Crafts, also in Carmel, have achieved fame world-wide in its scope for

the artistry of the presentation of their plays. The Forest Theatre, one of the first open-air theatres in America to be recognized as "progressive," is surrounded by tall whispering pines. As one watches a play in progress under the direction of Arthur Cyril or others of the recognized craftsmen, one feels the spirit of the fresh, mystic out-of-doors, and can scarce but thrill to the masterly way of the actors in their freshness of depicting character. The new Arts and Crafts Club Little Theatre has also been prominent in the twentieth century little theatre movement.

Viscaino (Serra Tree).

This historic tree near where Viscaiño landed and where, a hundred and sixty-eight years later, Junipero Serra celebrated the first mass may be seen in the grounds of San Carlos Church. A few years ago, while workmen were constructing a culvert near it, its roots were greatly injured and shortly following, it was torn up and without ceremony or farewell, thrown into the bay. A spirited citizen and the zealous pastor of San Carlos Church feeling the pathos of it and the value of the venerable tree as an object lesson and historical relic, rescued it from the bay, and had it placed in the rear of the church. In its place, near where the tree originally stood, is a handsome and costly granite cross, erected by J. D. Murray, a liberal hearted citizen and lover of Monterey's romantic past.

Washington Hotel.

The Washington Hotel was California's first hotel and stood on the northwest corner of Washington and Pearl streets. It was an imposing and intimate figure in the city's daily life. It was the "Del Monte" of old Monterey, and in its prime and vigor, was the center of the life of the capital of California. The building was erected in 1832 and for a few years was the private residence of Don Eugenio Montenegro, who married a member of the well known Soberanes family, after which it was used for a hotel. Following the American conquest, additions were made from time to time to the original structure to accommodate the increasing demands brought about by the new era.

In 1849 it was owned by Don Alberto Trescony, a tin worker,

who arrived in California in 1841 and who later acquired a large fortune through judicious investments in lands. During the First Convention held in California, the hotel was leased by Mr. Trescony for $1200 a month to a former private in the regiment of Col. J. D. Stevenson. At that time the hotel sheltered and entertained the delegates. It was a place sought by the bon-ton alone, for its rates were then $200 a month without board. Bayard Taylor, the poet, who visited Monterey during the convention was able to obtain a special rate of $12 a week for his board.

Notable among the features of the social life led at the Washington Hotel, were the "Cascarone" balls that brought back the spirit and color of a departed era. The county seat of Monterey County, which had been formerly at Monterey, was transferred to Salinas in the early seventies. This event cast a shadow over the old Peninsula and withdrew the official life of the county government to the neighboring town.

There was no recovery from this loss and at the time of the coming of the Del Monte, the old Washington Hotel had passed the stage of competition. From that time on to the fatal appearance of the wrecker in the summer of 1914, its course was consistently downward.

Whaling Station.

The old whaling building on Decatur Street was built in 1855. The whale fishery was one of the most important local industries for a period of nearly thirty-five years. The business gradually became unprofitable as the whales became more scarce, and the industry was finally abandoned. This, and the whaling industry, has been covered at length in an earlier part of the book.

Writers and Their Landmarks.

It is difficult to point out particular spots on the Monterey Peninsula that have literary importance, for the peninsula as a whole—all of it—abounds with such material. Artists, writers, and sculptors have traversed every foot of its ground, have lived here, and have often written about it. We have already gone into detail as to the activities of Charles Warren Stoddard and Robert Louis Stevenson. Therefore, it will be the object of this

division, "Writers and their Landmarks," to speak of the peninsula as a unit in regard to its literary endeavor, as presented by the Monterey Peninsula Communities, Inc. The following is taken from a booklet printed by them:

So if you would know the heart of the Monterey Peninsula you must know something of its literature. You must know it through Richard Henry Dana's "Two Years Before the Mast," Robert Louis Stevenson's "Old Pacific Capital," and Charles Warren Stoddard's "Memories of Old Monterey." You must view its romantic era through the pages of Gertrude Atherton's "Splendid Idle Forties" and Mary Austin's "Ysidro." Go to the old Custom House and you will find the setting of Mrs. Atherton's story based on the legend of the lost pearls of Loreta. A step from its broad veranda will take you to the rocks from which the heroine, Ysabel Herrera—"La Favorita of Monterey" they called her in the old romantic days before the Gringo came—flung herself into the blue waters of the bay. The lagoon where the washerwomen of Monterey scrubbed the linen of the exclusive Spanish families and trafficked in the gossip of the town—for a price—is only a walk of minutes from the heart of the business district. Six miles over the hill from Monterey is the Carmel Valley, the country of "Ysidro," a colorful novel of the one idyl in American history—the old Mission days.

It was in 1836—twelve years before the cry of "Gold!" brought the latter-day Jasons in a mad rush to the Pacific Coast in quest of the yellow fleece, that young Richard Henry Dana of Boston, an able seaman before the mast on the Yankee trading bark *Pilgrim*, sailed into Monterey Bay, to exchange "Down East" notions and goods for a cargo of hides. He has told about it all in that epic of sea life, "Two Years Before the Mast." With this book in hand you may wander through Monterey, Pacific Grove and Carmel, following in the very footsteps of the young Harvard man, who used his shore leave to explore the Monterey Peninsula. He peered into every nook and cranny of the colorful old town of the Dons. He visited the Franciscan Fathers in the Mission at Carmel. He galloped over what is now the famous Seventeen Mile Drive, explored the woods where Del Monte now stands, and ate his snack of "salt horse" where now strangers come from the ends of the earth to play polo and golf. Like ghosts of the past many of the old buildings stand here that Dana wrote of more than

fourscore years ago. Dim figures of those old days move like specters through his pages. In them you may glimpse again the romantic period of the Monterey Peninsula.

Another famous American writer who came to the Monterey Peninsula in the early days was Bayard Taylor. He made the journey on foot from San Francisco to Monterey. That was the brave, flamboyant year of '49. He limped into Monterey in time to be a spectator at the session of the first constitutional convention in Colton Hall. In his "El Dorado" he wrote: "Monterey has the appearance of a deserted town; few people in the streets, business deserted."

The Monterey Peninsula is still the haven of all desire to the brothers of the goose-quill guild. George Sterling, California's poet, lived in Carmel many years. Mary Austin, coming down to the sea from the desert sage and blue distances of her "Land of Little Rain," found new inspiration in the pines, the dunes, the silver sands and purple seas of Carmel Bay. She still has a home here—"The Wickiup"—where she wrote "Ysidro," "The Arrow Maker," much of "The Ford," and many, many of her "Lost Border Stories." Gouverneur Morris, one of the outstanding writers of the day, lives in a reconstructed adobe that belonged to one of the early Spanish families. Harry Leon Wilson wrote "Bunker Bean," "Ruggles of Red Gap," and "Merton of the Movies" in "Ocean Home," his country estate at Carmel Highlands. Peter Clark Macfarlane lives in Pacific Grove and writes his novels in a tent on the sand dunes. James Hopper has succeeded to the Sterling bungalow in Carmel. Frederick Bechtold, the author of "The Old West," is his next door neighbor. Grace MacGowan Cook and Alice MacGowan live in Carmel, as do John Kenneth Turner and John Northern Hilliard. Robert Welles Ritchie has built him a home at Pebble Beach, and Samuel Blythe also lives in this beautiful residential tract what time he is not traveling about the world in quest of material. A significant highlight on the importance of the Monterey Peninsula as a literary colony is revealed in the fact that in a recent year's issue of the "Saturday Evening Post" only six numbers of the fifty-two did not contain the name of a Monterey Peninsula writer in the tables of contents.

Indeed, it would be difficult if not impossible to tabulate all of the writers who have gloried in the beauties of the peninsula.

Jack London visited Carmel and loved it. Sinclair Lewis found more than a "Main Street" in the same colony; he found a beauty that inspired him to write a number of America's "best sellers." Perry Newberry, now living in Carmel, has enthralled millions of children with his delightfully romantic boys' books. Rene R. Rivierre, one of the younger generation who has made a success of sport stories and moving picture scenarios, has poked through the wooded hills of Carmel on many a vacation from his business in Hollywood.

CHAPTER XXXI

SISTER CITIES OF MONTEREY

Carmel and Pacific Grove, of which we made numerous mention, might aptly be called the sister cities of Monterey. They share the same climate, the same beauty of scenery and much of the same reputation. Pacific Grove, huddling close to Monterey on the northwest, was founded in 1875 as a Methodist Episcopal "retreat"; while Carmel, four miles to the south of Monterey, was divided into parcels of land and put upon the market fourteen years later as a "Catholic Summer Resort." Both colonies have developed into communities of far greater dimensions than religious centers. Pacific Grove, although still holding much of its original intent, has become a famous resort for summer (nay, for all-the-year-round) tourists and has literally reached pinnacles in many other ways. Carmel, although holding much of its lore as a Catholic center, has of late become famous as an artistic center, already spoken of in "Historical Points of Interest."

The story of the founding and the later development of these two communities will give a striking contrast to their present appearances. The history of Pacific Grove as recounted by A. C. Jochmus in the *Pacific Grove Review*, tells the story of that town in concise English.

"In 1873," reads the article, "a Methodist minister by the name of Ross, and his wife, both being in feeble health, and having tried all the remedies that science could suggest, were advised to find some place where the temperature varied but little through the entire year, and where the fluctuations from heat to cold were merely nominal. After many months spent in research, it was at last decided that Pacific Grove was the most likely place to supply those requirements.

"By the kindness of David Jacks, who at that time owned large tracts of land extending throughout what is now known as Pacific Grove, and all the grounds acquired by purchase by the

Pacific Improvement Company, they were induced to try a residence among the pines as being beneficial and conducive to the restoration of health.

"They accordingly came and located on what is now known as Grand Avenue, and near the present site of the new Holman building. After a short residence, the effects were so palpable that Mr. Ross sent back to his former home and brought with him his brother and his brother's wife, who were also troubled with pulmonary complaints. They all lived out of doors, they slept in hammocks under the trees, and ignored for the time being all indoor comfort, living principally on fish and game. Their recovery seemed almost miraculous, for in a very few months they were perfectly restored to health.

"In 1875 Bishop Peck, who was ever on the alert to do good, conceived the idea, after a brief visit, that this place so nearly resembled those health-giving resorts in the East, that negotiations were soon pending with Mr. Jacks for the purchase of a site that should at once form the nucleus around which could be built a retreat where spiritual and social comfort could be had without limit, and where the ever rolling, restless sea would sing a sweet lullaby to woo the 'drowsy god' and produce that sweet, refreshing sleep which is acknowledged by all scientists to be the great restorer of human nature. Here is the lovely spot, breathing the pure aroma of the pines, and inhaling the pure ozone from the broad Pacific, with no one to trouble them or make them afraid, these people proved beyond all doubt that so far as they were concerned, this was to them the Mecca for which they had so long and so patiently searched.

"The town of Pacific Grove, one of the most healthful, equable all-the-year seaside resorts in the world was founded in the year 1875, by David Jacks and representatives of the Methodist Episcopal Church. The articles of incorporation of the Pacific Grove Retreat Association are dated 15th of June, 1875. Among the purposes stated in these articles, for which the corporation was formed, were the purchasing or leasing, and improvement of lands in Monterey County, for a seaside resort, and for the holding of camp meetings, etc. The original corporators were the following: Revs. J. W. Ross, F. F. Jewell, Otis Gibson, George Clifford, G. O. Ashe, H. B. Heacock, E. S. Todd and Messrs. J. W. Campbell, G. F. Baker, J. A. Clayton and A. Gallatin.

"At first about 100 acres were laid off in lots, including the present town site; water was brought in pipes from 'Dairy Springs,' about a mile away; some twelve or fifteen cottages, and a considerable number of tents were put up the first year, sufficient to accommodate 350 to 400 people. A camp-meeting was held that year, commencing August 9th, and continuing about three weeks. Some $29,000 or $30,000 were expended in improvements during the year 1875. Summer religious meetings were held annually thereafter. In later years, other features were added, such as the meeting here of Chautauqua, the State Sabbath conventions, the Woman's Christian Temperance Union, etc.

"At a meeting of the Board of Trustees June 21, 1883, it was announced that the land including the site of Pacific Grove had been sold by Mr. Jacks to the Pacific Improvement Company, subject to the conditions which had been previously agreed upon between the Board and Mr. Jacks, with some modifications; and that an understanding with the Pacific Improvement Company had been reached March 31, 1883, whereby the latter should retain the financial management, and the Pacific Grove Association should continue to have the moral and prudential control of the grounds, and that this control should extend to the distance of one mile from the geographical center of the original survey.

"The population of Pacific Grove in 1890 was 1,336; today 1924, it is over 4,000, and still growing. In 1893 the following were the civil officers of the town of Pacific Grove: B. A. Eardley, O. S. Trimmer, C. Johnson, C. K. Tuttle, W. V. Jubb, trustees; E. C. Smith, clerk; E. P. Wilbur, treasurer; W. C. Little, engineer; J. R. Patrick, recorder; E. B. Rich, marshal; Wm. Quintel, street superintendent."

Carmel, also beginning in a religious way, has had an interesting career. The following history of its beginning has been gleaned for a large part through the files of the *Monterey Cypress* of 1889.

On the 18th of February, 1888, Messrs. Duckworth Bros., bonded from H. Escolle of Monterey, 324 acres of land in Carmel Valley between three and four miles south of Monterey, for the purpose of subdividing it into town lots. The question of building up a Catholic summer resort near Carmel Mission, whence the Catholic religion was first taught on this coast, had for a long

time received the earnest thought of the leading Catholics in the state and notably the members of the powerful and growing organization known as the Young Men's Institute of California. The result was that there had been developed a unanimous sentiment favorable to the project, and in due time the property was placed upon the market. This, it was reported, was the first instance in the history of California that the Catholic people had made a concerted movement to establish a summer colony of their own.

Following a story verbatim that ran in the *Cypress* on April 20, 1889, we read:

"Other denominations have been highly successful in undertakings of a similar nature, first and foremost being Pacific Grove, built up under the patronage of the Methodist church. All those who invested money there, whether Methodists or not, have found it one of the best places in this section for safe and sure investments, and there is no doubt that the same will be true of the Carmel City tract, where the undertaking above referred to meets with the individual indorsement of nearly every one of the many thousands of followers of the Catholic church on the Pacific coast. The advantages to be derived by Monterey in the event of success attending the effort to establish a resort of that kind near us, are manifold. The more people that come here the better it will be for the entire section surrounding the old Capital and the town itself. Every passenger brought here for any one of the settlements within five or ten miles of us contributes to the welfare of Monterey. No one can deny the benefits received by us from the building up of Pacific Grove and it will be the same with the building up of Carmel City. As for the latter place, the site chosen is one of the most beautiful to be found. From every portion of it can be seen Carmel Bay, Carmel Mission and Carmel Valley. The climate is a few degrees warmer than on this (the Monterey) side of the peninsula. Arrangements are now being perfected for the transportation of passengers to and from Monterey (which is at present being done by automobile stages). * * * The young gentleman, Mr. S. J. Duckworth, who has devoted nearly all his time to the undertaking is deserving of the highest credit for his enterprise. The *Cypress* wishes him success, and predicts for him the patronage and encouragement of the live, progressive people of Monterey, who certainly will appreciate the efforts he is putting forth to bring our surroundings

more prominently before the world. Of the 700 lots in the 94 acres to be sold first, the sale of 150 is already assured, which certainly is a good beginning."

An advertisement extolling the advantages of Carmel (and incidentally making the object of the enterprise clear) read:

CARMEL CITY
Monterey County, Calif.
this
BEAUTIFUL TRACT
Of land in Carmel Valley, 3 miles South of Monterey, situated between Carmel Bay on the West, Carmel Mission on the South and the Hotel del Monte 17 Mile Drive on the North.
WILL BE PLACED UPON THE MARKET ABOUT MAY 15th, 1889.
The object of the promoters being to build up a CATHOLIC SUMMER RESORT in this favored spot, improvements of an extensive character will be made, notably
A CATHOLIC INSTITUTION OF LEARNING.
(Etc.)

This marked the beginnings of Carmel. It was fated to have a phenomenal rise—not in the hordes that were to come, but in the fame that was to follow it. A "Pen Picture" of Carmel by an anonymous writer late in the year of its founding, ran:

"On the southern slope of the hills forming the background of the Old Capital, surrounded by lofty pines and graceful oaks, and extending over sun-bathed knolls and symmetrically formed hillets, has been laid out a city which in the near future promises to rival the older and better known resorts of this neighborhood.

"As one descends the country road from the summit south of us, his eye extends far to the southward. After scanning Point Lobos with its picturesque rocks and cliffs, made rugged by the continuous attacks of the angry waves, the vision draws nearer, and glancing over the little valleys, dotted here and there with the herds of the local kings, it turns again seaward and, after feasting on the still waters of Carmel bay, it draws nearer and nearer, stopping for a moment to scrutinize the ancient mission

where the remains of Junipero Serra and other Franciscan monks now lie. Finally it becomes fixed on Carmel City. And why? Because everybody admires that which is beautiful, and as there is nothing more beautiful than that which nature makes, hence Carmel City, made beautiful by nature, at once lays claim to your vision and your admiration.

"Being devoid of a poetic instinct the writer will not attempt to give a pen picture of the scene which, while seated in a carriage beside the enterprising Mr. S. J. Duckworth, presented itself before his eyes. He could only murmur to himself: 'No wonder Tavernir and Strong and other artists made this their camping ground; I wonder not the fathers sanctified this lovely spot with their presence!' And, as the sun cast its soft rays over the hillslope, throwing a mellow light through the pines, which in turn swayed to and fro in apparent ecstacy over its friendly visitation, Carmel City, like a maiden dressed in her best garb and waiting for her beau, greeted us as we entered.

"But it seems that the writer is not the only one who has been captivated by her charms, for on a corner of an avenue one hundred feet wide and facing the beautiful bay of Carmel stands as pretty and commodious a little hotel as one would want to see, while a little to the rear, facing a pretty plateau, two handsome residences are now being erected for San Francisco parties by contractor Frasier and another is to be commenced immediately by Mauldin Brothers. 'But that is not all,' remarked our companion, as the writer attempted to compliment the parties for their good taste, 'what you see going up is nothing to what you will see in the near future. As near as I can figure it there will be at least twenty cottages built here before the season is over.' Pointing to a high knoll richly covered with young pines, he said: 'What do you think of that for a college site?' The location is the best on the tract and the view obtained is unequaled in grandeur. Turning to the right, the team halted in front of a gang of men at work cleaning an avenue 100 feet wide—preparing it for grading. There are quite a number of men at work, and in a few weeks all the avenues will be opened for traffic. The hotel is an 18-room house, besides a bath-room, patent closets, and every convenience imaginable, with accommodations in a pinch for about 40 persons. It will be completed the early part of next month when it will be occupied by San Francisco parties. The building was erected by

contractor Frasier for Mr. Duckworth, and will be a lasting monument to this gentleman's enterprise. No other town site around here has had the accommodations for visitors during the first year of life that Carmel City is provided with already. Mr. Duckworth informed the writer that within the coming year a Seminary will be erected at a cost of not less than $10,000, and together with the land will be deeded to the proper authorities of the Catholic Church for educational purposes. So it would seem that there is no telling where Carmel City will end; its future is certainly very bright; its affairs are in trustworthy, progressive hands, and the least that can be said for it, is that it will prove a formidable rival of other world famous resorts."

Carmel today, a mecca for artists, authors, poets, scientists and theater folk, had a population in 1916—when the town was incorporated—of about 1400 persons. Rather than stores Carmel has for the most part, quaint shops and bazars that provide the necessities and luxuries of life. There are no railroad stations and no railroad. Carmel is reached over a paved highway. There are no local industries.

Carmel, "a unique village in which plays and concerts are as much a part of the daily life as the lanterns that are swung by hand as Carmel villagers walk along their streets at night," is the home of one of the first outdoor theaters in America, namely the Forest Theater. This theater, as well as that of the Arts and Crafts and the Theater of the Golden Bough, we have spoken of under the heading, "Points of Interest."

Here also is the famous annex branch of the Carnegie Desert Laboratory, where some of the most important and significant of modern scientific investigations and experiments are carried on.

Although Carmel has not become the bustling resort that was predicted, its fame has literally been built upon granite and will surely never be washed away.

CHAPTER XXXII

THE COUNTY SEAT

The bustling city of Salinas—the city that has the largest bank deposits per capita in the United States, that has the most costly high school in the United States, and that has many other unique features that make it a distinctive community—was, in the early days but a large mustard pasture for roving cattle. No one believed that this territory would produce grain and no one wanted to run the risk of trying. As late as 1864 David Jacks offered portions of the Chualar Ranch for as low as $1.00 an acre, without purchasers. Later the Campbell brothers made the attempt at growing grain, having found water and plenty of flat country. In the first year they made enough out of the venture to pay their seven years' lease on two hundred and thirty acres. This fact established the fertility of the valley. In 1867 A. Ricker and partner "on one side of the fence" and Eugene Sherwood "on the other" laid out plans for a town to be called "Salinas City" upon portions of the old Sausal and Nacional Ranchos.

The town grew rapidly, and, with the main line of the Southern Pacific running through it, it became a center for the shipping of a vast amount of the Salinas Valley grain. On March 4, 1867, Salinas was incorporated and the following were elected: J. J. Harvey, mayor; William Vanderhurst, J. B. Iverson, Dr. H. D. Tuttle, A. Burbeck, M. Hughes, and F. B. Wilcoxen, councilmen.

In February of 1873 Salinas became the county seat of Monterey County.

It has the right, indeed, to be proud of its civic progress. From a mustard pasture to the beautiful county seat, where shipping interests of the Salinas Valley center, where hundreds of thousands come every year to witness the "rodeo," of which we have spoken elsewhere, where good paved roads stretch in every direction, offering the tourist unsurpassed means of comfortable travel, where schools, churches, and industry make living worth while,—from the one to the other, we say, is a great stride.

Salinas, with over $8,411,000 in its banks in 1924 (making her the wealthiest community per capita in the United States), is busy with industries which are placing her as one of the foremost of the progressive middle-sized cities in the world. Her high school is one of the finest in the country, costing a half million dollars to build. Her two grammar schools were also built at enormous cost, and offer the growing boy and girl advantages that cannot be surpassed in any other community. She has the largest beet sugar factory in the world (capacity 5,000 tons daily), the largest strawberry farm in the world (124 acres), the largest friezia bulb ranch in the world, and the only goat milk condensary in the world. She also has a large cow milk condensary. She raises practically all of the sweet pea seed that is imported to Europe, the reason being that the sweet pea seed of Salinas Valley is acknowledged to be the hardiest grown. Other crops grown here are: Lettuce, artichokes, cauliflower, tomatoes, celery, bulbs, apricots, pears, apples, berries, and the famous Salinas-Burbank potato.

Her population is now estimated at 5,000.

Detailed information, as extracted from a pamphlet prepared by the Salinas Chamber of Commerce, follows:

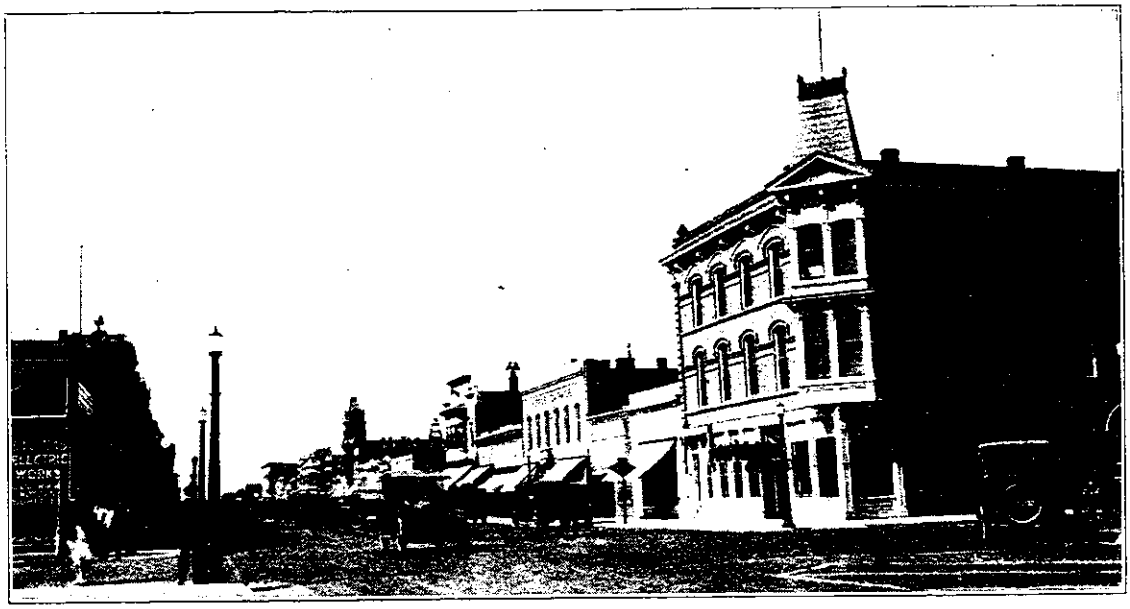
The soils of the Salinas Valley fall naturally into three classes: Upland, Valley and Recent Sedimentary soils.

The Upland soils are mostly sandy loams and they abound in fine and coarse gravel. This soil prevails on the east slope of the Lower Salinas Valley bordering the Gabilan Range. It is devoted to raising barley, beans and hay, owing to its elevated position and lack of developed water, the latter being only through deep wells. There are some notable exceptions to the above in the Pear and Apricot orchards of W. W. Zabala in the Alisal and the Old Spence Orchard and newly developing orchards on the old Willowby Tract near it; and farther to the south, orchards on the Arroyo Seco Delta at Greenfield.

The Valley lands consist of the soils of the original valley floor, being generally Salinas Gray Adobe, and San Joaquin Black Adobe and Fresno sandy loam.

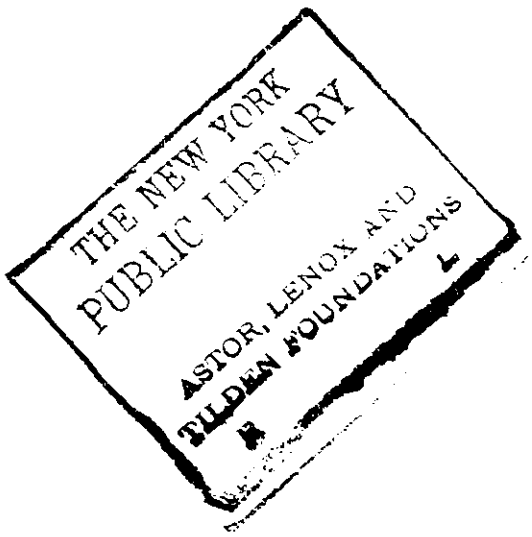
The Recent Sedimentary soils are the alluvial deposits in the present Salinas River bottom.

Most of the irrigation in the Salinas Valley is by pumping plants from wells, while there is some gravity flow from dams, the gravity type of irrigation probably amounts to only about five





TWO VIEWS OF MAIN STREET, SALINAS


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

per cent of the irrigation in the valley. The water resources for pumping are exceptionally good, the water tables being perhaps the strongest of any in the inland valleys of California, due primarily to the extensive watersheds, which supply the underground strata. The Salinas Valley has pumping plants ranging from three hundred gallons per minute, which are used in the cultivation of small truck gardens, up to the larger plants having a capacity as high as sixteen thousand gallons per minute. There is practically no limit to the amount of water that can be developed for pumping for irrigation purposes, it being the common practice to develop water in sufficient quantity for the acreage under consideration. The Spreckles Sugar Company is probably the foremost irrigator and has developed the largest quantity of water in the Salinas Valley, pumping over one hundred and thirty million gallons per day, more than the city of San Francisco uses, it being the general practice to locate one pumping plant for about one thousand acres on their beet fields. Pumping plants vary from the larger plants to the smaller plants using intensive irrigation and cultivation of the garden tracts. In general the cost of irrigation per acre is less in the districts under gravity flow in the central valleys, coupled with the fact that the rancher has water when he wants it and according to the needs of his crops instead of being held to a given routine or pre-set time of irrigation as is the case under the gravity flow districts.

With the excellent drainage that is afforded by the Salinas River which traverses the entire length of the valley there are no drainage troubles or rise in the water tables with the consequent damages to the lands and crops. The Coast Valleys Gas and Electric Company, a subsidiary company of the Byllesby interests, maintain an extensive net work of power lines throughout the valley furnishing energy to drive the pumps and general power for the ranches.

Although we have already enumerated the products of the Salinas Valley soil, it will not be amiss to go into greater detail as made by the Salinas Chamber of Commerce.

The growing of sugar beets is a big feature in the commercial activity of this section. Sugar beets has proved to be a very staple product, bringing to the grower a good substantial return on his investment, besides proving valuable as a diversification crop, for dairy farms, as by putting in a crop of beets on alfalfa land the

tonnage of beets is as high as twenty-four tons per acre, and following with alfalfa makes the latter crop much stronger and healthier.

The Salinas Burbank potato is the prize tuber of California. Production has grown to 14,000 tons annually. As high as three hundred bushels can be raised to the acre and a constant demand for this particular variety makes it profitable to handle.

The Blanco district in the Salinas Valley has long been recognized as producing the finest potatoes in the United States. This district is particularly well fitted and produces heavily of onions, garlic, sweet peas. Land in this district can be bought from $500 to $1,000 an acre.

Linked up with the sugar beet industry in the Valley is the dairying. Experts state that taking all things into consideration more money can be made in dairying in the Salinas Valley than almost anywhere else. In the first place alfalfa yields as high as ten tons per acre and is a much more succulent product for the cow; due to the fact that it cures slowly the leaves do not fall off and it does not grow as rank as in some districts where the weather is hot. Second, the cool climate of summer insures a uniform production the year around, there being no greater production during one season than another. Third, milk is bought on a cheese basis which nets to the farmer between ten and fifteen per cent greater returns than where it is bought on a butter fat basis. There is always a demand for the milk, due to the keen competition. The Meyenberg Evaporated Milk Company is located in Salinas. Mr. Meyenberg was the originator of condensed milk. The Alpine Factory and the United Milk Company and the Creameries Company are other big buyers in the valley. Two large creameries are located in Salinas, the Moss Rose and the Salinas. In 1922 there were fifty per cent more cheese products in the Salinas Valley than in any other district in the state.

Wonderful alfalfa land can be purchased for $150 to $300 per acre.

The mountain regions bordering on the Salinas Valley produce, and probably always will produce some of the finest beef obtainable. The fact that hay and feed can be so economically produced in the valley makes this industry particularly profitable. This class of land can be bought from $15 an acre up.

From the fact that the Salinas Valley is such a diversified dis-



SALINAS HIGH SCHOOL, SALINAS

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

trict there is seldom a need for the middleman and hence the consumer can buy if he desires directly from the producer practically everything in the food stuff line, with the result of a very low average cost of living.

In 1923 there were nine hundred and eighty cars of lettuce shipped out of the Salinas Valley. Lettuce is raised from the extreme lower end of the valley to fifteen miles south of Salinas, and most of the land listed here is suitable for its production.

The growing of artichokes in the lower Salinas Valley has developed during 1923 and had an acreage in 1924 of about 1,500 acres. The land particularly well fitted is the land near the sea.

The development of the Salinas Valley in fruit has been gradual but in every case where attempted, successfully developed. Pears do particularly well in the Salinas Valley.

Salinas Valley is a veritable paradise for poultry, not only in the raising of fowls for the market, but in egg production. In such a climate inexpensive housing can be provided and California in itself is such a tremendous market for all poultry products that chicken raisers never need fear an over production in this line. Ducks, geese, turkeys and pigeons thrive as successfully as chickens.

Salinas Valley is being experimented on as a region for the growing of walnuts, and from present appearances, it looks to be highly satisfactory. This will undoubtedly be a valuable crop in the near future.

Dry farming has long been practiced and there is still large acreage of beans, barley and oats planted each year.

Points of Interest in Salinas Valley:

The principal point of interest is the city of Salinas itself, a landmark of human progress. At every corner can be found beautiful buildings, all embodying the "spirit of progress."

Battlefield

Near the city of Salinas in the famous Salinas Valley is the location on which the Battle of Natividad was fought. Here General Castro, commandante of the Mexican army, and Colonel Fremont, of the United States army, met and waged a brisk and bloody, if not a lengthy, fight.

Coral De Tierra

This road goes up the Calera cañon. It is situated between Salinas and Monterey and was a notorious rendezvous for bandits in the old days. Here was the scene of many a dastardly plotting and no little bloodshed.

First College in California

"El Colegio de San Jose," is but six miles east of Salinas at the foot of the Gabilan Mountains. The buildings, now crumbling, were made of adobe. December 10, 1833, W. E. P. Hartnell, an English merchant, issued a prospectus for his "casa de educacion"; and only a limited number over fifteen years of age would be accepted. The latter part of December of that same year the College was officially opened. The old adobe buildings are bordered by Alisal Park and picnic grounds.

Monument of "Old Gabriel"

In the local cemetery this monument is not conspicuous for towering granite, but for the man it surmounts. One of the oldest Indians in California is here buried. Old Gabriel, who was formerly chief of the Tulare Tribe and who was alive at the landing of Father Serra, died on the 16th day of March, 1892, at the reputed age of 151 years.

Summer Home of Governor Alvarado

This home is near the first College in California at the foot of the Gabilan Mountains. The building is now in ruins but is an intresting landmark for those interested in the historical development of California.

CHAPTER XXXIII

PROMISING COMMUNITIES OF MONTEREY COUNTY

Asilomar

Adjoining Pacific Grove is a tract of nearly sixty acres owned by the National Young Women's Christian Association. Twenty-five commodious buildings on the ocean's edge provide accommodations for six hundred people, and as a conference, convention and vacation camp it is busy all the year around.

Bradley

The town of Bradley is the most southerly town of Monterey county and dates its existence only to the railroad era commencing in 1886. It was named in honor of ex-senator Bradley Sargent, on whose extensive ranch it is located and whose active interest in the prosperity of Monterey is appreciated and acknowledged.

Carmel Highlands

About four miles below Carmel, on a mighty cliff arising abruptly from the sea is Carmel Highlands, where there is a beautiful inn and a growing number of magnificent villas on crags and hills commanding a wide vista of mountains and sea. Famous authors and painters have found here the surroundings that make for their best work, and the rest and peace that busy years require for relaxation.

Castroville

The town of Castroville was started in 1863 by Juan B. Castro, one of the owners of the Castro grant. Mr. Castro through his skillful management and business energy, succeeded in making Castroville, from a wayside station, a town of about 1,000 inhabi-

tants in 1875. Gradually with the growth of Salinas and Monterey, Castroville experienced a steady slump until now there is a population of about 150. It is still a small trading center for the farmers in the vicinity and is surrounded by acres and miles of good agricultural lands which are thickly cultivated.

According to S. Castro, nephew of J. B. Castro, the founder of the town, the settlement of Castroville was founded in the year 1863. It was Juan B. Castro, the son of Simeon Castro, the first Alcalde of Monterey, and Maria Antonia Pico, a sister of Governor Pico, the last governor of California under Mexican rule, who founded the town. Like his brother, General Castro, his life was intimately connected and woven with the history of California. His father, Simeon Castro, died in 1840. When Juan B. Castro grew up, he took charge of his father's estate which comprised eight leagues of land, the Bolsa Nueva Y Moro Cojo.

Juan B. Castro was the earliest subdivisionist, being the first to cut up his ranch and offer inducements to settlers, realizing that the development of the country depended upon subdividing and settling the large ranches.

To the Southern Pacific Railroad Company he donated the right of way through his ranch and forty acres of land for a railroad yard and depot.

Juan B. Castro, the founder, also donated the Plaza for a place of recreation in 1863 to the town he laid out.

Among the first settlers of Castroville was Juan Pomber, who started the first grocery store in 1863. The Pomber family moved to Castroville from Pajaro in the month of February, 1863.

In the next three years Mr. Chalmers opened a flour mill and Doctor Martin built and operated the first hospital. Henry Mead opened a dry goods and grocery store in 1865. In this year the Wells Fargo Express Company established an office in the town and the first post office was also opened there.

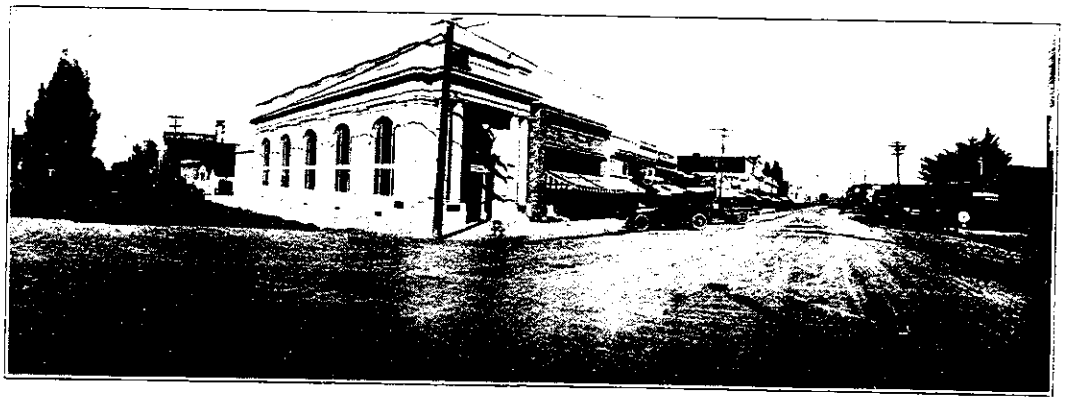
In 1866 Juan B. Castro established the *Castroville Argus*, that for many years was one of the leading newspapers of Monterey County.

For many years Castroville became a center for lodges, conventions, reunions and gatherings of all kinds.

In 1866 Captain Charles Moss established the ocean shipping point at Moss Landing so named for him. This landing is situated at the confluence of the Salinas River and Elkhorn Slough



BROADWAY, KING CITY



BROADWAY, KING CITY



ORCHARD—1900 ACRES. CALIFORNIA ORCHARD CO., NEAR KING CITY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

only two and a half miles from Castroville and consists of a wharf and warehouses. In early days these waterways were largely used for transporting grain and other products from a considerable distance inland to the ocean at Moss Landing.

Chualar

Chualar was founded, according to authentic information from G. P. Anderson, one of the leading merchants of that settlement, when the railroad first came down the Salinas Valley in 1872. Chualar was then the end of the division that was later built as far as Soledad. Chualar was the logical point for a railroad center, being just midway between San Luis Obispo and San Francisco. When the railroad first entered Chualar, this point contained only a station or ranch headquarters for the David Jacks ranch. The old stage line passed on the upper road at the Deep Well Station.

Mrs. O'Hern, the wife of a section boss started a lodging house, and a store was opened by John C. Droge to handle the supplies of the railroad laborers. Chualar was then destined to become a railroad town.

The earliest settlers in Chualar were the O'Hern family, the Peterson family, who also started a hotel, and J. C. Droge.

Chualar was a dry farming community until about 1910 when dairying and sugar beet raising were started.

King City

King City, originally laid out by C. H. King, was located on the San Lorenzo Rancho. It was created by an extension of the San Francisco railroad in July, 1886. The valley at this point is about eight miles wide—which is probably the average width the remaining distance of fifty odd miles to the bay. Judge William Vanderhurst of Salinas was among the first to see the natural location of this spot for a future great city, and founded the first store—Vanderhurst's—and built the Vanderhurst hall. Good crops for a while made good times and the little town flourished. The Spreckels Sugar Company bought twelve thousand acres of the San Lorenzo and Coburn got a slightly less portion of it. Others holding thousands of acres adjoining the townsite have

been the Coopers, Burchard, Orcutt, Dowd, the Dunphy estate and a Chicago land company.

Not many years ago a dry period began, the second year of which brought a total crop failure. From then on until about 1920 one-quarter and one-half crops were a regular thing; but most of the farmers stood bravely with the proposition, "going broke," putting in crops that did not receive the prayed-for rains, and then straining their credit in order to hang on. During this period King City would have been "up against it," only that the Spreckles people gave work to hundreds sowing grain and to other hundreds building two irrigation canals—one drawing water from the Salinas and the other from the San Lorenzo, which empties into the Salinas at this point. Owing to the Spreckles' enterprise the town did not have a single failure, but from that time on held its own until Jupiter Pluvius recollected the valley and again began "treating it right" as regards rainfall.

In the past few years King City has doubled her population, and is growing at an astonishing rate. In addition to many stores, a bank, garages, a newspaper, etc., the town is electrically lighted and has a modern water system.

Trade is drawn to King City by reason of topography from Priest Valley, thirty-five miles distant eastwardly and from the coast, fifty miles westward. The districts this side of Priest Valley that help support King City are Lonoak, Bitterwater and Peach Tree; while those to the west are Jolon, San Bernabe, Mansfield, Quinada, Pine Canyon, and dozens of canyons in each of which nestle several well-to-do farm homes.

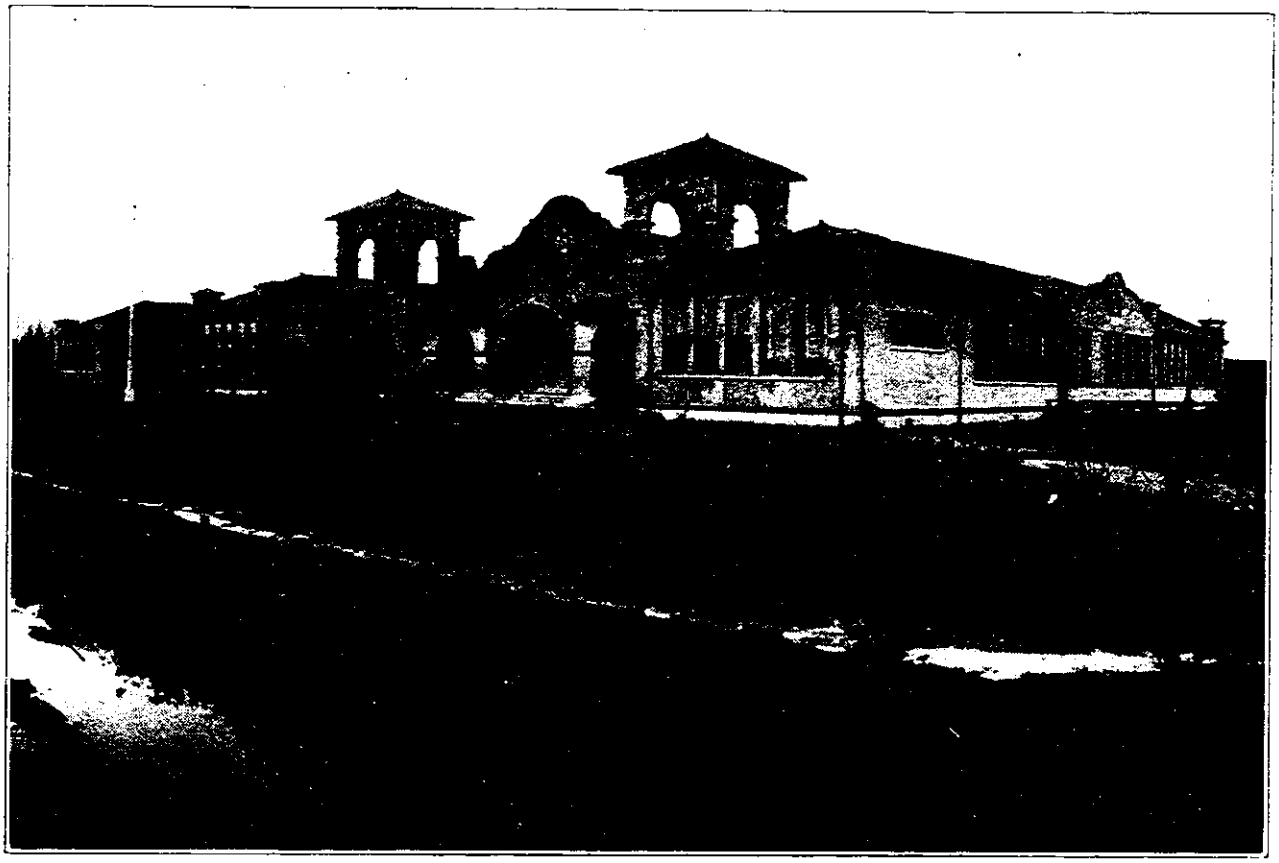
King City is one of the three most important centers in Monterey County.

Mission Soledad

Mission of Our Most Sorrowful Lady of Solitude, is the actual name of this once famous mission.

The ruins of the old Mission of Nuestra Senora Dolorissima de la Soledad, to which Soledad owes its abbreviated name, are across the Salinas River. The building was completed on October 9, 1791.

Early in 1791 Padre Lasuen, who was searching for suitable locations for two new missions, arrived at a point midway between



HIGH SCHOOL, KING CITY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

Santa Clara and San Antonio. With quick perception he recognized the advantage of Soledad, known as "Chuttusgelis" to the Indians. The name of this region, bestowed by Father Crespi years previous, was suggestive of its solitude and dreariness; but the wide, vacant fields indicated good pasturage in seasons favored with much rain and the possibility of securing water for irrigation promised crops from the arid lands. Lasuen immediately selected the most advantageous site for the new mission, but several months elapsed before circumstances permitted the erection of the first rude structures. Only eleven converts were reported as of the first year.

On July 24, 1814, Governor Arrillaga, who had been taken seriously ill while on a tour of inspection, and had hurried to Soledad to be under the care of his old friend, Padre Ibanez, died there and was buried July 26, under the center of the church.

At about the time secularization was effected in 1835, according to the inventory made, the estate, aside from the church property, was valued at $36,000. June 4, 1846, the Soledad Mission was sold to Feliciano Soberanes for $800.

The ruins of the Soledad Mission are about four miles from the Southern Pacific station of that name. The church itself is at the southwest corner of a mass of ruins. These are all of adobe, though the foundations are of rough rock. Flint pebbles have been mixed with the adobe of the church walls. They were originally about three feet thick, and plastered. A little of the plaster still remains.

It is claimed by the Soberanes family that the present ruins of the church are of the building erected about 1850 by their grandfather. The family lived in a house just southwest of the Mission, and there this grandfather was born. He was baptized, confirmed, and married in the old church, and when, after secularization, the mission property was offered for sale, he purchased it. As the church had been allowed to go to ruin this true son of the church erected the building, the ruins of which now are to be seen.

Moss Landing

Moss Landing is located at the mouth of the Salinas River, about three miles from Castroville. Until about two years ago the only active whaling station was here.

About twenty-five years ago William Sandholt, Jr., of Monterey, and Ed Vierra, of the Monterey Bay Salt Works, planted some large eastern oysters in the slough and until two years ago, it seems that no one saw or heard of results. Even then what was heard was little. On September 13, 1924, announcement was made by the owners and investigation disclosed a new industry for Moss Landing, which is destined to be as profitable, perhaps, as the whaling business and not nearly as offensive to the smell. Although these large eastern oysters are natives of Chesapeake Bay, on the Atlantic coast, Mr. Vierra said local conditions were normal and favorable to their growth and that experts from the east have definitely settled the question through experimentation. Henceforth, Monterey Bay oysters will be as well known, especially on the Pacific Coast, as blue points, and will be just as pleasing to the palate if not more so on account of their added freshness.

The whale fishery was at one time one of the most important of the local industries. For a period of about twenty-five years beginning with the year 1851, when a Captain Davenport, formerly a whaling master of much experience and enterprise, commenced California shore whaling, the industry was a stable one. For a period of about forty years, none of the whaling stations were very active, due to various causes. The old time whaling declined and died, not because of lack of whales but because it depended on the utilization of a small part of the bodies of certain kinds of whales. Its sole products were whale oil, sperm oil and whalebone. Whale oil was practically valueless when petroleum and kerosene were developed. Whalebone ceased to interest corset makers and manufacturers of other articles of the kind, when cheaper substitutes were invented for stiffening garments. Sperm oil remained valuable, but in itself would not pay for the expense of the long costly voyages, necessary to the hunt of the Sperm whale, or for the expense of keeping up permanent shore stations on the coasts of those seas which the Sperm whale mostly frequents.

On January 23, 1919, at Moss Landing, about a mile from the new whaling station, the whaler *Hercules*, with her crew, encountered a Sperm whale and a long fight ended in a victory for the *Hercules* and her crew. The event opened a new era of an old Pacific coastal industry. Not only were the coastal waters of Cali-

fornia hunted a generation or two ago by the lumbering and whaling ships that you may see today rotting in Oakland Creek, San Francisco Bay, but from the beach itself at Point Lobos and in Monterey Bay.

In this new era, all varieties were hunted, since new and less expensive methods, rather more profitable methods could be devised to hunt and utilize them. Smaller whales and those that carry neither sperm oil nor whalebone, such as Sulphur Bottom, the Finback and Humpback were hunted. Every scrap from the carcass was utilized; not only oil for which the soap industry has developed a new market, but also fertilizer of prime quality, bone meal, and then during the period of the Great war, the people learned to eat whale meat and a few canneries were started for the canning of same.

Pajaro

Pajaro in the Spanish language means "Bird". Local tradition informs us that when the early settlers arrived in this locality the birds were so numerous that they were unable to grow grain or other cereal crops owing to the havoc caused by the feathered tribes. Hence the name, Pajaro! The foregoing, and indeed, the following, is from information furnished by C. E. Bulmer, Secretary of the Northern Monterey County Chamber of Commerce. Although his version of the naming of the district is somewhat different from that furnished by Fr. Englehardt and quoted previously, it is interesting and quite as plausible.

Away back in the Fifties Pajaro was a flourishing district, large crops of potatoes, wheat, beans, buckwheat, etc., being raised in the valley, while the hills surrounding were devoted to the raising of stock. Most of the agricultural labor at that time was performed by Indians; there were quite a number of these people in the district together with a few Mexicans and they proved fairly good workers on the land.

The climate in these early days was cooler than at present, while fogs were very prevalent at all times of the year; wild ducks and geese gathered in huge flocks. One old resident informs us that over sixty years ago he brought down over twenty birds with one barrel of his gun.

The Southern Pacific Railway was cut through here in 1872. Pajaro is now an important railway junction and sub-division. All the important trains on the coast route between San Francisco, Los Angeles and New Orleans stop here. There is a round house and car repair shops, a very large number of men being employed.

A half million dollar ice manufacturing and cold storage plant has recently been built, together with packing houses for fruit and vegetables.

Pajaro is the center of a large berry, vegetable and fruit growing district, and there are also several fruit and vegetable drying plants. The population is growing rapidly; many homes and large buildings have been erected within recent times. A beautiful school was built only three years ago which is already too small to afford accommodation for the children of the district.

The highway between Watsonville and Pajaro is electrically lighted at night; modern stores, gasoline service stations and garages cater to the needs of residents and tourists. A beautiful electric sign of the latest type greets the tourist as he enters Pajaro so that the name of this fertile valley may be permanently impressed upon his memory.

Paraiso Springs

The history of Paraiso Springs is an interesting one: In 1791, King Carlos of Spain granted to the Mission Soledad twenty acres of land containing the Paraiso Springs, where the priests located a health resort and vineyard tract.

At the same time the priests established the Mission La Soledad, the ruins of which may still be seen. They used the hot soda and sulphur baths for healing the sick and afflicted, and finding the spot of great beauty and the waters full of life-giving and healing qualities, called the place Eternidad Paraiso, which means eternal paradise. Consequently, for over two centuries Paraiso Springs has been known as the gift of nature for the cure of various diseases.

Cosily tucked away by nature from the fogs of the Pacific in a snug little valley on the eastern slope of the Santa Lucia Mountains at an elevation of 1,400 feet lie the Paraiso Hot Springs, aptly called "The Carlsbad of America."

Pinnacles

Among the many wonders which nature, in her generosity, has supplied this section of California for the edification and education of both natives and visitors is one about which all too little information has been disseminated, namely, the Pinnacles, in Monterey County near Soledad. This remarkable spot has for many years attracted some attention but it was not until 1908 that Roosevelt, who was then President, set aside a portion of the public land in which it was situated as a National Monument. The original tract has been increased from time to time by executive order until now there are included within the boundaries two thousand nine hundred and seventy-three acres.

At some remote period in the past, a volcanic cataclysm thrust upward through the crust of the earth at this point, huge masses of igneous rock. As time went on the softer supporting material was eroded, some of the masses broke off and were piled up in the narrow canyon, their interstices forming a series of caverns and galleries. Others are still standing in the form of fantastic spires and other formations. By giving a little rein to the imagination, one can discern all sorts of shapes both animal and human in the piled up masses.

This monument is reached by proceeding by the Hollister-Tres Pinos-King City road to a point approximately two miles south of Cook post office where there is a sign "The Pinnacles." Here turn west and follow a good dirt road for about six miles to its end, from which the hiking starts. Soon an extension of the automobile road will be finished which will enable the motorists to continue about a mile and a quarter farther up the canyon.

For the geologist there is a wonderful story unfolded for him to read; for the person with artistic sense are wonderful colors and ever-changing effects of light and shade; for the naturalist the abundant animal and bird life, this being a "game refuge"; and the person with athletic tendencies may find ample opportunities to test his wind and endurance.

San Antonio de Padua

The third mission of the series located in Monterey County was founded in honor of San Antonio de Padua, July 14, 1771, by Serra, accompanied by Padres Pierras and Sitjar. One solitary Indian heard the dedicatory mass. In two years a hundred and

fifty-eight natives had been baptized and enrolled. Before the end of 1773 the church and dwellings were built and three soldiers who had married native women, were living in separate houses.

As far as can be ascertained, the mission was not one of those sold under Pío Pico's plan in 1845-46. In 1848 Padre Doroteo Ambris was in charge as curate. For thirty years he remained here, true to his calling. He finally died and was buried in the mission he guarded so well. In 1904 the California Historic Landmarks League (Inc.) undertook the preservation of the San Antonio, but little has yet been accomplished.

Seaside

The community of Seaside is about a mile from Del Monte. Most of the industrial development of the Peninsula is expected to take place here. It is already known as a poultry center.

Tassajara Hot Springs.

Tassajara Hot Springs is located forty-five miles south of the city of Salinas, at an elevation of 1,500 feet above sea level, in a beautiful hollow of the Santa Lucia Mountains, which are covered with a rich growth of maple, sycamore and oak trees.

This magnificent rugged country is in the heart of the Monterey National Forest, which is being constantly beautified by new trails to the many points of interest.

From early records and local folk-lore it appears that Tassajara (Spanish for a Drying Place) has been always a gathering place for those aware of the many virtues of its Hot Mineral Springs; first it was the Indian, making the journey laboriously on his cayuse over obscure and dangerous trails, later the white man who built a rough log house and primitive baths.

On one of the rocks close by the springs is a painting by Harrison Fisher, the celebrated artist, of the head of an Indian girl. It was suggested by an old Indian legend, that, during one of the annual pilgrimages of the coast tribes to Tassajara, which they made unfailingly for the benefits of the curative waters, a young Indian girl named Chanta Seechee fled from her father's tepee with a warrior from a hostile tribe. Her fiance followed the couple and, as they reached the rock, overtook and killed them both.

CHAPTER XXXIV

SANTA CRUZ COUNTY

The City of Santa Cruz

Santa Cruz, often alluded to as the Gem County, was one of the first counties in the state to be organized. The act creating the county designated it as Branciforte, but before the end of the session, the legislature had changed the name to Santa Cruz. The only change in the territory was made in 1868, when a portion of the county was severed and given to San Mateo; but of this we shall have much more to say anon. The county seat has always been at the beautiful city of Santa Cruz—the city around which most of the history of the county centered and which, necessarily, will play the leading role in this section of the history.

Much of the following information has been gleaned from the living pioneers, the Wallace W. Elliot and Company's "Historical Sketch of Santa Cruz County" published in 1879, now long out of print and quite rare, E. S. Harrison's "History of Santa Cruz County," published in 1892, Edward Martin's "History of Santa Cruz County," and last but far from being least, the old and valuable files of the *Santa Cruz Sentinel* to which the owner, Mr. McPherson, kindly gave the author full access. Some of the following is quoted verbatim from these sources, some is taken almost literally from the mouths of the early settlers, and other parts have been ferreted out of odd corners. It has been the purpose of the writer to coördinate it all and to give what is believed to be the most complete history of the county yet published. It is with gratitude to the foregoing people, however, that the author proceeds; for it is they who, in a large measure, have made the history possible.

In the chapter on Monterey County historical data preceded descriptive matter—for a reason, the reason being that its history concerned it mostly. It was developed earlier, occupied the position (the town of Monterey itself) of capital of California, and

ranked high in the early development of the state as a whole. With Santa Cruz the position is reversed. Perhaps its scenic beauty, its fame as a resort and "happy home" place, takes precedence. Of course it, too, had an early history, but this history is of second consideration. Its present development—in which it has outstripped the old Pacific capital in population—takes on a deeper significance, and will later be dealt with at length. But for the immediate present it is propitious to make clear just why Santa Cruz is called the "Gem County." And being propitious, history will be subordinated for the nonce.

Santa Cruz County, as said, is one of the smallest counties in area in the State. But the quality of smallness is appropriate to its area only; in other matters it is big, even great. The heart of its people opens up to the tourist, its scenic beauty is magnificent, its boosters' spirit is on a larger scale than many cities five times its size. It is truly the "Gem County"—flawless in every important respect.

The climate of Santa Cruz County is equable, varying but a few degrees throughout the year; its natural advantages—from scenery to productiveness of soil and on again to industries—are many and varied. Its soil alone is perhaps worth more—will be worth more—than the earth of El Dorado County that yielded up a great wealth of gold in the days of '49. Mountains, foothills and valleys produce a bewildering growth of nearly all that is indigenous to the North Temperate Zone. Tourists can take delightful trips through hills and dales that are densely wooded with some of the world's most gigantic trees; they can seek out beds of natural wild flowers in which to lie and gaze upon an azure sky that is moving with brightly-plumaged song birds; they can swim in a surf that has but few equals; they can walk along a beach that is famed the world 'round for its crystal purity; they can, if of the life-loving type, visit the famous Casino that has housed a thousand and one exciting and romantic "good times."

Geographically—and this closely follows the text of Mr. Harrison—Santa Cruz County is that part of central California situated about fifty miles south of San Francisco, having a coast line of forty miles, and occupying four hundred and thirty-seven and one-half square miles, or two hundred and eighty thousand acres of territory, according to the United States Government survey. From this it will be observed that the county is only from ten to



THE BEACH IN THE EARLY '80s, SANTA CRUZ

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

twelve miles in width. The area of farming land is not very extensive, occupying perhaps one-fourth of the county. The Pajaro Valley, in the extreme southern part of the county, and a strip along the entire coast line about two miles in width, together with the small mountain valleys, constitute the level and comparatively level land of the county; but fully one-half of the remainder of the territory is tillable mountain land, especially adapted to the growth of orchard fruit and the vine.

About one-third of the county is timbered land, covered with a dense growth of redwood, which has been the source of supply of a vast quantity of building material for the past thirty years. A large number of sawmills have from its earliest times operated throughout the county, and, although wood has been necessary, this activity has been somewhat of a menace, depleting much territory of its natural beauty. Of late, however, the sawmills have been somewhat slowed down as a preventative of this. The mineral resources of the county have not been very extensive, although gold has been discovered in some quantities, both in quartz and in the auriferous sands of the bay shore.

One may look down at the ocean from the flat top of Ben Lomond Mountain, which is not more than from four to six miles from Santa Cruz. It has an elevation of nine hundred feet, and is an almost solid quarry of excellent limestone of metamorphic formation, which makes it a fine building stone as well as useful for lime. About six miles northwest of Santa Cruz, and near the ocean, are extensive beds of bituminous rock, which at present are being successfully quarried and utilized for making pavements. These beds of bituminous rock cover an area of perhaps a mile square, and are the residuum of oil beds in a period not geologically remote.

The highest elevation of Ben Lomond is of granite formation. Extensive deposits of brick clay and some terra cotta clay are found in the county. Briefly enumerated, the resources and industrial features of the county are fruits, nuts, cereals, vegetables, stock raising, dairying, manufacturing, and minerals. Almost everything in the line of deciduous fruits is here raised, and while citrus fruits can be cultivated successfully, they are not to any great extent. The apples of the Santa Cruz Mountains are superior to any others grown in the state, while the vineyard products—the table grape for its delicacy of flavor and prolific yield,

and the quality of wine manufactured here in the days before prohibition came—had the reputation of being unexcelled even by the famous grape and wine districts of the Old World. From time to time the following manufacturing has been in progress: Powder mills, limekilns, paper mills, tanneries, soap and glue factory, beet sugar factory, and a large number of sawmills and institutions of minor note. Stock raising has been and is conducted on a limited scale, as much of the mountain, being heavily timbered, is not adapted to grazing. The proximity of the ocean and the cool, equable temperature, make this one of the finest counties for dairying in the state, and some of the largest and most successful dairies have been located here. The vegetable products of the county have for many years formed one of its most extensive and profitable industries. The wonderful richness of the valley soils renders the cultivation of potatoes, beans, sugar beets, etc., profitable to an extent absolutely unknown in less fertile sections.

Poultry raising has, since 1906, become a prominent business in Santa Cruz County. The annual cash income from this endeavor today is conservatively figured at $1,500,000.

A description of the agricultural progress up to the beginning of the 20th century will be of interest in that it reveals the fact that the pioneers had discovered the secret of Santa Cruz soil and knew its possibilities and its limitations. Although great strides had been made up to that date, greater strides have perhaps been made in the last quarter of a century. Nevertheless, an account of this early agriculture will show many conditions existing today; and after all twenty-five years is but a grain of sand in the vast stretches of the historical past. The following data on agriculture, with the exception of the account of the bulb industry of today, is quoted, verbatim for the most part, from Harrison's early history of the county.

The word "farming" in California has heretofore conveyed the idea of vast fields of grain. Fences were so far apart that the one on the opposite side of the field would be invisible to the unaided eye. From six to twenty-six and twenty-eight-horse teams drawing gang plows, were used to break the land. These were followed by the seeder and harrows in sufficient numbers so that a day's work meant a planting of from fifty to one hundred and fifty acres of land. During the winter, when the young grain

was growing, men were employed to herd the wild geese off the fields, these pests coming in such numbers, and committing such depredations, as to frequently provoke the ranch owner into poisoning them.

All this has been changed in Santa Cruz County. Small landholdings are the rule here, and diversified farming follows as a natural result. To show that it is more profitable it is only necessary to observe the evidence of thrift and prosperity to be seen upon every hand, the pretty homes, the neat gardens, the grassy lawns, and many other indications of culture and refinement, and then to contrast these significant and suggestive features of farm life in this section with the conditions which obtain to a great extent in the valleys of the San Joaquin and Sacramento, where will be seen a vast stretch of slumberous plain covered with billows of bending grain, in the midst of which, unprotected by shrub or tree, an ordinary and often very common board residence gleams and glimmers in the bright heat and sunshine.

In Santa Cruz County considerable grain is raised (in the Pajaro Valley one hundred and twelve bushels have been produced upon one acre), but the industry is not recognized as one that brings adequate returns on the valuation of valley lands. Some fields of buckwheat may be perceived by a person traveling over the country, whilst here and there the pretty green of growing corn attracts the attention of the observer, and excites the curiosity, inasmuch as from the time it is planted until after it matures it does not receive one drop of rain.

Corn with stalks from thirteen to fifteen feet in height can be found in many fields, and the yield of from fifty to sixty bushels an acre represents about the average. The profits of this branch of farming are not conspicuous, as corn planting is generally resorted to by the farmer to clear his land of foul stuff and give the soil that rest obtained by rotation of crops. Potatoes are a wonderfully prolific crop in this county, especially in the Pajaro Valley, and, except in the years when the prices are depressed, are a very profitable product. Beans are a conspicuous production and the source of considerable wealth to the county. Since the establishment of the Western Beet Sugar Factory, at Watsonville, a field of sugar beets is an adjunct of most farms in the Pajaro Valley. Pumpkins are grown for stock feed, and frequently yield thirty tons to the acre. An orchard, a vineyard, a straw-

berry patch, or a patch of blackberries or raspberries, are a part of most farms in the county and generally the most profitable. Melons are grown to a limited extent.

Much of the Pajaro Valley will produce a ton of dried hops to the acre, and in 1881, when the price of hops went up to such fabulous figures, from a twenty-acre hop field in this valley $25,000 worth of hops were sold. (Since prohibition, however, this latter industry has, as would be expected, fallen off.—Ed. note.)

Viticulture in Santa Cruz County is promising. Here are found the natural advantages which produce the very best quality of table grapes. Our grapes come into bearing in the fourth year, producing one-half crop, and get into full bearing in the sixth year. The minimum yield is two tons to the acre, the maximum ten tons, although as much as twenty-two tons of table grapes have been gathered from one acre of vines. Late table grapes are quite a feature of viticulture in Santa Cruz County, the products of our vines being found in market as late as January. The varieties which are grown for the table are: Verdel, Black Ferrara, Malvoise, Emperor, Black Morocco, Muscat, black and white, Flame Tokay, Cornichon, and Queen Isabella. These grapes are all late except Malvoise and Muscat, getting into the market during the months of November and December, and yielding from five to fifteen tons an acre.

Horticulture is, or will be, a prominent industry in almost every part of California. Where there is such a great variation in character of soils, temperature, and rainfall, one will find some locality especially adapted to some kind of fruit, whilst other localities will excel in the quantity and quality of other varieties. Thus it has been found that the Santa Clara Valley, of which San Jose is the metropolis and commercial center, is the home of the prune. The southern counties and the foothills of the Sierras produce the finest citrus fruits, and the Santa Cruz Mountains grow the finest apples to be found on the Pacific Coast.

The visitor from the East notices our large and luscious pears, our choice apricots, our plums and cherries, and many other kinds of fruits which are much superior to similar varieties grown in other parts of the United States; and among all these he is surprised to find that our apples, as a general thing, are not up to the standard of the Eastern crop. But if he were given a sample

from the orchards of the Santa Cruz Mountains, his wonder and admiration, provoked by the size and quality of other California fruits, would not be abated one jot or title. The orchards are singularly free from pests, the trees present an unusually clean and healthful appearance, and the fruit is large, smooth, and of prime quality. It does not shrink or shrivel after being picked, like apples from warmer parts of the State, and, when properly handled, keeps as well as the Eastern fruit.

The apples of this region are now noted, a Santa Cruz brand being sufficient to recommend them to the favorable consideration of the buyer. In short, the reputation which Santa Cruz apples have achieved has caused a decided impetus in the industry. Let one drive through the valleys, the foothills, or in the mountains, and he will see many young orchards; particularly is this true in the Pajaro Valley. And I may add, in this connection, that orchards in this county are sure bearers.

From this data the practical horticulturist will deduce an accurate idea in regard to the profits of the industry. For the benefit of the man who has not had experience, I may say that a revenue of from one hundred to five hundred dollars per acre represents the income of an orchard in full bearing.

But apples are not the only kind of fruit which thrives in Santa Cruz County. Every variety of deciduous fruit does well here. While the Santa Clara Valley is called the prune orchard of the State, that fruit is none the less successfully grown in this county. It is a notable fact that, while the prunes of other parts of the State have frequently been a partial failure, the trees in this county are invariably well laden with choice fruit.

Apricots grown in the mountains of Santa Cruz, the adjacent foothills and valleys, have a delicious and distinctive flavor, and a rich, ruddy color not to be found in fruit from any of the interior counties.

The cherries also are not less conspicuous, both for their size and flavor, their yield and the prices obtained for them.

While peaches do well, they are not grown to any large extent, nor for export. There is sufficient for home consumption of the most satisfactory quality. Peach trees are an adjunct of nearly every orchard, and I have no doubt that the culture of this kind of fruit would yield profitable returns upon the investment and labor expended.

Small fruits, notably strawberries, raspberries, and blackberries, constitute a very important feature of horticulture in this county, several hundred acres being devoted to their cultivation. In the Pajaro Valley is where most attention is directed to this part of the industry. The annual shipment of strawberries from Watsonville is about two thousand tons. About one-fourth of that quantity of blackberries and raspberries are also exported every year. The profits derived from the culture of small fruits, when anything like fair prices are obtained, are enormous. The strawberry season lasts about nine months of the year, during which time an acre will yield about three tons of berries. Irrigation is necessary for the culture of small fruits.

Other fruits, such as pears, persimmons, quinces, walnuts, etc., flourish in this county as well as in any other locality of this State, and the adaptability of many parts of the county to the growth of the olive is deemed of sufficient importance to merit a separate and more extended article.

The old trees in this county are the Mission variety, some of them apparently of great age, but heretofore no effort seems to have been made by their owners to utilize their products further than the making of a few gallons of pickles for home use—apparently ignorant of the fact that they had at their doors the material from which, by the most simple processes, oil could be manufactured as delicate and palatable and far purer than they had all this time been supplying their tables with—ostensibly from the choice growths of Tuscany, but in fact largely made up of adulterations of lard and cotton-seed oil.

The olive was first brought to this county by the Mission Fathers, and planted at the mission when it was founded, about a century ago, and probably contemporaneously with those of San Diego and Los Angeles. At least one of the trees now growing here gives evidence of its great age.

With the development of the fruit industry of California came an increased interest in the olive. Many years ago Elwood Cooper, of Santa Barbara, saw the profit that might be realized by the intelligent cultivation of the olive. Since then he has planted and brought to maturity a large olive orchard, and, if reports be true, the production of his orchard when made into oil is something fabulous, commanding as ready sale and at higher prices than any brought here from the south of Europe. Since then

olive orchards have been planted all over Central and Southern California, notably in San Diego, Santa Clara and Santa Cruz counties.

Until the efforts were made at olive culture in California the impression was general that this fruit would succeed only under the influences of sea air. In favor of this idea is the fact that from no place where the olive has succeeded is the sea very far distant. The shores of the Mediterranean are fringed with the olive groves of history, where for centuries the tree has grown and flourished, largely supplying the food of millions of people engaged in that industry, and furnishing luxuries for the tables of all countries of the civilized world.

It is also a remarkable fact that no considerable quantity of oil or fruit has ever been produced in an interior climate anywhere. How correctly this theory may apply to California we do not yet know. With the exception of the orchard of General Bidwell, at Chico, one or two in Placer County, and one in Pasadena, the olive in California has been cultivated exclusively, we may say, under the influences of the coast climate.

As to the importance of olive culture in California, few people have any idea. It is said that in the south of Europe the ripe olive pickled is largely used as a substitute for meat and the oil for butter. And I can readily understand how this may be so, as the olive pickled when ripened contains from ten to fifteen per cent of the oil, and that the oil is nourishing can admit of no doubt. The high cost of the olive here, prevents its use for many culinary purposes. The time will come, and the sooner the better, when preserved olives should be used to some extent in the place of pork, and the oil almost entirely take the place of lard for very many uses in cooking. Olive oil for cooking purposes can now be had in Italy for $1.00 per gallon, and there is no reason why it cannot be produced much cheaper here than it can now be bought.

Stock raising in California is destined to be a very prominent and profitable industry. Indeed, it is now and always has been. But the stock raising of the future will be, and, to a great extent, the stock raising of the present is, radically different from that of the past. When the old padres left Spain to establish missions in California, they did not permit their religious zeal and enthusiasm to impair their practical judgment about temporal things. According to the records, they brought along a large num-

ber of horses, sheep, and long-horned cattle. After the establishment of the missions, these multiplied so rapidly that at one period, according to Cotton's "History of the Missions," it was found necessary to destroy whole herds, as otherwise there would have been an insufficiency of feed to preserve them. At a later period the raising of beef cattle was one of the most profitable industries of the State. The number of men in California today who have acquired great wealth by stock raising is so large as to be conspicuously noticeable. Of the stock raising of the future such farms as those of "Lucky" Baldwin, Senators Stanford and Hearst, Haggin, and others are types.

Dr. C. L. Anderson, of Santa Cruz, has prepared a list of the native grasses of the county. He has found seventy-six different varieties, and mentions the fact that many of them are perennial and especially adapted to our soil and climate. He says:

"A matter of extreme importance to our county (as well as other counties in California), is the cultivation of native and introduced grasses, more particularly of the perennial kinds, such as have roots to withstand our long dry seasons. It has been said by superficial observers that most of the grasses of California are annuals. This may be true of those that have been introduced in various ways, but not true of the native grasses—they are nearly all perennials, having roots that remain, although the stalks in many become dry and dead.

"With water, climate, and soil of the best quality, I see thousands of acres where a suitable combination of such grasses as orchard grass and rye grass would succeed admirably, now yielding scarcely enough to pay taxes, because the owners depend on a few almost worthless annuals and weeds for pasturage. In fact, the worthless often survive and run out the useful.

"We have parks, basins, slopes, table-lands, forests, valleys, lakes, marshes, sea beaches, lagoons, and all varieties imaginable, where one kind or another, or a combination of kinds, of grasses would grow in profusion, and where cattle might revel in perennial pastures."

The mountains east of Watsonville are devoted almost exclusively to stock raising and dairying, while the plateaus along the coast above Santa Cruz are utilized almost exclusively for the pasture of dairy stock.

In addition to the raising of stock and poultry, Santa Cruz



THE LEADING HOTEL IN THE '80s IN SANTA CRUZ

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

County is also noted for its cement manufacturing, its crushed rock, bitumen and lime. It now has extensive artichoke farms, and some of the finest specimens of this vegetable are raised here. The growing of bulbs has recently taken on weighty importance.

The Santa Cruz bulb district extends from the western city limits to Soquel, the greatest being in the immediate vicinity of the city of Santa Cruz which consists of the propagation of certain bulbs which are used by commercial florists.

The industry is in its infancy and by the time this article is read it is expected that it will have reached a very large scale, even so far as being one of the large industries and sources of revenue.

The bulb industry of Santa Cruz can best be dated to 1907 when Edward Leedham of the Leedham Company secured from Rudolph Fisher, the originator, a small handful (200) Freesia Purity bulbs, which were planted and which brought negligible results. The grower being disgusted, threw them under the bench. From this place, they were taken by George Jason Streator, a rosarian, who saw the possibilities of this bulb and under his careful growing so increased his plantings that from this original stock the acreage has increased each year until 1924 when there are some eighty-five acres of Freesia bulbs at Santa Cruz. It is for this reason that we claim George Streator to be the father of the Santa Cruz bulb industry.

Prior to this time the propagation of bulbs was solely for flowers, but with the embargo being placed on foreign bulbs in order to keep out certain insects and diseases the industry has been given a helping hand. In 1924 the total acreage was taken as two hundred acres, one-half of which was planted by some eight large growers. The remainder was on small individual plots, ranging from a small house plot to an acre of ground. The importance of the varieties of bulbs grown based upon acreage would be in this order: Freesias, Gladioluses, Spanish and Holland Iris, Narcissus, Calla Lilies, Ranunculuses, Anemones, Ixias, Sparaxis, Babianas, and so on down the list.

The ultimate markets are the green houses the country over, the principal points of distribution being New York City and Chicago.

This business resembles the chicken business in so far as the greater part of the personnel of people, most of whom live here

of chance, will turn to the business as a means either for livelihood or increased income. Like the chicken business it requires intensive work. Those who have built up their business from small beginnings and who have properly cared for it have succeeded; in other words, it is the grower who is able to employ his own time who gets a good return.

It might be interesting at this point to give a little idea of the travels these bulbs have made in coming to our sunny California. The tulip is a native of the Levant and in its native land was a mass of reds and yellows, bold colors, but when brought back from the crusades to Europe took on a less bright color entirely. Today we have the pastel shades in the Darwin Types. The Spanish Iris comes from the Pyrrenes as the name implies, the blue being Spanish and the yellow Portuguese. One of the most popular rhizome type of Iris is the Persian Mourning Iris, native of Susa, Persia, which is very happy in its California home. The Cape bulbs from South Africa include Gladioluses, Freesias, Ixias, Sparaxis, Watsonias and Babianas. The Ranunculus comes from Persia and Asia, the lilies from Japan. These are also happy in their new California haunts.

In 1924 some two hundred thousand dollars worth of bulbs were shipped out of the county principally to the eastern cities. The demand is increasing each year at the rate of some twenty per cent and unless the acreage is increased at too great a percentage the demand will take care of the crop. It must be remembered that while the market price is based upon the supply and demand, there is an actual cost of production and unless the grower can produce at that figure it will be impossible for him to increase his production, but at the same time unless the flower-grower who buys the bulbs can sell his flowers for more than the cost of the bulbs plus production cost, the demand for bulbs will fall off.

The timber of Santa Cruz County comprises the leading varieties of the State. To a great extent the coast line is barren of any trees, save a rather stubby growth of oak. At an elevation of several hundred feet, and, notably, at a greater elevation in the cañons, which have their heads at the mountain summit, is a prodigious growth of redwood. These trees belong to the giants of California Big Trees, and in this county have attained to the prodigious size of forty-six feet in diameter, and three hundred

feet in height. Fir and pine are plentiful, the former being a valuable tree used for lumber purposes; the latter is generally scrubby and not useful, except as fuel. Tanbark oak and live oak comprise a conspicuous part of the forests of the county. Among the trees of lesser value are the sycamore, cottonwood, alder, madrona, laurel, maple and California nutmeg, chinquapin, nut pine, manzanita, and a solitary bunch of old-fashioned Southern dogwood. The native berries are huckleberries, thimbleberries, blackberries, strawberries, gooseberries, and manzanita berries.

The contiguity of the ocean necessarily makes a humid atmosphere, while the wooded mountain ranges, rising at the highest point, Mount Bielawski, to three thousand two hundred and sixty-nine feet, induce a greater precipitation than is characteristic of inland counties. The rainfall in Santa Cruz is twice that of the valleys of adjacent counties, and three or four times as great as that of the great San Joaquin Valley.

The fogs, which in the summer season seldom rise to the highest point of the mountains, carry a vast quantity of moisture to the parched land. In the rainfall and the fog will be found one of the secrets of the prodigious growth of forests and vegetation which is characteristic of this section of the State.

Numerous streams find their sources in the neighborhood of the eastern boundary line of the county, near the summit of the mountain range, and flow to the Bay of Monterey, or the Pacific Ocean; in fact, it is one of the best-watered sections of California, there being scarcely a cañon or gulch which does not contain a spring, or living stream of water. Many of these streams are of considerable importance, sufficient to furnish a motor of from five to one hundred horse-power. The water-power streams of the county are San Lorenzo and its tributaries, Aptos, Corralitos, Majors, Soquel, San Vicente, and Laguna creeks. They flow from fifty to one thousand miners' inches of water during the summer season, and during the winter, or rainy season, are turbid, raging torrents. One can have some idea of their velocity when it is considered that their source is not more than from ten to fifteen miles from the ocean, although, if their tortuous course were followed, the distance would be greater.

The average height of the Santa Cruz Mountains, whose summits constitute the eastern boundary of the county, is about two

thousand feet, although, as before noted, one peak rises to an elevation of three thousand two hundred and sixty-nine feet. From this summit one looks down on precipitous cañons covered with a dense growth of redwood, and on elevated table-lands and rolling hills, and, finally on the mesa, which stretches along the coast, the horizon being in the vista of the ever-restless Pacific. To the south the observer will perceive a valley of comparatively circular formation, comprising about fifty thousand acres; this is the famous Pajaro Valley, one of the most fertile spots of California, the wonder of the Pacific.

So much for the jeweler's point of view—Santa Cruz as the "Gem County." Let us turn to the endeavors of those explorers who found the gem and placed it in a setting of civilization. Santa Cruz had been sighted by numerous Spanish navigators, but it was left to Portola and his men to invade it on foot. In 1769 Portola and his expeditioners marched across the Pajaro Valley, weary and sick. On the shores of the Pajaro River they were obliged to stop; then, when they continued their journey, Father Crespi entered in his diary:

"After going a little over three miles, over plains and extensive hills, well covered with high trees of a red colored wood, trees not known by us—they have a very different leaf from that of cedar, and although the color of the wood is somewhat like it, still it is different without having the cedar smell, and we find that the wood of these trees is very brittle, and they grow here in abundance, and as it is unknown to any one of the expedition, we gave it a name from its color, redwood(palo colorado)—we stopped near a lake, the land about it being covered with pasture and many trees of redwood."

Thus a century and a half ago these giant trees were given the name that they bear today and the fringe of what is now the beautiful city of Santa Cruz was skirted. It was, in reality, in the region of the thriving city of Watsonville that the redwood trees were seen for the first time and named. Also many beasts were seen by Costanzo on this trip—beasts which are supposed to have been antelope and buffalo.

Continuing their march from this region they dragged themselves, carried the sick as best they could, over the hills to Aptos, and on to the Soquel Creek.

"On its banks," wrote Father Crespi, "there are many trees

of elm and alder by reason of moisture in the soil. It does not appear that the water can be utilized to irrigate some adjoining meadows. I named the place Rosario del Serafin de Asculi."

At a later day they came upon still another river, a laughing, flashing river that caught the sunlight in its rippling surface and poured its voice into the Pacific. [Sic].

"It was about fifty-four feet wide," notes Padre Crespi, "and in the middle the water reached to the bellies of the animals. It is the largest stream we have seen on all the journey. In its bed are many poplar and alder trees and it has many good patches of land that can be sown and irrigated. The stream is not distant from the beach, and, according to what the explorers say, it empties into a small shallow arm of the sea, in which the tide rises and falls. We rested on the other side of the river, and to descend and ascend the banks of it caused us some trouble."

To this river they bequeathed the name of San Lorenzo; and to this day people come to its beautiful banks to rest and to cool their city-fevered bodies.

In commemoration of this event, the discovery of Santa Cruz, the "Crescent City" gave on October 17, 1924, a Spanish ball. Among the many features historically pictured was the march of Portola—the journey that first brought the city under the eyes of white people. This event may be celebrated yearly hereafter, according to city officials. A newspaper account that appeared in the *Sentinel* on the day following the celebration makes the purpose clear:

"The people of Santa Cruz," runs the story, "last night demonstrated beyond the shadow of a doubt that they are heartily in favor of the movement to commemorate the birthday of Santa Cruz in the colorful pageantry of the days of old Spain, as it was transplanted to the western shores of the new world in the days of the Dons. In celebration of the 155th anniversary of the founding of the City of the Holy Cross, the onlookers saw the Casino ballroom filled with the beautiful senoritas, watchful senoras and gallant caballeros of another day as the orchestra struck up their first melodies last evening, and none could but wonder if the days of the Spaniard, in all their color, had not returned in actuality.

"Familiar faces were seen in unfamiliar garb; women and girls well known to the people of Santa Cruz were seen through

colorful glasses that placed them, in some unknown manner, beyond the familiarities of yesterday's friendships and acquaintances. They were not the people we knew yesterday; they were the vision of another day—beautiful, disdainful; lovely, but cruelly distant.

"Staid business men became cavaliers of pleasure for the nonce, and disported themselves in all their finery. Today they will again become our familiars. Last evening, for the hour, they forgot—and in the forgetting took on another existence.

"The American, and his eternal pursuit of financial power, was obliterated by the Spaniard, with his knowledge of obtaining the last possible benefits from the dollars of his forefathers. The spirit of the fiesta was upon the throng, and lowly soldier and lordly haciendado mingled on terms of equality.

"There have been few occasions where the people of Santa Cruz have been able to forget everything of their daily lives and enter into the spirit of anything in the way they entered into the spirit of this Spanish costume ball. Usually there are a few —indeed a very few—who appear in costume, while the majority come, look on for a time and then appropriate the dancing floor to themselves—and the affair becomes 'another dance.' Last evening was different. Fully two hundred and fifty were in costume, and the balcony was crowded—and it is all but a preliminary to the yearly pageant that is planned on the anniversary of the day on which the City of the Holy Cross, Santa Cruz, was founded.

"The tableaux were wonderfully realistic, and reflected the greatest possible credit on the improvement clubs that put them on. The time was all too short, but they justified the prediction that Santa Cruz could do in a few short days what would require weeks in any other place.

"The several Spanish dancing numbers were particularly good. Unfortunately, the usual 'Spanish' dance turns out to be the poorest sort of an imitation, but this was far from the case with those that were presented. * * *

"As part of the pageant at the ball last evening were to be seen General John C. Frémont and four soldiers with uniforms of 1846." General Pico and Mexican officers were also represented. The spirit of the event was breathed into poetry by Blarney McGee, who penned the following tribute:

SANTA CRUZ—HER BIRTHDAY

"In givin' dear old Santa Cruz
A little birthday party
Let no good citizen refuse
To make her welcome hearty.
So old, and yet so young is she,
Me eyes I'm scarce belaivin'
'Tis plain as annything can be
Old Father Time's desaivin'.

So young, so fair, so full of cheer—
Ah! sure, an' who'd be guessin'
That long she passed her hundredth year,
An' every year a blessin'?
With what a gay an' sportive air
An' general up-to-dateness
She laughs an' sings an' bobs her hair
An' dreams of future greatness.

No need to pledge the 'flowin' bowl'
An' bootleg fines be countin'
We'll drink her health—God bless her soul!
In spring an' sparklin' fountain
On this her ladyship's birthday
We'll swear in honor never
To let her shinin' locks turn gray,
But keep her young forever!"

Although in Part One we have gone at some length into the discovery of Santa Cruz and the founding of its Mission, it will be well to refresh the memory with a brief resumé of the county's early history as presented in the ancient and valuable book of Elliott and Company, compiled by S. H. Willey. Having followed the march of Portola, we turn to the Mission of Santa Cruz:

It was not till twenty-two years after the first visit of the Spaniards to this locality in search of Monterey Bay, that Santa Cruz Mission was founded.

The benighted Indians at various points, all the way from San Diego up the coast, had been provided with missions, but

those around Aptos and Santa Cruz were not reached. The time came when it was determined to commence a mission here.

It was on the 25th day of September, 1791, that Fathers Alonzo Salazar and Baldomero Lopez arrived and pitched their tent on the hill on which the Catholic Church now stands. They began in a very primitive way. Something to serve for a church was provided and so they began their work. It must have been rather lonely. Their nearest neighbors were the Missions at Monterey, Santa Clara and San Francisco, and the journey to either of those places, in these times must have been an undertaking.

But they brought with them contributions from some other missions to help them start their new housekeeping.

Santa Clara gave thirty cows, five yoke of oxen, fourteen bulls, twenty steers, and nine horses. "Two pairs of the oxen," the record runs, "were very bad." The Carmel Mission gave seven mules. From San Francisco came five yoke of oxen, but then it is quaintly stated that "of those five yoke of oxen, we had to kill a pair so bad were they, and of the seven mules received from Carmel, one was so gentle that he died three days after!" [Sic]. But from San Francisco, there came also sixty sheep, ten rams, and two bushels of barley.

That fall they ran short of provisions. They applied to the soldiers, some of whom the missions always had near by for protection. The soldiers divided with them. They gave them some beans, and corn and chocolate, to the value of forty-two dollars, "Which value," the Father observes, "was faithfully returned to the soldiers."

And so they began their work, here in this choice location, surrounded by this beautiful scenery, but in seclusion and loneliness. They lived under the shadow of these hills. The sun rose bright and the air was mild, as now, and the music of the surf, and the roar of the ocean in times of storm,—these things must have been as familiar to them as they are now to us.

But there must have been something of sublimity about them when all around was in a condition of nature, that we miss in our more artificial life.

They go about their work. They get together the Indians as soon as possible, to communicate with them. They teach them

some rude approach to the arts of civilized life. They teach the men to use tools, and the women to weave.

And so a year and a half passes away.

At this time we find them with a great work on their hands. It is nothing less than the building of a church.

We think that to be no small undertaking even now with all our facilities. But it is not easy for us to imagine what it was to them, with nothing but hand labor; and that of a very rude sort.

But they set about it. They make adobes. They cut down the trees. They hew out the timber. By some means they get it up to the spot. No small undertaking that, as we can see now by examining those very beams, in what remains of that same old church (but remember that this was written in 1879; nothing now remains of the venerable old edifice, not even these aforesaid beams—ed. note).

It took a little over a year to build the church. It was one hundred and twelve and a half feet long, twenty-nine feet wide, and twenty-five and a half feet high. The walls were five feet thick. The first stone was laid on the 27th of February, 1793, and it was ready to be dedicated on the 10th of March, 1794.

The dedication was a great occasion. Father Tomaz Pena came over from Santa Clara, and Hermenegildo Sal, commanding officer of the Presidio of San Francisco came down, together with four or five priests.

And so life at the Mission began in earnest.

Other buildings were erected as they came to be needed. In the year 1810 a large house with two wings was built for widows and girls.

The lands appertaining to the Mission were understood to be eleven leagues along the coast, and three leagues from the shore inland.

The limit to the north may be indicated by the fact that there were 2,900 head of cattle at New Year's Point in 1814, and thirty-three miles thence down the coast would place the southern limit not far from Aptos.

The cattle, flocks and herds increased rapidly, though there was no little complaint of the many wild animals that came down from the mountains and ravines making havoc often among the sheep and the cattle.

For twenty-three years things went on prosperously, when an inventory showed the condition of the Mission.

In those twenty-three years there were 1,684 baptisms, 565 marriages, and 1,242 deaths. This very large death-rate in those early years shows how far from kindly the Indians took to civilization. From the beginning as we have seen it in 1791, with only 33 head of breeding cattle, they have, in 1814, 3,300 head of cattle, 3,500 sheep, 600 horses, 25 mules and 46 hogs.

Walter Colton says that in 1830 this Mission had 42,800 head of cattle, 3,200 horses and mares, 72,500 sheep, 200 mules and large herds of swine.

That then the church was spacious, and was garnished with $25,000 worth of silver plate. It was secularized in 1834, by order of General Figueroa, and then according to another account, the liquidation value of the entire Mission property was estimated at $97,361.96.

Forbes says that in 1835, there were in Santa Cruz Mission 222 men, 94 women, 30 boys and 20 girls, in all 366. Also that year, this Mission produced 400 bushels of corn, 965 bushels of barley, and 75 bushels of beans.

Further, that there were 3,500 black cattle, 940 horses, 82 mules, 5,403 sheep; whereas, in 1830 there were 42,800 cattle, 3,200 horses and mares, 75,000 sheep, 200 mules, and herds of swine. All of which shows the rapid decline of this Mission from 1830 to 1835.

So much for the stock possessed by the Missions. The Indians themselves in the Mission of Santa Cruz present an interesting study. Fortunately Mr. Harrison was able in 1892 to have an interview with an old and intelligent Indian, one who read and wrote the Spanish language, and who had been baptized at this Mission in 1819. Such natives are now practically extinct, and "The Narrative of a Mission Indian," as presented by Mr. Harrison becomes yearly more valuable to the historian. The narrative follows:

"I was born at the Mission of Santa Cruz, on Monday, the tenth of August, 1819, and given the name of Lorenzo by Padre Ramon Olbez. Three days afterward I was baptized at the baptismal font. My father's name was Venancio. My mother's name was Maria; my brother's name was Jacinto. I was with the Reverend Fathers of the Mission of Santa Cruz until I was grown

up, and then I went to Monterey and was employed by General Figueroa, and was taught to play the clarionet by Sergeant Rafael Estrada. There were other military officers there, named Eugenio Montenegro, captain of infantry, Augustin Zamarano, captain of cavalry, and Lieut. Col. Nicolas Guitierrez. The barracks and officers' quarters were where now is the church at Monterey. Afterwards I lived at the Mission of Carmelo for one year, during the time of Padre Rafael Moreno, who was a missionary. I conversed at that time with the Indians of that mission about the death of Padre Junipero Serra. They told me they were at his funeral, and for three nights the corpse was watched, and afterwards he was interred, as some of them thought, at San Antonio Mission. Others insist the corpse was embalmed and sent to New Spain (Mexico). When Figueroa died, the corpse was embalmed and taken to Mexico. (This was not the case, as has been amply proved since. The body of Father Serra lies in the soil at the Carmel Mission today.—Ed. note).

"Afterwards I came to the Mission of Santa Cruz, and was instructed how to read and write in Spanish by Padre Antonio Real. I was the sacristan, and sang and played in the choir. There were about twenty of us that composed the choir, of which I am the only one living.

"The land cultivated in those days was all of the tract between the hill at the end of Pacific Avenue and the hill where the public school now is. There were eight hundred and thirty-six who received rations as I read from the roll. The list was kept by Padre Jose Jimeno, and one day, he being out, I counted the names. They all slept in houses where now is the Sisters' School. All the space about there was covered with dormitories. Some of them were engaged in weaving blankets, others were carpenters, others blacksmiths, tanners, and many worked in the field, cultivating and harvesting. The women prepared the wool for the weavers, did much of the sewing of clothes, and also at times worked in the field. The tanyard was near to the adobe house owned by Mrs. Boston, formerly belonging to Rafael Castro, who was the grantee under the Mexican Government of the Rancho Aptos, now owned by Mr. C. Spreckles.

"The names of the Fathers whom I remember, were, first, Francisco Moreno, following Antonio Real. These were missionaries belonging to the Santa Cruz Mission. There was a tribe

of Indians living up the coast called Jaraum. The Indian children were brought to the mission, and afterwards came the grown ones. They were all Christianized by being baptized. Another tribe called Esuans also lived up the coast, and another tribe living farther up the coast was called Joali; another tribe, living at Soquel, had for their captain Balthazar, a name given by the Fathers. These different tribes fought with each other with bows and arrows. Those of Soquel had for their boundary what is now known as Arana Gulch. Soquel is an Indian proper name, so also is Zayante, and are not translatable. The names of the Indian tribes were given them from the names of the lands they occupied. Santa Cruz was called Aulinta in the Indian tongue. I will give you in their language some words: One, *hinumen;* two, *uthiu;* three, *caphau;* four, *catwaz;* five, *nissor;* six, *sacen;* seven, *tupucy;* eight, *nizatis;* nine, *nuku;* ten, *iwes* (beyond this there are no numbers, but in counting, twenty, for instance is called *uthinues,* meaning two tens); *mancharas,* woman; *ketchkema,* boy; *ciui,* girl; *atchesma,* wife; *hounsen,* husband; *maco,* knife; *chipay,* ax; *hatis,* arrows; *temo,* bow; *liti,* come here; *hai,* sick; *ena,* dead; *esu,* hand; *coro,* feet; *uri,* head; *hein,* eyes; *ochi,* ear; *uss,* nose; *hais,* beard; *summup,* eyebrow; *siit,* teeth; *tur,* nails of the hand.

"I have always lived in Santa Cruz, except a time in Monterey, and San Jose three years, and the presidio, San Francisco, four years. I was employed at the latter place by Jesus Noe, who was alcalde. This was in 1846 and 1847. I worked about his house and milked the cows and did the chores. When Fremont came, I was made a soldier, and served in the presidio with other Indians at San Francisco. Afterwards I returned to Santa Cruz. There were too many people in San Francisco for me. At the presidio, Francisco Sanchez was our captain. One day there came a man-of-war vessel, flying the Mexican flag. We were in doubt as to her nationality, because she also had the American flag flying lower down the rigging in the stern. Soon the vessel came to an anchor, fired their guns, lowered their boats, hoisted the American flag on top, and we knew then it was an American war vessel. What could we do? There were fourteen Indians of us, without arms, shoes, or much clothing. The crew then commenced to ascend the hill of the presidio. Our officers were Francisco Haro, Francis Guerrero, and Jesus Noe. They were obliged to put down their

arms and surrender. We said one to the other, 'Now we shall be killed.' We were made to stand one side, and then we were laughed at, not having hats, shoes, nor arms. They told us not to be afraid, we should have clothing and plenty to eat, and soon we had a grand feast. We got drunk, and then we were very brave. The next day came three more vessels, and thus was San Francisco taken by the Americans.

"The Indians at the mission were very severely treated by the padres, often punished by fifty lashes on the bare back. They were governed somewhat in the military style, having sergeants, corporals, and overseers, who were Indians, and they reported to the padres any disobedience or infraction of the rules, and then came the lash without mercy, the women the same as the men. The lash was made of rawhide. I was never punished, except a few slaps for forgetfulness. I was always busy in the padres house, doing the work of a housekeeper. Sometimes the padres would leave a *real* (silver coin, one-eighth of a dollar) in some corner, or under the bed, to see if I would take it. I was never tempted in that way, but often others were, and then punished. It was the custom of one of the padres to go about at night disguised, and he would come upon his Indian officers playing cards by the fire. One would say during the game, 'I play this card!' another some other card. He would approach nearer and say, 'I play this card!' showing his hands in the light of the blaze of the fire, when the others would discover by his white hands that he was not one of them.

"The Indians at the Mission of Santa Cruz, after prayers in the morning at church received their orders as to their labors, at the church door; then they went to breakfast, and had their meal altogether of boiled barley, which was served out to them from two large caldrons by means of a copper ladle. This full was the ration to each in a *ccra* (a small kind of basket), from which they ate with a shell or the fingers. Some had small gourds into which they received their rations. Boiled barley was all they had in the mornings. The labors were in the field mostly. All of the land where Santa Cruz is was cultivated, also the meadow near Kron's tanyard. At eleven o'clock a. m., the bell was rung to call them together—the same bell that was on the church a few years ago. The dinner consisted of a mixture of horse beans and peas. At the end of an hour the bell was rung again, and all went to work

until about sunset, when each received his rations of boiled corn. Such of the Indians as had families were given meat also. A beef was killed every eight days.

"The land cultivated was all fenced with posts driven in the ground and tied with hazel bark, and a ditch outside. They worked in plowing-time from one hundred to one hundred and thirty oxen. The surplus products were sold to vessels that came to buy. The Russian vessels carried away the wheat and barley, Spanish vessels taking beans, corn, dried peas, and dried horse beans. English vessels carried away hides and tallow.

"The Indians were dressed with pantaloons of coarse wool, and a blanket over the shoulders. The women wore a skirt of the same material and also a blanket. We had no shoes or hats. If any of us entered the church with a dirty blanket, he was punished with fifty lashes, men and women alike. We were always trembling with fear of the lash. The padres nominated an alcalde and assistant for each of the different bands, of which there were about thirty. Those tribes nearest to the mission, such as up the coast a way, and as far south as Aptos, could understand each other, but those from a few miles farther off did not. Those of Gilroy were in their own language called Paxen; San Juan, Uiuhi; Pajaro, Nootsum; Aptos, Aptos; Soquel, Soquel; up the coast Tili and Ulsicsi; at Red Bank Dairy, up the coast, Posorou; on the San Vicente Creek, Sorsecsi; near the old limekilns of Williams' Landing, Coyulicsi.

"To capture the wild Indian, first were taken the children, and then the parents followed. The padres would erect a hut, and light the candles to say mass, and the Indians, attracted by the light—thinking they were stars—would approach, and soon be taken. These would bring in others, such as their relatives. My father's tribe was Jlli, and he belonged to the tribe that lived up the coast. They lived upon shellfish, which they took from the seacoast, and carried them to the hills, where were their rancherias. The remains of the shells are there now, and can be seen in numerous places. They made their huts of branches of trees, which they cut down by firing and then using sharp stones. They also had acorns to eat, which they ground in stone mortars, called *urwan*. The pestle was called *packshan*. To cook the acorn after being ground, the mass was put into large baskets, which were made water tight, being woven with grass roots of a kind very

long and tough. Into these were put hot stones, which caused the water to boil, and so the meal was cooked. Their meat was deer, killed by the bow and arrow, also rabbits, rats, elk, and antelope.

"There were many bears in those days; they used to come and sit on their haunches on the hill where now is the water reservoir and residence of J. H. Logan, watching for a chance to kill one of the calves of the mission. The Indians killed bears with bows and arrows and clubs. The wine the padres had to drink was brought from the Mission of San Gabriel on mules, being a journey of nearly one month. There were no vineyards about Santa Cruz. Afterwards a vineyard was planted in San Jose. My father planted and cultivated the orchard of apple and pear trees at Santa Cruz, known as the Mission orchard. The trees were brought to the mission very small, in barrels, so that the roots were kept damp. My father told me they had been brought from New Spain."

After the Missions were secularized, colonization rapidly followed. New settlers were sent hither by Mexico, and the understanding was that they should somehow get the Mission lands.

This Figueroa resisted as long as he lived, backed by the authority of Santa Anna, but the prize was too tempting.

The native race had no power of resistance in their own behalf. They were only children. And they have quickly given place to peoples of other races. In the year 1823, their number was estimated at over 100,000, and at least 20,000 were connected with the Missions, but in 1867 their number had dwindled down to less than 20,000 in all.

The early success of the Missions advertised the attractiveness of California to the world. It became known not only in Mexico, but through the early adventurers and traders in the United States. Captain Hedediah S. Smith had been here from Boston, and so had Capt. W. G. Dana, and others. They not only traded in hides and tallow, but they told the story of the Mission wealth here, the herds and flocks and fruits, and they told of the furs to be procured.

From this time forward foreigners were prominent in every quarter. Naturally, interesting things happened to the larger number of them. But, because of lack of space, we shall confine ourselves to telling the story of but two of them, also gleaned from Willey's history:

About 1822, an Englishman landed here known by the name of William Thompson. There is a touching little story connected with him. His native place was London. His father was a sail-maker. And there lived the family—mother, brothers, sisters and all. William went to sea. They parted with him with regret and sorrow, and after a time they ceased to hear from him. Years went by and they could get no tidings of him. The family grieved, and the mother pined for her son. But time went on, and no tidings came. By and by his brother Samuel proposed to go in search of him. Though he did not know where on the globe he might be, if still alive, yet he thought he could go to sea, and make voyages to different parts, and somewhere fall in with him, or hear of him. His plan was agreed to, and he started. Just how long he sailed, and where he went it cannot be learned, but after a while he was on a ship that came into this port of Santa Cruz. Here was anchored, at that time, another ship, taking on board a cargo of hides. Samuel came ashore and inquired for the captain of that ship. When he found him he asked him if among his crew there was one William Thompson. The captain said he didn't know certainly whether he had a man by that name, "but there the men are," said he, pointing to them at work on the beach, carrying hides, "you can go and see." Samuel went, and the very first man he met was William! We can imagine Samuel's joy at the meeting, after so long a search, and the joy, also, that the account of it caused in that home in London, when it reached there. But it appears, instead of Samuel getting William to go home, that they both remained on the coast. They shipped together and went down to South America, and then returned to Santa Cruz. Here William Thompson married, and the records tell us that in 1838 the Carbonero Rancho was granted to him by Alvarado, a tract of land lying east of the San Lorenzo River, including the property later owned by the Powder Works.

The other early settler of whom we shall speak was Isaac Graham. In 1833 he came from Hardin County, Kentucky. He settled in the vicinity, a brave and adventurous man, a thorough frontiersman, at home with his rifle in his hand.

This had become known to the native California officials in Monterey.

When, in 1836, Juan B. Alvarado, a subordinate customs officer, was plotting a revolution, and contemplated the expulsion

of Governor Guiterrez, he came to Graham and sought his assistance, and that of the foreigners who acted with him in the matter.

On condition that all connection with Mexico should be severed, and that California should become independent, the assistance was promised.

And in due time it was rendered. And by means of it Guiterrez was sent away, and Alvarado and his party became masters of the situation. Now was the time for the fulfillment of the promise of independence of Mexico.

But Mexico, instead of punishing Alvarado, proposed to confirm him in his usurped authority. Alvarado, pleased and flattered by this, quickly broke his promise to Graham.

But in doing so he felt a wholesome fear of those rifles, by the assistance of which he had himself gained his promotion.

Orders were sent out secretly to all the alcaldes in this part of the country simultaneously, on a certain night to arrest foreigners and bring them to Monterey. Jose Castro himself headed the party for the arrest of Graham.

It was on the morning of the 7th of April, 1840, before light, that the party reached Graham's dwelling. They broke in the doors and shattered the windows, firing at the inmates as they saw them rising from their beds. One of the assailants thought to make sure of Graham himself, discharging a pair of pistols aimed at his heart, the muzzles touching his cloak, which he had hastily thrown over his shoulders.

This assassin was amazingly surprised afterward on seeing Graham alive, and he could not account for it till he examined his holsters, then he found the reason. There sure enough were the balls in the holsters. The pistols had been badly loaded, and that it was that saved Isaac Graham from instant death.

He was, however, hurried to Monterey, and placed in confinement, as were also other foreigners arrested on that same night.

The condition of Santa Cruz County up to 1850 was one of unrest, similar to the condition that prevailed throughout the state and which is elaborated on in earlier sections of this volume. The gold rush had come in '49 and had taken many people from this part of the country to the gold fields. Affairs progressed with little of great importance (other than a slow, sure development, in which the county was becoming more and more firmly established) until 1850. At this period the county began to expand in ways that promised a great future.

CHAPTER XXXV

PRESENT-DAY SANTA CRUZ CONTRASTED WITH THAT OF YESTERDAY

In 1850 the population of Santa Cruz, centered around the Mission Santa Cruz, was about 643. Other inhabitants of the county were scattered sparsely about, in ranch houses here and there between Pescadero and Santa Cruz and thence on to the Pajaro River. This scattered populace consisted of ranch owners, their servants, blinking cats and hordes of snapping, snarling dogs whose main object in life seemed to be to intimidate strangers. At this period farms had already been laid out and tilled, orchards were bearing some of the world's choicest fruits; grazing pastures were alive with cattle. The native Californian much preferred to have battled with coyotes, wolves and grizzly bears than to have endured the unwanted "gringos."

What immediately follows is based largely upon Chapter IV of Harrison's History, written by Ed. Martin. True we deviate at times to bring forth contemporary newspaper accounts, to give the opinion of living pioneers, but in the main we are indebted to the old and splendid, if somewhat neglected history.

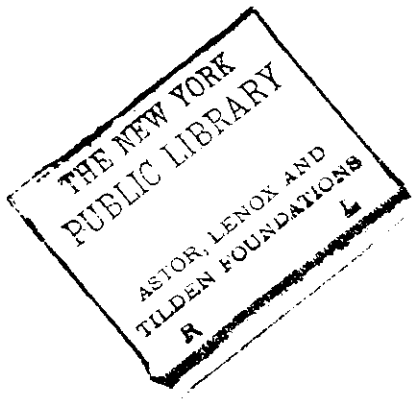
In 1850 it seemed as if people were thrown back at least one hundred years, to colonial times, especially in the manner and mode of locomotion. Travel at this period was entirely *a caballo,* on horseback. The Californian and his wife or inamorata rode on one horse, the latter not behind on a pillion as the colonial dame, but on the saddle, while the señor sat behind and guided the reins and held onto the señora, which was considered an improvement on the colonial practice. Not a bridge existed in the county, and as the streams became unfordable in the rainy season, they were crossed by swimming the horses, or delay was had until the stream became fordable, as no one was in a hurry, and time was not an essence of any contract with the native Californian. They were



THE FIRE OF 1894—PACIFIC AVENUE, SANTA CRUZ



PACIFIC AVENUE, SANTA CRUZ


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R
L

not troubled about the mails arriving on time, or mourning over the nonarrival of the daily newspaper. No doubt these people enjoyed life in their own peculiar way, and would rather have remained undisturbed, enjoying their ease, their frijoles and tortillas; but manifest destiny decreed otherwise, and, not being able to keep up with the grand march of progress, they have been left behind in the struggle for position, wealth, and power that surrounded them for such a number of years.

From 1850 to 1852 there was no large increase in the population of the county. Farming was carried on to some extent in and near the "Mission," which was the name generally used when speaking of Santa Cruz, and for a number of years this was the designation given by all classes when speaking of visiting the village of the "Holy Cross."

Santa Cruz was the main shipping point for a number of years, as it is at present. Schooners plied between this port and San Francisco in the years 1851 and 1852. Several wrecks occurred on the beach. The mariner of that day, not being familiar with the storms, stayed too long at anchor, and found to his sorrow that he should have hoisted his sail sooner and saved his vessel from being beached. Lumber was shipped from Santa Cruz from the sawmill of Captain Isaac Graham, who had located on the Zyante ranch. There were no lumber trusts or combinations at this date, but $200 per M. was the price paid for the article. Not much sawed lumber was used in this county at that date. The style of architecture in vogue was the renaissance, or the old masters, the houses being built of shakes and clapboards. When the door was opened, the entire house was disclosed, windows were deemed superfluous, and it would have been considered aristocratic and dangerous for anyone to indulge in such extravagances.

The extraordinary yield and high prices of potatoes in the fall of 1852 started quite a large emigration from the mining to the farming counties. Land was rented at $100 per acre in Santa Cruz on the flat where now a large portion of the city is built, but as potatoes brought sixteen cents per pound in San Francisco, this was not an extravagant rental. Potatoes became a drug and rotted by the wayside. The business was overdone. California was not able at that period to digest such a large amount of spuds, hence there was a general collapse all around. Nothing dismayed by the failure, however, the greater part of the farmers kept in

the same business; many succeeded in recuperating their fortunes, acquired lands of their own, and are enjoying the fruits of their victory, having become old settlers—sometimes called "Mossbacks" and "Silurians" by those who have had the advantage of their experience.

The conditions of society, the customs, habits, and social amusements of this period, were peculiar. For several years the Californian predominated; his customs and language were interwoven with the new people that had taken possession of the land to a greater extent than would have been supposed. It was necessary for the purpose of trade and traffic to acquire some knowledge of the Spanish tongue. At this period the merchant used every effort to capture the Spanish trade. The large ranches were intact, and no mortgages were on them. Cattle by the thousands ranged over the mountains and plains, and if the don had no ready money, he had collateral, and was given, to his sorrow, unlimited credit by the accommodating storekeeper. The large ranches did not disappear, but they changed hands through due process of courts, and in a manner entirely inexplicable to the don, who in later years has paid the penalty for his extravagance of former years.

The American enjoyed the fandango of the don, imitated his costume, murdered the soft Castilian language in the vain attempt to make it fit in with a Yankee accent or Pike County dialect, "but he got there just the same," and is now master, and the don is "not in it." The social gatherings of the American population at this period were not very numerous. A solitary fiddle was about all the orchestra that could be had at a dance, which was generally known as a "stag dance." Native Daughters and Native Sons had not arrived. Society was purely democratic. The prominent citizen had not made his appearance. Men wore flannel shirts to save washing, and white shirts would have been entirely out of place. The few women wore poke bonnets and were not troubled about fashion-plates.

Ten years later, however, pretty women were in evidence in Santa Cruz County, American women, that is. An item appearing in the *Santa Cruz News* in 1860 read:

"The Ladies of Pajaro, for grace and beauty, are not excelled by those of any town in California, which it has been our fortune to visit. At the Exchange, on Friday evening last, there were

more fine looking women than we supposed could be found in one little town. While none of them were strikingly beautiful, the company generally appeared so well, and seemed so happy, we forgot for the moment that Santa Cruz could boast of any so attractive."

In regard to amusements, there was usually political excitement. The county was Democratic in politics, save and except 1855, when the "Know Nothing" party swept the entire State, and a year afterwards the leaders of the old party, "the war horses," were crying out lustily that they had never left the Democratic party, that they were led astray and would never do it again.

Campaigns in the '50s were fierce and exciting. After the death of the Whig party, the only parties in the county were the Simon-pure old Democrats and their opponents, marching sometimes under the head of the People's party, or any other name that would likely lead to victory. Secession and anti-secession, Squatters Sovereignty, Douglas Democrats, and Breckinridge Democrats, a few Republicans denounced as abolitionists, constituted the political make-up of the period. Elections were not so expensive to the candidates; the partisans shouted and worked for their favorites without money and without price, the political striker had not asserted himself, and there was no register law in force, no particular form of tickets necessary; each party adopted tickets so ruled that the votes could be determined as the ballots were deposited, barring the scratches. Notwithstanding the voters were worked up to the highest pitch, the elections were conducted as quietly as they are at the present time. The people have always been law-abiding save and except a horse thief would come to an untimely end without due process of law.

Another form of entertainment—though not indulged in for the sake of entertainment solely—was the duel. Men defended their honor in those days quite differently than do the men of today. Even after laws were passed prohibiting the duel, it was still surreptitiously participated in. The *Sentinel* of an issue in 1855, ran the following:

"The settlement of the difficulty between Messrs. Henry B. Truett and Austin E. Smith, by means of six-shooters, at ten paces, which was prevented on Thursday by the police, took place yesterday afternoon in the rear of De Peyster's Hotel, at San

Mateo. The principals, attended by their seconds and friends * * * appeared upon the ground shortly after 2 o'clock, and immediately prepared for the fight, the arrangements being—distance, ten paces; first fire, at the word, and each succeeding one at pleasure of the parties, advancing a pace with each fire.

"Four shots were exchanged without effect, when just as Mr. Smith was raising for the fifth, he received the ball of his antagonist's pistol in his right thigh, causing, as we are informed, a very severe and dangerous wound. Physicians were, of course, on the spot, and rendered every possible assistance to the injured man; after which he was placed in a carriage and carried back to the city. About one hundred persons witnessed the affair. The clothes of Mr. Truett were twice cut by balls from Mr. Smith's weapon, but he entirely escaped bodily harm."

Law was lax in those days and costs for upholding law was high—a constant source of irritation to the earlier settlers. People in those days preferred an easy law to law at a high cost. An article appearing in the *Sentinel* in '55 spoke the public mind:

"This little county and small town is now blessed (?) with a perfect swarm of Courts. There is now in session here, or will be in a short time, the U. S. District Court, the State District Court, Court of Sessions, County Court, and Probate Court; with all the attendant host of Judges, Jurors, Clerks, Sheriffs, parties, lawyers and witnesses—the most of them being at public charge. No wonder that taxes are high, that property depreciates, that men fear to invest their capital—public mismanagement will sooner or later always affect the private interests of the citizen, and ultimately awaken him to the importance of performing his part as sovereign ruler.

"Look for example—the Court of Sessions met here on Monday last, and has continued through the week—but has done very little, as will be seen by the law report—the Court not being occupied half the time. Now Mr. Tax-payer, what is the cost per day—

Two Associates	$10
Sheriff and Bailiff	10
Clerk	5
22 Grand Jurors	44
12 Petit do	24

making $279.00 for the first three days: but this is not all, the summoning jurors, witnesses, and other *little* expenses will likely more than double that amount.—The Court sits six times a year, and from one to five weeks at each session. It is easy with a long line of figures to count the cost and astonish yourselves. This Court is not selected because it is peculiarly obnoxious—such is not the case—it is only selected as a present and fair sample of all the Courts of Law.—Now what do we get for this enormous outlay which is fast bringing us to the verge of bankruptcy? Do we get a speedy and impartial administration of law and justice? No, frequently not. Nor is it the fault of the Court alone, all connected with the practice of law are to some extent blameful," etc.

County jail built of Monterey granite completed in July, 1855, at a cost of $14,000. "The building has a good appearance," says the *Sentinel* of July 14, "and is perhaps, quite secure; but many of the stones are too small, and ought never to have been placed there. * * * There is to be a good granite wall around the yard, and on the whole, the county never undertook anything else which ended so well as this. The great trouble is that the apprehension and conviction of a dozen rogues will cost about as much as the jail has."

The old-fashioned camp meeting was in vogue at this period. From the adjoining counties came numerous families to attend camp meeting. These meetings were conducted by ministers of the Methodist church, South, which was at this time in the ascendency. The Methodists North visited and affiliated with their brethren of the South, but their relations were strained even at this period.

Watsonville in 1855 was quite a village, having been started in 1852 by Judge John Watson. In this village were two churches, Methodists, North and South. Quite a race was made by both persuasions to see which building should be erected first, the godly and ungodly joining in building the temples. "No 'dam Yank' is going to get ahead of this crowd;" "No Pike County Missourian shall lay over us," these were the watchwords and the battle cry. Both churches were erected, however, without any more feeling than was prevalent at the time, the feeling that the slave power was too aggressive, and, on the other hand, that "the abolitionist wanted to steal our 'niggers,'" or "niggros," as the graduates

of the William and Mary College in old Virginia expressed themselves. It was no uncommon thing for men to attend church in those days, probably having no other place to go, and for the sake of meeting the few women that might attend. Preaching in the evening was announced to take place at "early candle lighting." The hymns were lined by the minister and sung by the congregation. The choirs had not commenced to run the church; no soloist was on hand to sing an operatic religious air. The gospel given out at the camp meeting was straight from the shoulder, and no hope was held out for the wicked unless they came forward, took their seats on the mourners' bench, and repented of their sins. Brother Cox, who had been at one time a hard case but had forsaken his cards, dice, and other wickedness, used to relate his experience and warmly exhort his hearers to come and partake of salvation. Brother Morr, reverently termed "Joe Bowers," was another powerful exhorter. Brother Bailey, generally known as "Porcupine Bailey," from the peculiar cut of his hair, was the leader of the Methodist church, South, and was looked up to as a guide and counselor. Captain Barry, an unbeliever, used to pass the hat in church for contributions, and would whisper an appeal to his fellow-sinners in this manner: "You blankety blank sinners, ante up; these people can't live on faith entirely." The captain generally obtained a good voluntary offering from the heathen.

Horse racing was indulged in on Sundays in full view of the churches. Bull fights and other noisy amusements were commended in the early days. It must be borne in mind that Olympic clubs were not yet established, hence the pastimes savored more of the frontier than the highly-refined amusements of the present day.

The alcaldes under Mexican rule were succeeded by justices of the peace, and were called squires, the title of judge being limited to county judge and district judge. Squire S., deeming it his duty to prevent a violation of the law, informed some of the Sabbath-breakers that they were liable to be arrested, which information was kindly received, but the race was run.

As the county filled up and families became more numerous, schools were established, society became better organized, public sentiment refused to countenance outdoor amusements on the Sabbath, hence Pedro clubs were formed, which, while not so

noisy, and holding forth in barrooms, hidden from public view, did not offend the public taste so much as the other class of amusements indulged in by the crowd on Sundays.

The drinking of liquor was, of course, freely, heavily, and often not too wisely indulged in. Judges quite naturally consumed their share of the potent concoctions, and frequently put a little choice stock on the market. "Our friend Judge B— presented us with a demijohn of home made cider last week," ran a story in the *Sentinel*. "The article is of a very superior quality, and of a delicious flavor and much better than any of the imported article. The Judge has a quantity yet on hand, which he is desirous of disposing of."

Santa Cruz and Watsonville were the primitive towns in the county for several years. Intercourse between these places was always friendly and social. "Grand balls" at stated periods served to attract visitors to both places. Stages were running from Santa Cruz to San Juan, connecting these with a line to San Jose and San Francisco. San Juan was for a long time exchange station for the overland route to Los Angeles. It required two days to make the trip from Santa Cruz to San Francisco. Letters from the East were received by steamer, and the arrival of the steamer mail was an event anxiously looked for. At this period the old asscciations were not entirely discarded, as hordes of people in the East were eager for tidings from California.

In 1855 the *Sentinel* was transplanted from Monterey to Santa Cruz, where it is still published. While the local news was furnished from this source, the news of the great outside world was obtained principally from Eastern newspapers. The *New York Tribune* had a large circulation in the county for several years. In some localities, strange as it may seem at this date, yet a fact, nevertheless, subscribers to the above paper were looked upon with suspicion, by some of their neighbors, and were denounced as rank abolitionists. The impending conflict was going on until it culminated in the "late unpleasantness." The Chico Democracy so-called, and their allies, called "Dough-faces," were in the ascendency until 1860, when the election of Abraham Lincoln started a new order of things in more ways than one.

While on the subject of newspapers, it is timely to speak of the career of a number that disseminated news in that and the modern era. The *Sentinel* was the first paper born in Santa Cruz

County, that being in the year of 1855, when, as we have said, it was removed from Monterey. It would be manifestly unfair to give the life story of a certain few newspapers without giving the story of them all in both counties. This in itself would require a volume. However, it can show no preference to describe the general appearances of the papers of that age nor to give a resumé of the interesting life and death of the *Santa Cruz News*, which, being dead, no longer seeks subscribers or advertisers, and therefore, there can scarcely be any hidden motives in singing its praises in these pages.

The appearances of the papers of that date showed a marked difference from those of today. The first page was given over to poetry—for the most part, very flowery and sentimental poetry, to beauty hints, recipes, hints on home carpentry, freak stories of various kinds, the coal mines in Siberia, the rattlers of Mexico, etc., and the news itself was relegated to the inside pages and usually occupied rather an obscure position. There were no screaming headlines, no cross-word puzzles, no stories, naturally, no radio or airplanes. But as it was, the papers were always looked forward to and read with county-wide avidity. It is a strange fact that although people were interested in newspapers, they bought comparatively few of them; those who did buy lent them to their neighbors and thus deprived the newspaper men of their full rewards. Furthermore, as will be seen by the account of the *News*, the average citizen all too often forgot about paying his debts to the newspaper. It could wait; other bills were more pressing, such, for instance, as the saloon account and gambling bill.

On August 24, 1859, another paper, the *Santa Cruz News*, in addition to the *Sentinel* made its advent in Santa Cruz. Its life, however, was not to be a long nor a prosperous one. Its editor, Wm. N. Slocum, although disappointed by the hard straits into which his sheet soon fell, swallowed his bitterness with a nonchalance that cannot be but admired to this day. His papers with few exceptions were printed on regulation size news paper, seven columns in width and on fairly good stock. His issue of December 16, however, was printed on brown wrapping paper, the kind one can see in almost any butcher shop. It was torn into small sheets capable of holding three columns of printed matter. And on the 4th of April it was printed on a sheet no larger than an

ordinary letterhead of today, bearing the impassioned plea to pay up all bills, "as," said the owner, "it is impossible for us to continue the publication of the paper without the immediate payment of the debts due the office."

The forty-eighth (and final) issue of the paper, July 21, 1860, of the *Santa Cruz News*, aged eleven months, ran, in part, as follows:

"DIED

"Of starvation, at Santa Cruz, July 21st, 1860, the *Santa Cruz News*, aged eleven months.

"OBITUARY.—The subject of this notice had not at its birth a vigorous constitution, and, as is often true of such cases, its spirit was too powerful for its material organization; consequently, the vital force was soon exhausted, and it fell into a decline from which it was destined never to recover. It struggled hard against its fate, and possibly might have lived had it been left to work out its own salvation, but, unfortunately, it had too many doctors, who inflated its empty stomach with gaseous promises instead of reviving its drooping energies with the *Golden* 'Elixir of Life.' The natural tendency of gas is either to explode or gradually to dissipate, producing a grand crash or a quiet collapse. In this case the latter was the result; for, although stuffed to repletion with unsubstantial pabulum, the *News* died of inanition. Peace to its ashes. W. N. S."

Under comment on overdue subscriptions, Slocum makes the ironical comment: "Those who owe the publisher are not expected to pay anything—it is not customary in such cases—nevertheless, if any of our numerous delinquent subscribers feel disposed to transmit what they owe, they may be sure of its acceptance."

The *Santa Cruz News* in existence in that city today has fared quite differently from its predecessor, having a large subscription and giving a valuable service to its customers.

Other means of dissemination of news was over the stage coach roads, which carried passengers before the advent of steam railways, automobiles, or airplanes.

On July 19, 1861, at 5:30 a. m. the first Overland Mail Stage arrived in Placerville by the Central route, bringing 2,100 pounds of mail matter and one through passenger. It was given an enthusiastic reception by the citizens of Placerville, who looked upon the event as one of the wonders of the age. Compare this means

of transportation with modern day means of rail and air. In the future, no doubt the people will look back upon this era as equally slow and "behind the times." Be that as it may, the study of history, showing the gradual improvement of travel and human industry, affords the reader a sensation of the passage of time that in no other way could be felt. In that day of '61 the people were beginning to have the realization that better things were coming. The railroad had already been invented, and, indeed, was in practical (if infantile) use, in a portion of the east. The people of the West were beginning to look forward to that eventful day when both seaboards would be linked with steel. Of this age, the *Pacific Sentinel* ran an interesting editorial. It appeared in the issue of July 25, 1861, and ran as follows:

"The Pacific Daily Overland Mail, running by the most direct route from San Francisco to St. Louis, is now in successful operation. The people of California are under weighty obligations to the Federal Government, which in the midst of great and appalling dangers, has put into effect the great enterprise. With a public loan to contract, of an amount without precedent in American history, have shown their confidence in their resources, and their good will to California, by inaugurating a scheme of such vast and continuous expense. In the midst of a civil war, carried on at the Gates of the Capitol, is commenced a public measure, grand and beneficial in its character, and unequalled in its kind in the annals of the world.

"Well the people hope in the future of that government, which carries on the works of peace and arms itself for the shock of warfare, with equal grandeur and with such proud self-reliance. The simple daily passage of the mails over this central route, will do more in two years, for a Pacific railroad than all the debates in Congress, and resolutions of our Legislature for the last ten years. The country through which the mail route passes will become thoroughly known, and its resources will soon begin to be developed. A thousand difficulties which capitalists have hitherto dreaded, will vanish before the light of actual observation, and be regarded as mere trifles. The present ordeal through which the nation is now passing, will cause a heavy demand upon her financial resources, and will probably prevent any pecuniary aid from the Government to a railroad for some years. But private capital, both in America and Europe, will prove amply

sufficient to construct a railroad, and that as soon as our present troubles are at an end.

"This war of loyalty against treason, of order against anarchy, while it causes many, many evils, will be productive of some good. Our Government will have demonstrated its power to perpetuate itself, and will assume a commanding position among the great powers of the globe. National character is the foundation of national credit, and the stability and permanence of the government being once demonstrated, foreign capital will be largely attracted to our shores. No enterprise can be engaged in, by its aid, more certain of success and profit, than the great continental railway, and none will be more eagerly sought. While the East is enduring the bitterness of this civil strife, we are enjoying the blessings of unbroken peace, and the people of the Pacific coast can well be content to wait for the completion of their favorite measure, until the stars and stripes have regained their wonted splendor, and float in triumph over a peaceful and united country."

In the latter part of 1858 the Santa Cruz turnpike was completed—one of the earliest, efficient routes of travel, and admired by all. In the editorial columns of the *Pacific Sentinel* of October 2, 1858, an account of it was given:

"In company with a friend, we passed over the new turnpike which has recently been constructed from Scott's valley to the summit of the Santa Cruz Mountains, and thence over the Santa Clara Turnpike, to Santa Clara. The time occupied in making the trip to Santa Clara, with a horse and buggy, was about five hours. * * *

"The road is not entirely completed, although passable for carriages and light wagons. * * * It cannot be denied * * * that the road is a great public convenience, saving forty or fifty miles of travel to those of our citizens who desire to visit Santa Clara or San Jose in their own vehicles."

Travel by water was soon to become an important factor in the lives of the people. In 1846 the first schooner was built in Santa Cruz, christened the *Santa Cruz*. William Blackburn, the builder, constructed another schooner in 1849, which was named the *Zach Taylor*.

Water travel was to gain an increasing popularity. San Fran-

cisco could be reached over this route in a comparatively short time, and travel was pleasant.

In July of 1857 a ship called the *Santa Cruz*, built by Messrs. Davis and Jordan, made regular trips between that town and the City of San Francisco, and helped as only constant and direct communication can help with the growth of Santa Cruz. This was the day before the trains, before the fast coastwise vessels of today. But it afforded a means of delightful travel and certainly deserves a substantial place in a history of the county.

The "new and elegant" steamship first arrived in Santa Cruz harbor at 8:00 p. m., July 22, after an eight hour run from San Francisco. "As might be expected," reported the *Sentinel*, "the event occasioned no little sensation in our quiet place, and the gallant craft was welcomed by pretty much the entire town who repaired to the embarcadero on the approach of the vessel.

"The booming of the ship's gun as she neared the wharf, inaugurated (if we may so speak) the era of steam trade with our big commercial metropolis, and imparted a thrill of pleasure to all interested in the welfare and prosperity of our town and county.

"On this trial trip came down a very large number of passengers, all of whom express themselves as delighted with the ship, her accommodations, and the innumerable favors lavished upon them by Messrs. Davis and Jordan, the owners, Captain Dame and Purser Colgrove.

"On Thursday afternoon the *Santa Cruz* again fired up, and steamed over to Monterey, where she was received also with a salvo of artillery, which compliment was duly returned. Many of our citizens, ladies and gentlemen, accompanied the San Francisco party, and enjoyed themselves gloriously. An informal *soiree* was gotten up, by the ladies and gallants of Monterey, and for a few hours the Terpsichorean entertainment monopolized the attention of the brilliant assemblage.

"On Friday morning the *Santa Cruz* returned, but left again last evening for Monterey, and will take her departure for San Francisco this evening, as she is to remain but a few hours at the former place.

"This beautiful vessel excites general admiration. She is elegantly proportioned and sits the water like a duck. She com-

bines strength, grace, speed and comfort and is admirably adapted to the coast trade.

"She brings down 150 tons assorted cargo. The following is her memoranda and list of passengers:

" 'Steamer *Santa Cruz*, Captain Dame, left San Francisco 12 o'clock, M., July 22nd, on her first trip, bringing 150 tons of freight, and the following passengers, viz:

" 'I. E. Davis and lady, George E. Davis and lady, Frederick MacCrellish, H. B. Livingston, Mr. Smith, Mrs. Valencia, Miss Moses, J. W. Van Tine, J. S. Davis, J. G. Foster, A. Lindean, Charles Curry, S. S. Stanley, Joseph Knolton, H. B. Cummings, John Krutz, E. Anthony, F. A. Hihn, Thomas Curtis and lady, Charles Brown, A. Brown, J. W. Thurman.

" 'Officers of the *Santa Cruz*: Captain Dame; 1st Officer, George W. Claxton; Engineer, Edward Cox; First Assistant Engineer, Leander Cox; Purser, Sylas Colegrove.' "

It was not long until Santa Cruz was to have a street railway. On May 1, 1890, the first car passed over the East Santa Cruz railway and the electrical railway was opened on November 25 of the following year.

The following paragraph closely follows the text of W. C. Morrow in Harrison's History.

By 1892 Santa Cruz county had fifty-six miles of steam railroads, twenty-seven of which belonged to the South Pacific Coast Railway Company (narrow gauge), and twenty-nine to the coast division of the Southern Pacific Railroad Company (broad gauge), both operated by the Southern Pacific Company under lease. The South Pacific Coast line ran from Santa Cruz to San Francisco (eighty-one miles distant), through the Santa Cruz Mountains and a part of the Santa Clara Valley, and connected with San Francisco by ferry from Alameda across the Bay of San Francisco. The coast division line skirted the Bay of Monterey as far as Pajaro, and thence ran northerly through the Pajaro and Santa Clara Valleys, the trains running into San Francisco (one hundred and twenty-one miles distant). In this county there was a branch of the South Pacific Coast line running from Felton to Boulder, seven miles, and another from Felton Junction to Old Felton, two miles. The coast division had a branch running seven miles up Aptos Creek, from Aptos to the base of Loma Prieta at Monte Vista. While it is thus seen that the county was well sup-

plied with railroad facilities in the latter part of the Nineteenth Century, it is naturally even better supplied today. In addition to improved railroad conditions, modern automobile buses operate on most of the roads throughout the county and provide a pleasant and convenient mode of travel.

In 1860, continuing with Ed. Martin's account in the aforesaid history, the population had increased to four thousand nine hundred and forty-four, quite an advance in ten years. From 1850 to 1860, owing to the unsettled condition of the titles to land, not much progress had been made in the State of permanent improvement. The habits of the people throughout the State were migratory, changing from one county to another. This period may be aptly called the "Squatters' Period." A great many believed that Spanish grants, by which large ranches were held, would eventually become government land, hence squatters' riots were common through the State. In Santa Clara County the District Court adjourned, being unable to have its processes enforced, owing to the unlawful acts of the settlers on a certain Spanish ranch. In this county a little war was imminent on the Arnesti ranch, in Pajaro Valley. The U. S. Marshal, sent to serve certain processes, had a soothing effect on most of the unruly settlers, and after long and tedious lawsuits, order was restored, and the rights of the owners of the land protected. The District Court of the county was kept busy listening to disputes between owners of large tracts of land in different parts of the county. In these cases some of the most eminent members of the bar of the State appeared as attorneys, in what at that time seemed useless litigation. Happily for all concerned, these tedious lawsuits were finally determined and settled, so that purchasers have of late years been secure in their titles.

In 1860 the population of the town of Santa Cruz was eight hundred; population of Watsonville at this period, four hundred and sixty. Santa Cruz, being the county seat, and having enjoyed the advantage of quite a settlement for years prior to the discovery of gold, was better known, and offered more inducements to settlers than any other portions of the county. The shipping facilities were better, and other opportunities besides farming were offered for investment. The manufacture of lime was assuming shape, and, in '92, had become one of the leading industries of the county. Sawmills were started in several portions

of the county, especially in the vicinity of Santa Cruz. The pioneers in this branch of industry do not appear to have been very successful. It was not until some agreement as to prices was resolved upon, to speak properly, a combination made among the leading lumbermen of this and other counties, that promoters of this enterprise succeeded in their undertakings. Formerly it was quite common for sawmill men to run a season, when, their cash and credit becoming exhausted, the mills were abandoned. Whatever evils against public policy there may be in combination of capital, one thing is evident, that the sawmills of the county have been successful in recent years, have not only paid their men promptly, but continue to do so. By 1892 the lumber business was on a sound basis.

However, very little other material progress had been made in the towns during the ten years prior to 1892. It would seem that the people who had flocked to this county had not come to stay. There were no public buildings worth mentioning. The court house was a dilapidated looking building. There were no public school buildings worthy of the name. The transition from pioneer life to an advanced stage was going on very slowly. The streets of the two principal towns were in a wretched condition; sidewalks were not much in vogue. In the rainy season the traveler took desperate chances, especially at night time. Gas light was unknown. Street lamps were conveniences that had not made their appearance. In fact, some of the old landmarks are still visible. It should be taken into consideration that the means of the first comers were limited, the amount of capital brought by them was not large. The property acquired was due to their own exertions and industry, hence they builded as well as their limited means would permit. Another fact in connection may be stated, that the opportunities of obtaining money from abroad were few. San Francisco capitalists were loath to loan money on county securities, hence we can say the pioneers did as well as could be expected with the limited collateral at their disposal. It must also be remembered that communication between California and the world at large was very tedious and unsatisfactory. No railroads traversed this State until a comparatively recent period. In fact, California was an unknown territory and an unknown quantity. Within even the latter part of the Nineteenth Century it is a well-known fact that prayers were held in behalf of per-

sons who were intent on leaving their home in the East for the purpose of settling in the benighted region of California. Isolated as the people of California were for a long time, and relying on their own exertions, the energy and enterprise of the first settlers of the State, the hardships suffered, the privations endured by them, and the many and various sacrifices made, are certainly worthy to be placed to their credit.

The San Lorenzo Paper Mills were established on the San Lorenzo Creek, a short distance from Santa Cruz, in the year 1860-61, and employed about sixty operators, and the value of the plant was estimated at about $100,000. These mills were in successful operation for several years, but were destroyed by a freshet that washed the boilers and other machinery out of the buildings and left the mills in a dilapidated condition. The owners declined to rebuild, gathered what machinery they could out of the wreck and removed their establishment to another part of the State. Two paper mills were later in successful operation in the county, one at Soquel, four miles from Santa Cruz, and another at Corralitos, about eight miles from Watsonville. Both of these mills manufactured paper from straw, furnished principally from the grain-fields of Pajaro Valley, for the mill at Carralitos, and from the fields adjacent to the mill at Soquel.

The powder mills became another important industry of the county, located on the San Lorenzo River about three miles from Santa Cruz. The works were owned by a company of San Francisco capitalists, who expected vast sums of money in this enterprise.

The manufacture of leather became another important industry of the county, and afforded employment to a large number.

In 1866 the town of Santa Cruz was incorporated, the governing power being vested in a board of trustees. The same year, through the exertions of ex-Senator Cornelius Cole (now deceased) who was then in Congress from this district, an act of Congress was passed giving the trustees power and authority to make deeds to parties of town lots, the United States relinquishing all claims to any lands in the Mission of Santa Cruz. Under Mexican rule the alcaldes were in a habit of giving titles to land within the mission to any one applying for them. Some doubt was expressed in the validity of these alcaldes' titles, hence the passage of the act of Congress referred to. The foundation of

the titles of land within the limit of the city of Santa Cruz, formerly the town issuance of deeds by the trustees. From this period people felt secure in their possessions, and commenced to make improvements on their property. Santa Cruz was incorporated as a city, with mayor and common council, in May, 1876.

In 1868 Santa Cruz County suffered a loss of a portion of her territory, the same being annexed to San Mateo County. Included in this slice was the town of Pescadero, which was quite a prominent resort in summer time, situated on the coast about thirty miles from Santa Cruz. The reason given at this time for this act of secession was that San Mateo was nearer and more accessible to the people of Pescadero and vicinity, their business relations with San Mateo being larger than with Santa Cruz, and the condition of the roads leading to the latter place being better, especially in the winter season, when the roads were dangerous and at times impassable. Thus through a false economy this county lost a valuable piece of her possession.

The foregoing from the pen of Mr. Martin states the condition exactly. The following, appearing in the *Sentinel* in the year of 1857, shows the hostilities that arose over the proposed change in the boundary line of the counties. The article, arising from an Act introduced by Assemblyman T. G. Phelps of San Mateo County, brought out the knowledge that Mr. Phelps wanted more territory for the county of San Mateo and wanted it annexed from Santa Cruz and Santa Clara counties. This, of course, was strenuously objected to by residents of Santa Cruz County, who had no intention of changing their northern boundary line. But the Act nevertheless was passed, an unintentional mistake in so far as the changing of the northern boundary went—said the San Mateo Assemblyman.

Letters exchanged between the Assemblyman from San Mateo and from the one from Santa Cruz County, reveal the warmth that was engendered over the affair.

Watsonville, June 1, 1857.

Mr. Phelps, Assemblyman, San Mateo Co.,

Dear Sir: I enclose an editorial article taken from the *Pacific Sentinel;* it was written and printed before I had any knowledge that the county of Santa Cruz had been robbed of a portion of her territory.

The fraud was so apparent that the editor has traced the

modus operandi, with as much correctness as could have been done, had he been possessed of such additional information as I might have afforded him. I endorse the article as far as the charge of fraudulent intention goes, but believe that in the endeavor to conceal the fraud in the first section, the words "following the middle of the south branch thereof," in the second section, becomes doubtful and when the parts of a law conflict, the intention of the law-makers is the means of arriving at a proper interpretation of the laws. This being the case, in my opinion, the whole scheme falls to the ground. You undoubtedly recollect that in the early part of the last session of the Legislature, upon information I had received from some of my constituents interested, I remonstrated against the attempt and informed you of my opposition to your scheme, and gave you my reasons therefor, and you stated that you would not attempt the acquisition of territory from Santa Cruz, without my knowledge, and the consent of the people concerned.

You know you afterwards informed me that you had abandoned the scheme to get territory from Santa Cruz and Santa Clara added to San Mateo. You also know, that after you had given notice of a bill to reorganize and establish the county of San Mateo, I went to you and asked you to let me see it, and you, knowing that I was interested in preserving the original boundaries of Santa Cruz County, told me the bill would not change the boundary between San Mateo and Santa Cruz counties and that you had no disposition to make a change against my wishes.

You know I always had and did then treat you as if you were a gentleman, and did not insist upon seeing the bill, after hearing your statement. You also know that it would have been impossible for the bill you introduced to have passed had the Legislature or those interested been advised of its purpose to despoil a neighboring county of a portion of her territory, without the consent of the people, or their representative.

I presume you, like most men, desire to bear the reputation of honesty, but in this transaction you must admit, that *prima facie*, the evidence is against you. Now what I expect of you is that you answer this letter as soon as possible, in such manner as best suits you. Of course all that is not answered I will take as admitted, and govern myself accordingly.

Yours, &c.,

B. H. Miles.

Red Wood City, June 10, 1857.

Mr. B. H. Miles,—Sir: Yours of the 1st inst. is before me. I am somewhat astonished at the language you use, sir, and should not reply to your letter, in the spirit in which I am about to, was I not prepared to make great allowances for the hasty language in consequence of the astonishment you must feel, in learning the line between Santa Cruz and San Mateo had been changed without your knowledge. Yet, sir, you were no more surprised than myself. Nor are you more innocent of any "fraudulent intention." The officers of this county will tell you that when it was first asserted that the line as described in the bill of last session, would change the line between Santa Cruz, and San Mateo, I not only expressed surprise, but emphatically told them, that I had not intended to change it, and also, that I had told you in all confidence, and sincerity, that it would not change it, and expressed regret on these accounts. We did desire to have annexed to this county a portion of Santa Cruz and also a portion of Santa Clara, but when we found that you and Messrs. Quimby and Palmer would oppose us, we gave up all hope of getting it during the session, and were not disposed to jeopardize the bill by attempting to get it. Though I then thought, and still think, that the territory that we asked for ought to be in this county, and that a large majority of the people resident upon it desire to come into San Mateo. But, sir, had I known this to be the case it would not, nor would any other consideration, have tempted me to attempt clandestinely to obtain it. If you can calm your excitement a little, sir, I think I can make it plain to you, how this has occurred, and that I have not intentionally (at least) robbed Santa Cruz County. The language used in establishing the old boundary was as you quoted it viz: the middle of the San Francisco Creek, etc. This creek was found to have three branches, the general course of two of which is north of west, the other is nearer west—perhaps a little south of it, and embracing between it and the middle branch a small territory of perhaps eight or ten square miles, but at the same point, at farthest not half a mile distant. I have never been on the ground myself, but inquired of two or three, who claimed to be well acquainted, who told me the branches headed almost together, besides I saw by a map hanging in the Assembly Chamber, (I think Wheeler's Map of San Francisco County,) that they were so laid down, and so took it must be the

case. I learned that this little territory lying between these two branches was sometimes claimed by Santa Clara, and always by us, and as I had determined to so word the act, that there could not any longer be any doubt in the premises, I explained the matter to Messrs. Quimby and Palmer, and told them that I should insist upon making that (the southern boundary) the boundary, to which they readily assented. Whether this branch was actually the line by the survey or not, before, I do not know, or whether the bill of last session does really change the line, I do not know, nor am I by any means entirely convinced of it. As to whether San Mateo, will be disposed to relinquish the territory back to Santa Cruz, in case she has gained it as is now reported, why, of course, I could advance only an individual opinion, but suppose it will depend much on the wishes of the people living on it, and as they almost all desire to be in this county it is morally certain that she will not only desire to but will retain it. I think you may console yourself with the reflection, if San Mateo had not obtained the territory the last session, she would the next, or that if she did not the last she will next. I trust you will at once be convinced of the truth of the explanations herein made, and be disposed to retract the charges in the article which you say you endorse. You will excuse the haste of this—as it is a very busy time with me.

Respectfully, &c.,

T. G. Phelps.

Watsonville, June 18th, 1857.

T. G. Phelps—Dear Sir:—Your favor of June 1st is at hand. I am willing to admit your disclaimer of an intention to clandestinely despoil Santa Cruz County of a portion of her territory, and am perhaps more anxious than yourself to assure myself, and the people concerned, that your bill has not done it. You say the people most interested are generally in favor of it. The best information I can get, leads to a different conclusion. Whatever may be done hereafter I am not at this time responsible for, but I do not wish interested parties by making exaggerated statements to make me appear as an unfaithful sentinel; I therefore am desirous of placing this matter in a true light before the people of this county which I think should be done in justice to myself

as well as in vindication of my course. With your permission I will publish the correspondence. I am free to acknowledge my first communication was not couched in appropriate language. But you undoubtedly appreciate the use that designing parties make of such matters, and will I hope, excuse whatever I have said which is calculated to produce unpleasant feelings.

Your Respectfully,

B. H. Miles.

San Mateo, June 28, 1857.

B. H. Miles,—Dear Sir:—Yours of June 18, containing a request that the correspondence that has passed between us be published, is received. If you desire to publish it I will interpose no objections though did not suppose when I wrote the letter, that such a request would be made, or I should have taken more pains in writing it.

Respectfully, &c.,

T. G. Phelps.

(The foregoing letters published in the *Pacific Sentinel* of Santa Cruz, July 11, 1857).

The *Sentinel* in commenting upon the above, says:

"But Mr. Phelps has got more than he took the chances for; he did not mean to take the chances of getting so much—he supposed that the two branches had their sources near each other, at furthest not half a mile distant. We hope he does not intend to urge that as an excuse for deceiving or taking the chances of deceiving Mr. Miles—by misrepresentations so far as that half-mile was concerned, the only point that could be sustained by such arguments is that he ought not to be censured for taking a half-mile, because when he did it he unintentionally got six times as much—he will find it hard to satisfy the people of this county, that he did not intend to get the whole Pescadero precinct.

"Mr. P. says that in that portion of our county cut off by San Mateo, that the people almost all desire to be in that county. If such was the case we would have no particular objections, if their desire were honestly and openly expressed and manfully accomplished, but we are assured that such is not the fact. Our assessor who has seen every person in that section of country and conversed with them upon the subject, informs us that he only found

two who did not manifest the most decided hostility to their connection with that county. But Mr. P. says that the people there almost all desire to be in that county, and it is most certain that San Mateo will not only desire it but will retain it. This is indeed a very honorable, high-minded position for the county of San Mateo or Mr. P. to take. This is the principle—Santa Cruz owns a tract of country, by an unintentional mistake it is transferred to San Mateo—Santa Cruz demands a retransfer of her property. But, says the county of San Mateo, we never got it rightfully, it was unintentional, it was all a mistake, yet as we have got it, we will consult the tenants and if they would sooner have us for landlords, then you can whistle. For our own part we shall be happy to learn that in this Mr. P. is again mistaken, and that such is not the feeling or wishes of his constituency."

The schools of Santa Cruz of half a century ago presented quite a different picture than do those of today. From an institution that graduated a very few students in several years to one whose prolific output today is recognized as one of the state's big assets, is a worthy stride. In 1857 a new public school was in operation where youthful minds went through a process of learning. From the *Sentinel* of October 24, 1857, we read:

"Among the improvements of Santa Cruz we notice the Public School edifice as one of the first. We now have one of the finest Public School buildings outside of San Francisco. It is fifty feet in length, thirty-three feet in width, and fifteen feet in height in the clear, and good hard finish, with a black-board thirty-six feet long and six feet wide, good desks for the accommodation of one hundred pupils, two platforms and a desk on each for the accommodation of teachers, and ante-rooms, designed for the double purpose of stove or warming rooms and pupils' wardrobes.

"* * * Not only were the comfort and convenience of the children consulted, but great taste and neatness characterize the building both inside and out, with one exception—the girders thro' the center of the room. It has a beautiful belfry and one of the finest toned bells we ever heard, and its *tintinnabulation* greets the ears of our citizens, regularly three times a day, and our children ascend the 'hill of science,' and in her temple are taught to 'tread the way of knowledge.' "

There was not at that time, however, a department for higher learning.

The money spent upon the children for educational purposes was, as is shown by the following account taken from the *Sentinel* in 1862, proportionately very small:

"Children in Santa Cruz and Monterey counties. According to the last census there are in Santa Cruz County 1,312 children between four and sixteen years of age. Based upon this, the semi-annual apportionment of the State School Fund will amount to $656. Monterey County has 1,491 children, and is entitled to $745."

Although the need of education was realized by many at that early date, many others thought education was not worth the price. One man, signing himself "Old Fogy," wrote the following to the *Sentinel* in 1880:

"Under its present management the Santa Cruz High School has graduated eleven pupils in five years, and estimating its cost at $100 per month, which is a very low estimate, it has cost the district $500 for each pupil graduated. It now behooves us to ask, does it pay? Have our schools, under the present management, been a success? * * * I think we have been paying very dear for our gilt-edged whistle, and the sooner we abolish the high school and become more practical, the better it will be for all concerned."

On December 17th of the same year, the school appeared to boom, graduating three students at that time! The account of the exercises is entertaining to us now, in view of the facts existing today—as today's facts may be amusing to the people of succeeding ages.

"The High School of Santa Cruz," ran the story, "graduated three pupils December 17th, 1880, Miss Ida Miller, Miss Irene Hill and Miss Vina McLaughlin. The exercises were held at the Opera House, in the evening. The room was densely crowded, notwithstanding the disagreeable weather. The essays of the young ladies were very creditable. There were many passages of remarkable brilliancy." The three graduating misses gave readings, respectively, on the subjects, "Trifles," "Longings," and "Home Happiness." The *Sentinel*, in concluding the story with its never failing philosophy, said, "Notwithstanding some adverse circumstances during the past year, that every one familiar with our schools understands, there are today no better schools in the State. The excellence of teaching cannot altogether be measured

by the number of promotions and graduations. The whole line of work must be considered."

Turning again to Harrison's History, we see that by 1892 the number of school districts in the county were fifty-four. No better indication of the growth and prosperity was required to be shown than by the increase of schoolhouses. Scattered everywhere, in the valley, on the mountain top, in the cañons, are to be found schoolhouses, well furnished with all the modern accessories for teaching the young idea, and with a corps of teachers that are a credit to any community. For several years the district school was in vogue. The teacher was selected by the trustees, who generally turned over the examination of the capabilities of the teacher to some one more learned than themselves. Boards of education were an unknown quantity. If the teacher could hold his own with the pupils, he was considered fitted for the position.

From 1880 to 1892 the county of Santa Cruz made great strides. In 1887 a land boom struck several counties, Santa Cruz among the rest. While in other places the boom was kept up by the aid of brass bands and excursions, and a sort of land gamble was inaugurated, in this county the market for real estate became active, but no undue excitement was manifested. Several tracts were thrown on the market and sold off for town lots, which have since been built on, and no reaction or bad effects have been felt; on the contrary, real estate has kept steadily up to good prices. Choice building sites are in demand at all times, and handsome profits have been realized by dealers in real estate.

In Pajaro Valley the erection of Claus Spreckles' beet sugar factory gave quite an impetus to the town of Watsonville, and advertised the valley all over the world.

Probably more material progress was made in the late years of the Nineteenth Century than in the twenty previous years. Gas and electric lights were installed; schools and churches were built; railways nosed through the mountains into the heart of the county; and progress was manifest at every hand. But, like Monterey County, Santa Cruz has had its setback. In 1894 a terrible fire occurred, destroying the courthouse and spreading to the buildings on the opposite side of the street, wiping out structures as far as the Simpson block on Pacific Avenue. Thus a new courthouse had to be built at considerable expense. In 1906 an earth-

quake (a trailer of the one that wrought such great damage to the city of San Francisco) gave Santa Cruz a severe shaking, snapping the tower of the courthouse and sending it tumbling through the supervisors' chambers much to the consternation of the city officials. Landslides also occurred in various parts of the county. The Hinckley Gulch Mill and cabins were buried from sight and nine people were killed. Two people were killed above Boulder Creek. A tunnel of the Southern Pacific Railroad (that of the narrow gauge railroad through the mountains between Glenwood and Laurel) caved in and blocked travel for three years. However, this latter disaster had what was perhaps a good effect; for a broad gauge railroad was constructed and a change was made by a short cut from Mayfield to Los Gatos, reducing the travel-time to San Francisco very materially.

In this same year, on June 5, the casino, plunge, swimming bath, and restaurant were razed by fire. This disaster occurred just as the summer season had swung into its full stride. But so as not to discommode the many tourists who had come to enjoy the accommodations of this famed place, a large canvas tent was put up for temporary use—for use until a new, bigger and better casino could be built. Under this "canvas top," however, the Republican state convention was held that nominated Governor Gillette. The Grand Lodge of the Odd Fellows also convened here the same year.

The new casino has been the gathering place of hosts of pleasure-seekers and has achieved all the fame of its predecessor. When it was built, enlargements over the old casino were made. Additional features were installed, such as a scenic railway, which is in operation during the summer months, and other attractions were added.

In 1857 the *Sentinel* ran an editorial which contrasted the earlier Santa Cruz with the Santa Cruz of '57, showing the booster's spirit and the optimism felt for the town's future. The editorial ran:

"Not until 1845 were there any American families in Santa Cruz. The first protestant religious service was conducted by A. A. H., in 1847. The first private school was taught by Mrs. C.— in 1848. The first school assuming a public aspect was commenced in the latter part of 1850. Though several families settled in and about town, but little was done either in the establish-

ment of a town or in agricultural pursuits till 1852-53. Since then the town has steadily but permanently increased.

"It has all the facilities at present for a large and important town. It has more resources for growth and permanency than any town south of the Bay of San Francisco, at least till we go far into the 'low country,' and then we doubt whether one can there be found possessing all the advantages of Santa Cruz. True, it has some disadvantages, and so has every town; but when we consider that it is really only about four years old, we think it will compare favorably with any town of its age in the state, considering it as an 'agricultural town.' Though we may here say that its resources are not altogether of an agricultural character, as we hope to show at no very distant period, when we shall speak more fully as to the resources of the county."

And the *News* ran the following in 1859:

"Singular as it may seem," reported the *News* on October 26 of the above year, "nearly the whole county is 'taken up' by actual settlers, and way up in the mountains, no matter what direction you travel, where it seems that the foot of white men had hardly pressed the earth, you see thousands of acres substantially fenced in by better fences than are to be seen anywhere in the Sacramento Valley.

"Twenty miles distant from Santa Cruz is 'Watsonville,' a flourishing town of some 1,500 inhabitants, supported entirely by the surrounding agriculturists. It is in the center of what is called Pajaro Valley, (pronounced Pa-thro) one of the richest spots in California—one of the occupants informing me that from ten acres of land, he this year received eight hundred bushels of wheat. I don't think this can be beat."

In late years the town of Santa Cruz has grown until its population has reached over 15,000. New and beautiful buildings have been erected. Thousands of tourists have made it a regular port of call during the winter and summer months, taking advantage of its superb climate and its popular bathing beach. In every respect the city has forged ahead, bringing prosperity to its inhabitants and attracting tourists and home-seekers from all parts of the country.

Not only has Santa Cruz improved from a material standpoint but from its mental attitude as well, as evidenced by the Beauty

Pageants that have helped to increase the fame of the Emerald City in the Gem County.

In the old Spanish days, olive skinned beauties were born in Santa Cruz and Monterey. The senoritas were famed for their clear complexions, their flashing eyes that told so much or so little, and their pearly teeth. Lithesome figures whirled to the clicking of castanets and the twanging of guitar or mandolin. A bit of ankle peeped from beneath the flowing skirts, and men were led to realize that in California not the sunshine alone was perfect. The fame of California's women, of their beauty of face and of figure, is constantly gaining wider circulation—and well it might. The age of prudery has crumbled like sand; today brings a greater freedom of press and thinking than ever before in America, and beautiful women can be admired openly.

It was left to enterprising Santa Cruz to make the most of this condition. Realizing that her share of beautiful women was on a par—if not actually greater—than that of other parts of the union—she held, in the summer of 1924—her first "Beauty Contest," or "Beauty Pageant." It brought her so much publicity—so much to make her internationally known—that she has laid plans for a yearly repetition of it.

Over fifty prominent newspapers in the state held elimination contests for beautiful women. The winner was sent to Santa Cruz for the grand finals—and the home town paper naturally made the most of it—spreading in banner headlines the news of, and incidentally the beauties and advantages to be found in Santa Cruz! The winner of the grand finals (given the name of Miss California) was sent to Atlantic City to compete in the beauty contest there for the entire United States. It was a Miss Raye Lanphier who represented California in 1924. She took the second prize over the United States for her widely-acclaimed beauty, and brought to California, and incidentally to Santa Cruz, an enormous amount of publicity. People in the east who perhaps had never heard of this seacoast town, now "sat up and took notice." And when they come to California—as they eventually will—they will in all likelihood want to see the town that has the contest.

What the Rodeo is to Salinas, and the Serra Pilgrimage is to Monterey, and the Blossom Festival is to San Jose, and Raisin Day is to Fresno, the Beauty Pageant is to Santa Cruz. It is as

interesting as it is valuable, and a detailed account of it will not be amiss.

First of all, the town was bedecked in flags and a world of bunting. Colors—myriads of colors—floated over the main thoroughfare to the Casino at the waterfront. Along this line parades were held that featured the various beauty contestants. But this was simply "local color" for the "real doin's." Then, on two evenings prior to the big event, or the selection of the woman to portray "Miss California," entertainments were held in the city's leading playhouse. Here famous orchestras were present, as were celebrities of stage and screen, and also the contestants, each of whom was introduced to the City of Santa Cruz.

One June 5th a Grand Reception was held by "Miss Santa Cruz," assisted by Maids of Honor and fifty Knights of the Garter, at the Beauty Pavilion. Later a Bathing Girl Revue was held on the beach, witnessed by between twenty and twenty-five thousand people. The procession to the stand was led by fourteen tiny flower girls, who showered roses before the Bathing Beauties as they took their places on the reviewing stand. Father Neptune and his assistants followed the flower girls.

The bathing girls were led by Miss Santa Cruz, represented by Miss Mary Black, and the entire line of comely misses passed in review before the critical judges, creating, it is said, a bustle and stir throughout the crowd.

After the revue the girls were "shot" by a barrage of movie cameras, which literally ground out miles of film to be shown in every hamlet of the United States—and in almost every hamlet Santa Cruz, therefore, appeared.

"Watsonville," reported the *Sentinel*, "put over a splendid piece of work, by sending over a truck load of apples, and a bevy of pretty girls to distribute them. The boxes were stacked on the boardwalk, and every person who could get near was given an apple. It was hard to judge which was the more popular, the apples or the girls, for both were leaders in their particular classes.

"Watsonville deserves great credit for her support of the whole pageant. Almost one-half of the theatre was sold to the Watsonville Exchange Club Thursday evening, and there was another delegation on hand the next evening. Everything possible has been done by our sister city to make the affair a success."

Although Miss Black, as Miss Santa Cruz, did not take first place among the contestants, she "did her town proud," as the saying goes. Miss Lanphier, of Alameda, took highest honors, and was the fortunate girl to be sent back to Atlantic City, where she boosted California with her pleasant smile and incidentally helped Santa Cruz.

CHAPTER XXXVI

POINTS OF INTEREST IN SANTA CRUZ CITY

Santa Cruz, the beautiful, is progressive, as has been said. It now no longer has the atmosphere of the days that provoked the Spaniards to slumber through long indolent days and nights. The city has changed completely. Very seldom is the horse and buggy seen upon its streets, but instead automobiles—from the "flivver" to the gorgeously upholstered, glistening gasoline coach. The middle class and the super-well-to-do come here to spend their vacations, and an ambitious citizenry are transforming Santa Cruz into a bustling town of business. Under "Points of Interest" we shall describe the town as it existed in the nineteenth century, contrasting it with the Santa Cruz of today. For much of the information we are indebted to Elliott's History of 1879.

The county seat, Santa Cruz, had a population in '79 of some 6,000 as intelligent and enterprising people as any in the state. Even then, it will be seen, the drug of indolence had been banished. The city looked down upon the Bay of Monterey, and out upon the Pacific Ocean. A view from the higher portions of the town must have been familiar to the eyes of the earliest navigators. The business portion of the town lies in a basin completely shut in by the bluffs and surrounding hills, so as to be sheltered from the cold ocean breezes and the "northers" that are so trying in other portions of the state, while the bluffs give ample space for those who like the invigorating breezes and magnificent panorama laid out before them.

The scenery, then as now, was magnificent. Whether one passed along the lofty cliffs striking the sea, with the never-resting waves of the broad Pacific dashing at his feet, scaled the mountain tops, whose seared and rocky sides had for ages withstood the fierce onslaughts of the elements, or wandered through the narrow valleys, where gurgling streams and purling brooks made softest music to the listening ear, there was to be found a

grandeur and sublimity to awe the senses. There was beauty everywhere, and weeks could be spent in visiting and inspecting the many places of interest within a few miles of the town.

A beautiful beach stretched out on the water front, where to walk or drive, gather moss and shells, or bathe in the roaring surf, was a pleasant and invigorating exercise. As a "watering place," Santa Cruz was second to none, and yearly thousands of tourists from all parts of the world gathered there to enjoy the healthful climate and find recreation in hunting and fishing.

There were a number of pretty places in and around Santa Cruz, and its people were hospitable, its hotels not exhorbitant in price, and it was well worth a visit from all pleasure-seekers.

The attractions for health and pleasure seekers in Santa Cruz and vicinity were unequaled in any other part of the world. Its chaotic gorges, lovely valleys, towering gigantic redwoods, redolent of resinous balsam, and the fragrant world-renowned bay tree, whose leaves constantly distilled their camphorated aromatic fragrance, stretches of voluptuous landscape that invited one to repose, sand and pebbly beaches on which the swelling surf chanted its perpetual and mighty refrain, incomparable picnic groves furnished the tourist continual pleasure and amusement, while interesting historic legends filled each vacant hour with unflagging interest.

Within a radius of eight miles there were at least three mineral springs, whose waters had secured a wide celebrity for their medicinal properties. One of them, the Aptos, iron and magnesia spring, being a specific for all bladder and kidney diseases, had a powerful cathartic and tonic effect combined. The others were magnetic in their properties and tonic principally.

The bathing season lasted from May 1st to September. Bathing facilities had been largely increased during the preceding year by the erection of a magnificent bathing house by Mr. Wheaton.

The size of the building was 40x100 feet, of two stories, and 30 feet high. There were 100 separate bath-rooms, with all the improvements modern to that day. One of the main features of the building on the lower floor, was the two swimming or plunge baths, one for ladies, the other for gentlemen, separated from each other by a partition, the size being each 14x25 feet, with a depth of from two to seven feet, being heated by steam. The bath-rooms were neatly furnished, and said to be superior in their

appointments to any in the state. The upper floor contained a refreshment saloon, where at a small cost could be obtained any of the "substantials," adjoining which was a ladies' dressing room. Next to this was a large dance hall, sixty by forty, well lighted by windows on either side, and well ventilated, the ceiling being sixteen feet high. Adjoining this hall was a bar-room and men's hat and dressing room. Two broad covered verandas ran the entire length of the building. Polite attendants were always on hand to attend the wants of its patrons.

The courthouse was roomy, made a fine appearance in that day, was surmounted by a dome, and was entirely occupied by court and county offices. It was situated in the center of the city and was surrounded by a neat fence and well kept lawn.

Near the courthouse was the City Hall building, two stories high, and occupied by the various city departments. There were also an engine house and fire-fighting equipment. The Opera House was "an extra fine one," affording ample room in those days for the best theatrical companies or lecturers.

The Bank of Santa Cruz County and the Bank of Savings and Loan both occupied one building on Pacific Avenue, and the business of both was managed by one set of officers.

Hotels in that day were considered modern—"quite up to snuff"—if they were constructed of either brick or wood. There were a number of them that housed many gorgeous social events and accommodated the weary traveler.

The city was then supplied with "pure mountain creek water" by companies chartered for that purpose. Another company furnished a "good quality of gas."

There were two separate lines of street cars which carried passengers between the city proper and the beaches, running every few minutes.

In the matter of churches, the town had houses of several denominations.

The Holy Cross School was situated but a short distance from Monterey Bay, with large buildings and beautiful grounds on a commanding eminence overlooking the entire city and across the Bay to Monterey City, twenty-five miles distant.

The Roman Catholic Church in 1892 was in charge of Rev. Mr. Adam, "an able young minister." This church, built after the complete ruin of the old Mission Church, was dedicated on

the Fourth of July, 1858, by Bishop Amat. The old Mission Church itself had long been in a state of ruin. It had stood from 1794 to 1856, when, one day, while the officiating priest was saying mass, part of it fell. Only a few persons were present at the time, and none was hurt, but they all had a narrow escape. Few traces of the old adobe structure remained even to the days of '92—even the double row of beautiful willows, once forming the fence of the old Mission garden, had been destroyed in deference to the wants and requirements of the young and growing city.

The Methodist Episcopal Church, the earliest protestant church in Monterey, had in 1892 one of the largest memberships of all the churches.

On March 14, 1852, a church of the Congregational order was founded in Santa Cruz. At that date its membership was but nine. But, in the shifting of population, the members of this little church were scattered, and it ceased to exist. After five years, in September, 1857, another church was organized and a house of worship was built. This was done under the ministry of the late Rev. J. S. Zelie. The cost of the work was something over three thousand dollars. The house, as originally built, would hold an audience of about two hundred and fifty. In 1872, it was enlarged to about double its first size and could then accommodate an assembly of five hundred persons.

The First Baptist Church was organized in 1858. It was afterwards somewhat broken up by removals of members, but was reorganized, January 3, 1867, with a membership of twelve persons. In February, 1867, the church resolved to erect a house of worship. They had been holding their meetings in the courthouse, and in Temperance Hall. J. H. Guild gave the lot, and the cost of the house was $2,500.

The first services held, in anticipation of the establishment of the Episcopal Church, were on the 11th day of May, 1862, Rev. Dr. J. L. Ver Mehr officiating. The vestry was formed, and the church took the name of the Calvary Church, March 27, 1864. The corner-stone of the church edifice was laid June 29, 1864. The large and beautiful lot on which it stood was given by Mrs. Eliza C. Boston, wife of Joseph Boston. The beautiful building was completed at a cost of $5,000, and was opened for service on Easter Sunday, April 16, 1865, Rev. C. F. Loop officiating. The

church was consecrated on the 26th of October, 1868, Right Rev. Bishop Kip, Rev. Mr. Brewer, and Rev. Mr. Loop officiating.

In the fall of 1866 the Unity Church was organized through the efforts of Rev. Charles G. Ames. It prospered so well that the work of erecting a church edifice was undertaken in 1867. Its estimated cost was to be $7,000, but as is usual in building, that sum was somewhat exceeded.

Fraternal organizations—the Odd Fellows, Masons, and others—were at an early date in evidence, helping the individual, and therefore the community—in many ways.

J. F. Simpson's flour mill occupied a prominent corner near the St. Charles Hotel, in the center of the business part of the city. It was established in 1878. The mill had a capacity of about 400 sacks of flour per day, and was run by steam power.

The Santa Cruz Brewery was situated in the eastern part of the city. It was a two-story building, erected in 1871, and was 100 by 40 feet. Attached to the brewery was a large pleasure garden fitted up with swings and arbors and filled with flowers and trees.

Santa Cruz had more neat and pleasant residences than almost any other place in the State. Some were elegant mansions, like those of Hon. F. A. Hihn, S. J. Lynch and countless others. All, both cottage and mansion, were cozy, neat, quiet homes, with yards and flowers, and a home-like appearance. The city had "the look of a New England village," embowered in trees. The first settlers built in memory of the old ones left behind them. To them was due, in a large measure the beauty of the town, as by their thoughtfulness, trees were planted along the streets, and their grateful shade and fine foliage added a charm, as well as value, to the surroundings—and to this day the same conditions exist.

The manufacture of gun powder was for many years the foremost industry of Santa Cruz County. Following the discovery of gold, powder was in great demand, and the powder works established on the San Lorenzo River about three miles above the city of Santa Cruz gained a tremendous impetus in the ensuing years. It was in 1861 that the California Powder Works was founded. Therefore, all the trumps were in the hands of the promoters; there was a good harbor at hand, the business center was but a short distance, and material was abundant.

Up to the year of 1861 Eastern manufacturers, intent upon gain, and without interest in this new mining region, had parcelled out the California trade, and combined to extort prices sometimes as high as $13 a keg, and that too for powder impaired in strength by a six months' sea voyage.

It having become evident that this severe monopoly retarded the development of local mines and discouraged public improvements, some gentlemen identified with the state, united under the lead of Captain John H. Baird, of San Francisco, to erect powder works upon our own soil, to be operated in the interest of California.

Such was the origin of the California Powder Works.

The Works, comprising 21 powder mills, 10 shops, 6 magazines and stores, and 35 other buildings, were, as has been said, within easy reach of the city. Water, for power, was taken from the river a mile above the Works and conveyed to the Works through a tunnel pierced in a spur of the mountain. The whole fall of two miles, amounting to 80 feet vertical, was utilized; and in the summer season all the water of the river was diverted through the tunnel.

This natural motor determined the site of the works, although the aforesaid recommendations also played a part. The San Lorenzo basin abounded with choice woods for charcoal, and with timber for construction, for fuel, and for kegs. The equable climate offered an inestimable advantage in the manufacture of powder, the finest qualities of which cannot be made at a freezing temperature.

The close proximity of the Works, and railroad connections, with their own wharf and stores at the city front, afforded cheap transportation, and while the facilities of a city were within hail, the intervening hills sheltered its inhabitants from the effects of explosions.

These signal advantages, combined perhaps at no other powder works, were supplemented, under the direction of skillful engineers, with the machinery modern to that age and with all art that was perfected.

The results were that Santa Cruz powder rescued the public from the unconscionable grasp of Eastern manufacturers, and practically drove them from every field within reach—from Alaska to Mexico; from the ocean to the Rocky Mountains; that the

vast mineral wealth of this slope had been freely developed; that stupendous railways had been driven through almost impenetrable mountains, and that while this immense service had been rendered the public, the California Powder Works had reached a pitch of prosperity unsurpassed in American industry.

Such were the points of interest of the "Yesterdays." Today the whole city is one great and dynamic point of interest. It is difficult to segregate its individual points of interest for they are innumerable. One can see the old site of the Powder Works, the site on which stood the famous Mission of Santa Cruz; one can spend many happy hours at the famous Casino on a beach that is renowned for its gaiety and ideal sea bathing; one can visit the new dam that will conserve thousands and thousands of gallons of water for the city's use; one can find pleasant hotels and up-to-date theatres. There is the public library through which one can browse for many happy hours. It was on April 14th, 1904, that the new and beautiful library building was completed. Its total cost, with furnishings, came to $20,211. This library was originally organized by a voluntary association in 1868; and in 1881 it was adopted by the city.

CHAPTER XXXVII

A DIAMOND IN THE GEM COUNTY

Watsonville, the second city of importance in Santa Cruz County, is located in the commercial center of the Pajaro Valley. It has grown rapidly in the twentieth century, and is noted for the many activities that center there. Following the account of Edward Martin, we find that, situated in one of the richest agricultural valleys of the state, Watsonville was laid out by Judge H. Watson and D. S. Gregory and derives its name from the first-named. In the same year Llewellyn Thrift and wife and Charles McDermott started a tavern and general store on Main Street about where the Hildreth block now stands, or a little below. Thrift remarked at the time "If there is ever any town it will be right thar." It started "thar," and is a good sized city today. A Mr. Phipps started a tavern about the same time on Main Street, generally designated at that time as Pajaro Street, near the site of the present Hoffman house. The architecture of that period was rather crude; the buildings were temporary shanties but served the purposes of trade and traffic for several years.

The Rancho Bolsa del Pajaro, consisting of 5,496 acres, was granted to Sebastian Rodriguez by Governor Alvarado in 1837. The city of Watsonville comprises a portion of this grant. Considerable litigation ensued between the heirs of Sebastian Rodriguez and adverse claimants to lands of the Bolsa del Pajaro. It was finally settled by a decree of the circuit court in favor of Rodriguez under whom a majority had derived title, and there have been no further law suits affecting the title of Rodriguez.

Those who had squatters' titles only were compelled to purchase or vacate.

The titles to property being settled, improvements were made and new buildings were erected. Many years elapsed, however, before any decided progress was made. The village of Watsonville was incorporated by the legislature of 1858. The first trus-

tees of the town were, B. A. Barney, president; H. Jackson, G. M. Bockius, James Waters, Joseph McCollom, Ira Mabbit, clerk; first meeting May 25, 1868.

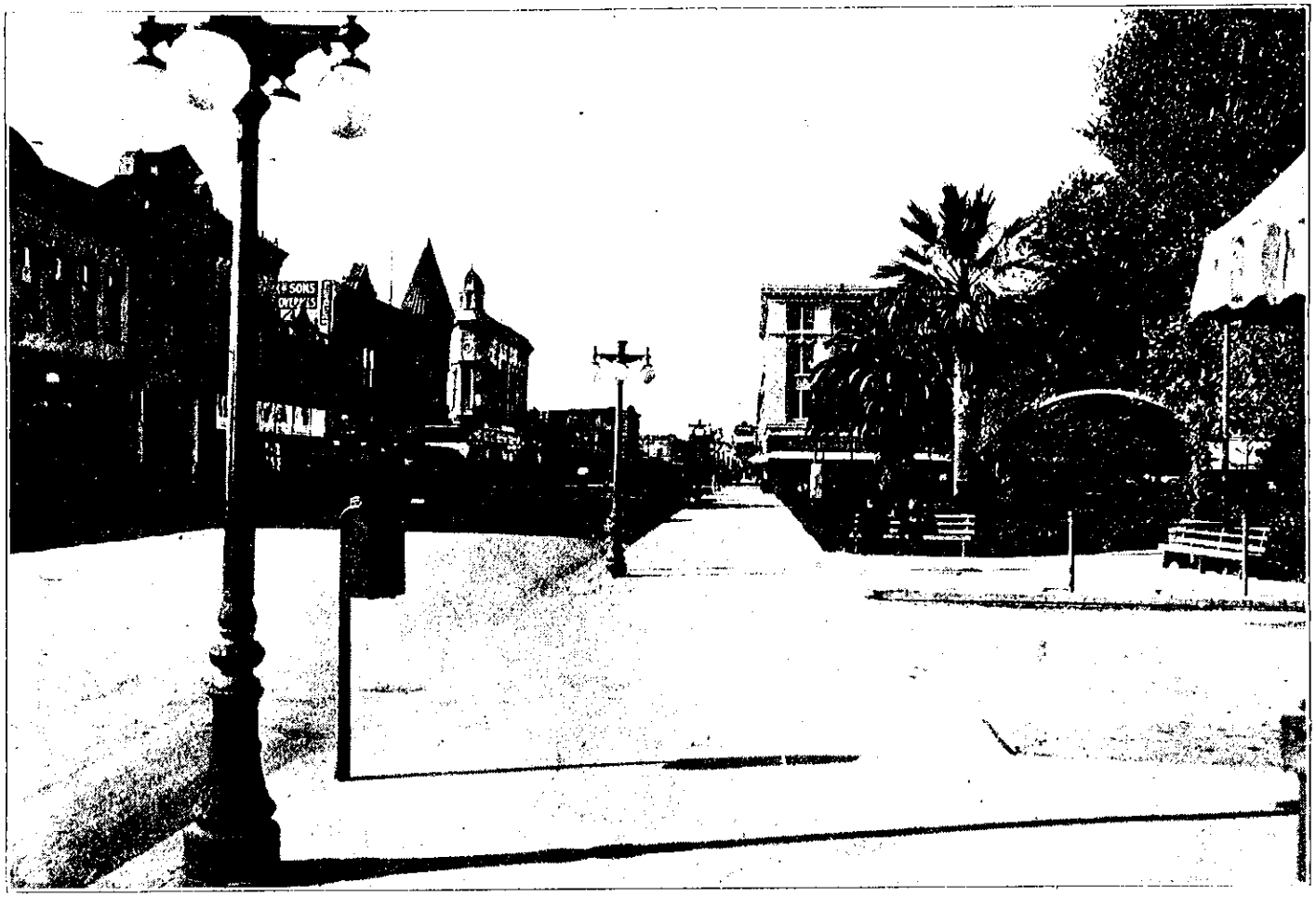
The first years of the existence of the town were rather turbulent. There was a large number of what have been lately termed "undesirable citizens." So-called vigilant associations were very much in evidence. Mob law was too much in vogue. The vengeance of the mob was generally directed toward a class that the courts could deal with and grant no favors. It is not worth while to be particular in mentioning the crimes that were committed under the name of justice.

Horse stealing was considered the highest crime, while the crime of murder was treated very lightly. In all portions of the state a similar state of affairs existed. All new countries appear to have had the same experience. There was a certain class of bullies who claimed to "run the town." They all died with their boots on. There was an impromptu duel by which the town was relieved of two characters who killed each other, both firing at the same time, ending as above. No unpleasant results followed this episode.

Watsonville, like other towns on this coast, had its ups and downs. Town property remained dormant for a number of years. At the present time the city is valued at a high figure. The transposition of Watsonville from a shanty town to that of better and modern buildings has been slow but sure. The public school buildings will compare favorably with those of any city of the same size.

The Carnegie Library was opened and dedicated in October, 1905. The building was built with funds obtained from Andrew Carnegie, who made it his business to donate funds for public libraries on proper application. The nucleus of a library was started in 1864 by the late Judge A. W. Blair, under the name of the Watsonville Library and Literary Association. Pajaro Lodge No. 90, I. O. O. F., also started a library and the books were subsequently turned over to the city library. This library is maintained by funds furnished by the city of Watsonville, raised by taxation; it has several thousand volumes, and the leading magazines and periodicals are also on file. This library is situated on Union Street, near the Plaza.

The Plaza, which for a number of years remained unnoticed



MAIN STREET, WATSONVILLE

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

and uncared for (being used at one time as a site for a traveling circus and as a place in which to keep stray dogs) is now one of the beautiful spots of the city, of which the citizens are justly proud. The work of beautifying the Plaza was inaugurated by the Native Daughters of the Golden West, El Pajaro Parlor, and now may be seen a handsome band stand and grounds beautifully ornamented with flowers and shrubbery.

It is hardly necessary to detail all the troubles incident to the early settlement of this portion of Santa Cruz County, on the numerous farms and outlying orchards; the past has been forgotten. A good deal has been written concerning the so-called romantic side of California. There was not much romance in the early days of this portion of the state. The tales of Bret Harte are read with avidity and pleasure, but as a true portrayal of California life they are a failure. The best story of early days in the mines was written by Canfield, whose death occurred recently. For a plain and truthful narrative of California life in the days of old this volume deserves a place in every library in the state. "Truth is stranger than fiction," but the latter is more sought after.

There was a bright side in the life of the settler of the early days. There was more of a community of interest and a closer feeling among them than is to be found at the present time. In times of sickness, in the hour when death entered the house, friends were numerous in offering their services, there were "Mothers of Israel" who were always on hand in attending sorrow or sickness; their services were freely given without money and without price, and they did not expect to have their pictures in the paper or to be extolled for doing a simple neighborly duty. "What is there in it" was never mentioned nor thought of.

Paul Lezere, a promoter, long since forgotten, at one time a resident of Paul's Island, in Monterey County, was the first to insist that a steamer would some day enter Elk Horn slough from the Bay of Monterey and carry freight and passengers. Paul used to visit Watsonville and advocate his scheme and endeavor to enlist supporters, but like other promoters he was ignored and laughed at. In 1860 soundings were made at the mouth of the slough and soon afterward a steamer entered and made a landing at the head of the slough and a landing was established about four miles from Watsonville. This enterprise was started by Brannan

and Co., who were the pioneers in this business. Goodall and Perkins succeeded to the business and ran a line of steamers for several years.

A railroad communication was established in 1871, the depot being at Pajaro, in Monterey County, about a mile and a half from Watsonville. Since that date the road has been extended to Monterey, Salinas and Los Angeles. A narrow-gauge railroad was opened for travel to Santa Cruz in 1876, and is now a broad-gauge road.

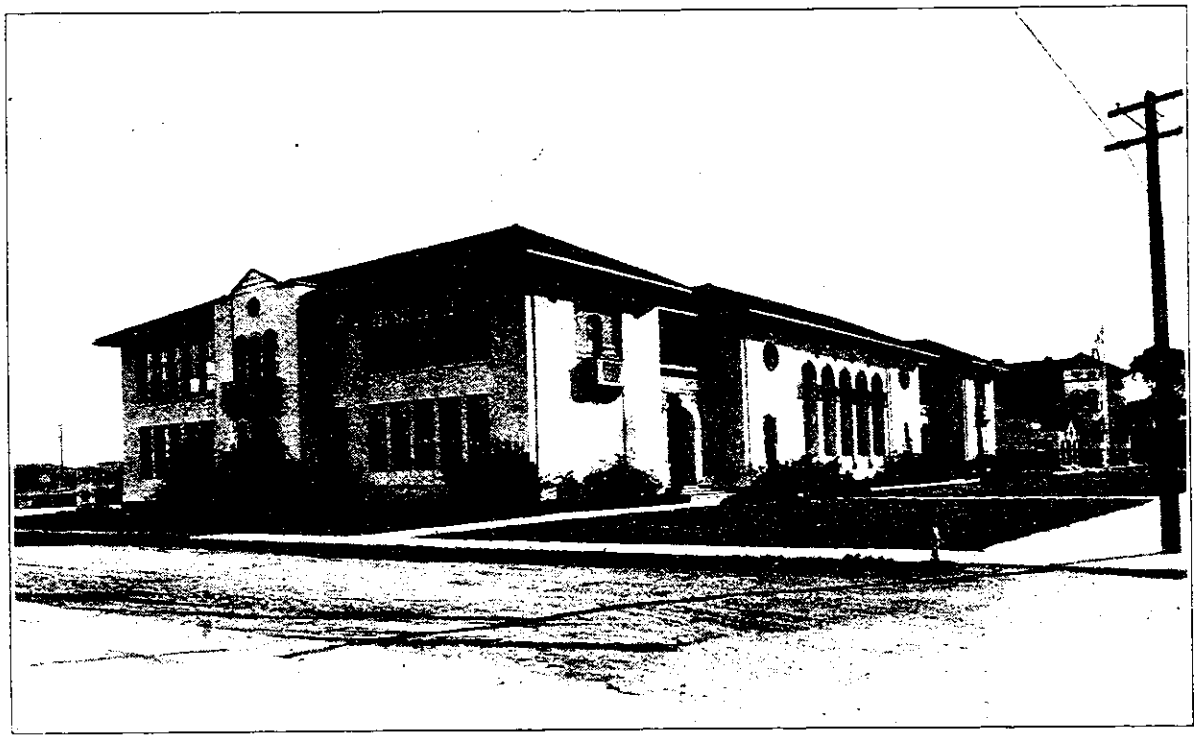
Watsonville was incorporated, first, in 1867, and then again in 1903.

Since that time the town has (to use a bromide) "boomed." This word fits the city exactly; for it has boomed in many ways. It is now a city with a population of 6,000 in the corporate limits of approximately one square mile, situated in Santa Cruz County on a perfect highway, 100 miles south of San Francisco. Including suburbs, a conservative estimate of the population is 9,000, with a tributary population, served by the Watsonville postoffice and doing business with Watsonville firms of 15,000.

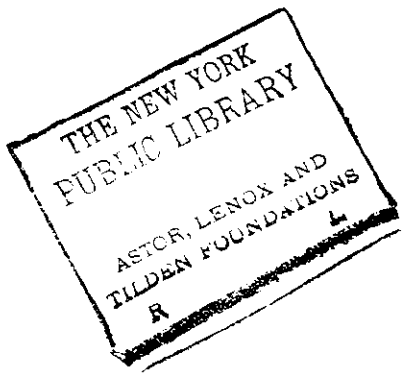
Watsonville is the agricultural hub of the Central California Coast counties. It is the largest apple and berry producing center in California. It is the third largest shipping point between San Francisco and Los Angeles.

From its humble beginnings Watsonville now has, in addition to the above, broad, paved, well lighted streets; a plaza an entire block in area, in the center of the business district, with rare trees, palms and flowers; a well equipped city playground and municipal auto campground; two beautiful theatres; seven hotels; two newspapers; a city library with over 15,000 volumes; three banks; more than four hundred business houses, the valuation of the property in the city being worth more than $3,000,000 and that of the county $21,000,000; the largest civic auditorium of any city of its size in the world. Schools, churches and fraternal societies in Watsonville are noted for their excellence and their progressiveness. The climate of Watsonville, as reported by the Chamber of Commerce, is mild in summer and winter, having an average temperature of 63 degrees and an average rainfall of 26 inches.

In 1853, when the first family orchard was set out in the Pajaro Valley, little did the planter realize to what his act would



HIGH SCHOOL, WATSONVILLE


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R

lead. In 1920 it was reported by the Watsonville *Register* that 50,000 acres of land in Pajaro Valley were under cultivation. About 17,000 acres were in apples, mainly the Newtown Pippin and Bellflower. Approximately 3,000 acres were in apricots. The remainder of the valley was devoted to strawberries and other fruits.

A very large acreage has been given over to strawberries, a crop that ranks next to apples in its value to Watsonville. It was the strawberry crop and sugar beets that supported the farmer while his apple orchard matured. Strawberries shipped from Watsonville have a reputation for quality that is undisputed. Blackberries and loganberries are of almost equal importance. The loganberry was originated in Santa Cruz County by Judge Logan. The growth of its popularity was almost immediate, and today it has a national reputation.

Aside from fruit and berries, the important crops are celery, lettuce, sugar beets, potatoes, hay, alfalfa, and sweet peas, to the culture of which large areas have been devoted.

In giving even a brief account of the resources of the valley, the poultry industry must not be overlooked. It has assumed great importance by reason of most favorable climatic conditions in and around Watsonville, where soil and an abundance of water as well, assure the year 'round growth of a plentiful supply of green feed and grains so necessary to the profitable raising of chickens. Dairying is also engaged in to a considerable extent.

In 1924, 4,000 cars of apples were shipped out of Watsonville, 519 cars of apple products (such as vinegar, dried apples, cider, etc.) 1,000 cars of lettuce (as compared with 439 cars in 1923; this industry, as may be seen, is in comparative infancy and local people are expecting great things of it in the near future); and many other products, in addition to the above named apples, lettuce and berries, were shipped out in 1924, among them being: onions, potatoes, beans, tomatoes, cauliflower, dried peas, prunes, canned fruits and fruit juices.

As an illustration of the interest and pride the city of Watsonville takes in its leading agricultural product, we may note that in 1924 the Watsonville Chamber of Commerce won the nation-wide contest of cities under 100,000 population in publicity work in the Apple Annual celebration. The forms of publicity utilized in the contest which brought a handsome silver trophy

to the city, were news items, paid advertisements, posters and banners, displays in store windows, banks, chambers of commerce, special apple talks before civic organizations, apple stunts in theatres, prize essays in schools, apple talks broadcasted from wireless stations, proclamations from public officials, use of apple stickers on all mailings, liberal distribution of apple recipe books, and scores of other methods.

Such is Watsonville and its progress. One other point is its flowers, both wild and cultivated, which blanket nearly every part of the landscape that is not bearing fruit trees or vegetables. The annual Flower Show given by the Watsonville Woman's Club is a source of keen pleasure to the lovers of nature.

The Nineteen-Mile Valley View Drive—covering part of the fruit and farming section of Pajaro Valley—is one of Watsonville's most important points of interest, for along this drive every ranch and farm house has, in itself, a significant interest.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

A JAUNT THROUGHOUT THE COUNTY

Other sections of Santa Cruz County, account taken from that of W. C. Morrow in Harrison's History, of 1892, show the great possibilities for the future. The smaller towns, now in much the same condition as when written of by Morrow, will come into their just deserts at an early date, it is predicted by men noted for their sagacity in matters of civic progress. Watsonville, like Santa Cruz, has developed rapidly in recent years. We shall deal with this city in forthcoming pages.

Capitola, the Gem of the Bay of Monterey, is a summer resort in a delightful nook about four miles from Santa Cruz, in a protected cove, where the Soquel River empties into the bay. It was established in 1876 by Mr. Hihn, who owned the property, and it has since steadily grown, until today it is one of the most popular seaside resorts in California. Its advantageous features must be seen to be fully appreciated. Its comparative freedom from fogs, and the entire absence of harsh winds, its location near the mountains and the foothills overlooking the town, a grand perspective view of Loma Prieta's black peak rising in the distance, the opportunity for boating and fishing on Soquel Creek, the splendid facilities and opportunities for salt-water fishing in the bay, combine to furnish the greatest possible number of natural advantages.

Nature has been bountiful and generous, and her attractive features have been enhanced by the improvements that have been made here during the past few years. Numerous cottages have been constructed, ranging in value from a few hundred to $8,000 each, and during the summer season not less than two thousand people, bidding adieu to the busy turmoil of the cities and the heated atmosphere of the interior counties, here find surcease of toil and freedom from the elevated temperature which prevails during a part of the summer months in much of the interior of

the state. The town is sewered, and every precaution has been taken to make it cleanly and healthful. It is supplied with pure mountain water. The bathing beach is one of the best in the state.

One has but to pass through here on the train in the months of July or August to realize the fact that it is a resort of considerable importance, as he will perceive the depot and adjacent grounds thronged with people. To good-looking bachelors the fact should be made clear that here during the summer season there is usually a great preponderance of the feminine element.

The Big Basin.

California justly prides herself, says F. L. Clarke, upon the diversified beauty and grandeur of her scenery. There is within her borders the savage wildness and weird solemnity of the rugged ranges of the Sierras, the softer picturesqueness of the Coast Range, the breezy, undulating foothills, against which break the blue waters of the Pacific; there are the peaceful, broadspreading plains of the Sacramento and San Joaquin valleys, and the slumbrous stretches of tropic plains of the South.

California can boast, too, of holding within her borders such great wonders of nature as the Yosemite Valley, the Geysers, the Mammoth Tree Groves of Mariposa, the magnificent Bay of San Francisco, and many another point of interest only requiring to be known to be famous.

Amongst the latter is the "Big Basin" region, in the northern part of Santa Cruz County. There is to be found every natural feature needed to make a grand park. Beautiful mountain streams flow through the region, breaking here into miniature cascades, rapids, and falls, there spreading out in quiet, mirror-like pools, winding through the forest in glassy stillness, or noisily rippling over beds of rock, or lost, now and again, under huge drifts of tree trunks, branches, and gnarled roots, the accumulation of years of growth and decay.

The magnificent forest through which these streams find their way is made up of splendid redwoods (the *Sequoia sempervirens* of the coast), standing singly and in groups, their massive trunks, three hundred feet in height, towering above oaks, madronas, and pines, bearing their tufted branches high into the pure blue sky.

There are in the limits of the Big Basin thousands of these superb trees, rivaling in size those found elsewhere in the State, and representing a species that is rapidly becoming extinct. They have been spared so far simply because the millmen have not yet cut their way to them. The basin itself is separated on the east from the San Lorenzo and Boulder Creek valleys—both of which are being rapidly deforested—by an outlying ridge running southerly from the range bounding the county on the northeast. This ridge also cuts it off from the Pescadero Valley, which is now being looked into by the lumbermen and speculators. The area of the basin is about two thousand acres, every portion of which is full of beauty. It is easily reached from Boulder Creek on the north and Waddell Creek on the south, and has always been celebrated as the finest fishing and hunting ground in the coast ranges. By far the largest part of the area is owned by the Pescadero Lumber Company, who are holding it until the time comes when the great trees can be profitably sold as lumber.

As it is today, it is simply perfect as a park. Nothing need be done to it save to construct roads through it, and so open it to visitors. The cost of making it accessible to vehicles and the maintenance of the improvements need not be great. In fact, the more nearly it is kept in its present wild state, the better; and if nothing more can be done just now beyond the securing of it from destruction, that in itself will be a noble work.

The above, written in 1892, shows the attitude regarding the famous big trees. Fortunately the trees have since been safeguarded against lumbermen and the roads that were longed for have, to some extent, been constructed. Tourists can easily make their way through the giants of the forest and marvel over them as they would over the other equally great (but no greater) wonders of the world.

Ben Lomond.

Ben Lomond is the name of a mountain and extensive stretch of territory immediately overlooking the Pacific Ocean, lying to the northwest of the city of Santa Cruz, and southerly from that part of Santa Cruz known as the "Big Basin." On the east its base is washed by Boulder Creek and the San Lorenzo River. Its summit is some two thousand feet above the sea level, and comprises much level and comparatively level land.

The limestone and granite formations are predominant here. The canyons which furrow its sides are rugged and precipitous, and in many instances densely wooded with fir and redwood.

There are many neat and attractive homes on this plateau, the only disadvantage being their distance from Santa Cruz or other railroad shipping-point.

Boulder Creek, Ben Lomond, and Felton.

At the junction of three streams, those of the San Lorenzo River and Bear Creek on the east, and Boulder Creek on the west is the town of Boulder. Boulder Creek's great industry has been lumber. There have been several mills in its immediate neighborhood, and it is the point of shipment for a vast area of redwoods. Next to the lumber interest, the care of summer visitors—campers, fishermen, and others enjoying prolonged picnics—keeps employed a goodly number of residents.

As a pleasant place to visit and from which to go fishing, etc., Boulder Creek is hard to equal.

On the way to Boulder Creek one can stop at Ben Lomond, a town comparatively new in 1892, located under the shadow of the beautiful isolated range from which it takes its name.

Ben Lomond has gained fame as a favorite resort for tired city folk and others who are seeking a quiet resting place in the redwoods.

On the highway between the Big Trees and Boulder Creek—a most romantic drive, by the way—is the pretty town of Felton. It is a mile from the station of the same name, boasts of a comfortable, well-kept hotel, and of the general neatness of its streets and dwellings. From the town a good road leads up onto the level plateaus of Ben Lomond and so over to the coast. These three pretty towns are strung along on the San Lorenzo River, and to visit them all is a delightful summer day's jaunt.

The Big Trees.

The remarkable group of *Sequoias* known as the "Santa Cruz Big Trees" are, unlike many of the natural wonders of the world, easily reached by rail or carriage.

Perhaps the pleasantest way to visit "The Trees" is by the

road from Santa Cruz. The drive takes but a short while, the road winding through a shady forest for the most part, skirting the rapid San Lorenzo. Soon after leaving the city, it enters Powder Mill Cañon, and then, climbing the hillside, leaves the railway and follows the windings of the valley, affording many beautiful views of the river, the tunneled spurs of the range, and other bits of scenery. Finally the road winds sharply around a steep hillside, and abruptly reaches the grove.

All about stand the grand trees. The dark red, rugged shafts rise to such a height as to diminish their colossal bulk. Though some of them are in circumference so great as only to be encircled by at least a score of people joining hands in a ring about them, their great height—three hundred feet or more—gives them the appearance of grace and symmetry we generally associate with trees of lesser growth. Following the winding paths laid out through the grove, we come upon tree after tree, each having a distinct individuality that has suggested the names they bear. There stand in solemn majesty the "Generals Grant and Sherman," the stately "Daniel Webster," the group known as "Ingersoll's Cathedral" and the "Y. M. C. A.," the curious "Buhri Redwood," and the strangely beautiful "Eagle's Nest." "Idle Wild," a charming camping ground, is set about with noble trees. The "Centennial" group is a magnificent cluster, each tree being named for a revolutionary hero; and close to the hotel buildings is the "Fremont" group, the "Giant," "General Castro," the "Seven Sisters," and other fine specimens. Going southward in the grove we come to the "Chimney," the "Vats," and many other interesting trees and groups.

The walks amidst the Big Trees are delightful. In the broader, more open paths are always to be seen groups of happy picnickers, while the sequestered bypaths are ideal "lovers' walks," where, in the sweet seclusion the wild woods grant, wanders many a happy pair.

And as this is as free as air, one can enjoy a day's outing in this splendid grove, can go when he pleases, rest in the cool hotel parlors, and lounge on the pleasant veranda, without money. No more pleasant spot for a midsummer day's lounge can be found in the county; and nowhere in the State is there a more beautiful grove of California's royal tree, the redwood, or *Sequoia sempervirens.*

Highland and Skyland.

These are appropriate names of noted fruit districts in the Santa Cruz Mountains, near the Santa Clara line. The former has an elevation of from fifteen hundred to two thousand feet, commanding a view of the adjacent mountains, and a glimpse of the Bay of Monterey in the distance. It is comparatively free from fogs. The great fertility of its soil makes it a prominent fruit section of the State.

Another district still higher up the mountain, in fact, on its summit, has been cleared, planted to orchards and populated by an intelligent and thrifty class of citizens. In seeking for an appropriate name by which to designate this locality, the term "Skyland" was adopted as about the only one that would overtop "Highland."

A most wonderful and agreeable surprise awaits the traveler who for the first time visits this section of Santa Cruz Mountains. After passing over the various roads which lead to this locality, some through redwood forests, others up steep cañons covered with oak and madrona, one involuntarily utters an exclamation of delight upon emerging into an open country thickly inhabited, and giving evidence, in many beautiful orchards, of a thrifty and prosperous community. Nor is the admiration entirely exhausted on the beautiful scenery and surroundings, for the practical man will see much to admire in the enterprise and industry which have converted these hillsides and plateaus from chamiso and chaparral thickets, to a paradise of vine and fruit trees. Pretty residences, neat lawns, and a profusion of flowers, attest the culture and refinement of the residents of this mountain section.

Vine Hill.

From the city of Santa Cruz one drives northwesterly up a cañon known as "Blackburn Gulch;" on either side are relics of a dense forest of redwood, which many years ago was converted into lumber and building material. Vegetable gardens and small orchards are now to be seen in the place of the towering trees.

At a distance of six or seven miles is a section of country known as Vine Hill. It embraces an area of several square miles of rolling, hilly territory, and has, in its day, contained some of the finest vineyards in the state.

In the neighborhood of one hundred thousand gallons of wine were annually made from the vines of this section of the county, and many thousands of boxes of table grapes were raised here, a specialty being made of late table grapes which did not find their way into the market until November and December.

Soquel.

Historically Soquel is a town of considerable importance; otherwise, it is a pretty little village situated on Soquel Creek, one mile from the Bay of Monterey. In early days it was almost entirely surrounded by immense forests of redwood trees, which long ago have been converted into lumber. The primitive and bustling activity of a lumber camp has changed to the slower but more pretentious thrift of a neat and cozy village, surrounded by hills of orchard and vine, and drawing its sustenance from them.

Here were located the South Coast Paper Mills. There are the usual number of stores, etc., to be found in a town of a few hundred inhabitants.

Minor Resorts.

Santa Cruz is pre-eminently a county of resorts. During the summer months, let one drive in the mountains, and at nearly every hillside cottage he will see pretty girls in hammocks, a game of croquet or tennis, or some other evidence of the summer visitor.

In this county, perhaps to a greater extent than in any other, a person contemplating a summer outing can have a very great variety of attractions to select from. He can go to the coast, where surf bathing is the principal feature, where the air is cool and humid; he can go to Santa Cruz and mingle with the fashionable throng; or he can go to other points on the bay, and enjoy the freedom of camp life. He can go on the mountain, and look down at the bay; sometimes he will be able to look down at the fog when it is driven inland, rolling and tossing like a troubled sea. He can find a sequestered spot hemmed in by wooded hills, where the sea winds never blow. At either of these mountain places there is an abundance of fresh fruits, and if the visitor is

of rural and romantic tastes, he may drive the cows home and milk them. And yet it is not a habitation in a wilderness, as, at the most, a drive of a few hours will take one to a railroad station or postoffice.

Aptos.

Near where Aptos Creek debouches into the Bay of Monterey, about eight miles southeast of Santa Cruz, is situated the little town of Aptos. It is simply a small village, containing a few stores, hotels, etc., but is a shipping point of considerable importance.

From here a walk or ride of a few miles takes one into the redwoods, where the giants lift their heads in clusters, far toward the azure dome; where, in their cool, sequestered shade, grow countless brakes and ferns; where streams rush down the cañons over huge boulders, beneath overhanging willows, here becoming a cascade, there a miniature fall, where the rainbow tints are betrayed in the spray; where all nature a "solemn stillness holds," save those sounds of the sighing trees, the laughing waters, the singing birds, the droning insects, which invite one to that physical repose which induces mental clairvoyance. Nowhere else in the state are to be found such places for rest and recuperation as among the redwoods of the Santa Cruz Mountains.

Twin Lakes Park

This tract, generally known as Twin Lakes, is the appropriate and euphonious name of a Baptist resort and summer encampment established in Santa Cruz in the last years of the 19th century. A committee was appointed to look up sites and consider propositions; and, after traveling over a large part of Central California, and examining many places, and considering several large tenders of land and coin, accepted the proposition of Mr. J. C. Kimble, a resident of Oakland, and owner of one of the most desirable pieces of property in Santa Cruz County. Mr. Kimble gave ten acres of the highest part of this tract, and afterwards increased it by the addition of other pieces and a long, broad stretch of beach, aggregating twenty-two and one-quarter acres

more. A donation from Jacob Schwan increased the tract seven and a fifth acres, and was followed by the purchase from the same party of twelve acres additional, and a perpetual lease of a long strip along the cliff.

The location of this encampment could not be excelled if the state had been thoroughly searched. From the city of Santa Cruz to Aptos is one of the most desirable residence parts of the globe. And of this most desirable part of the Monterey Bay, the Baptists, in point of contiguity to the city of Santa Cruz, steam and railway facilities, bathing facilities, including surf bathing in the open bay, and still salt water bathing in Swan Lake, beauty of natural surroundings, grand marine and mountain views, to say nothing of the pretty little vistas, shady walks, and secluded nooks among the grand oaks which fringe the lakes, certainly demonstrated the conception of their undertaking under a most auspicious star.

The Pajaro Valley

A serious drawback to rapid development of California's resources has been, and still is, to a lesser extent, the legitimate heir of old Spanish grants—large farms. As long as horses and cattle were permitted to graze on lands capable of producing an interest-bearing revenue upon several hundred dollars per acre, not much in the way of development and progression could be expected. But wherever these large farms have been cut up into small holdings, and sold to actual residents, the country has been brought to a high state of prosperity, and the wilderness has been converted into a garden.

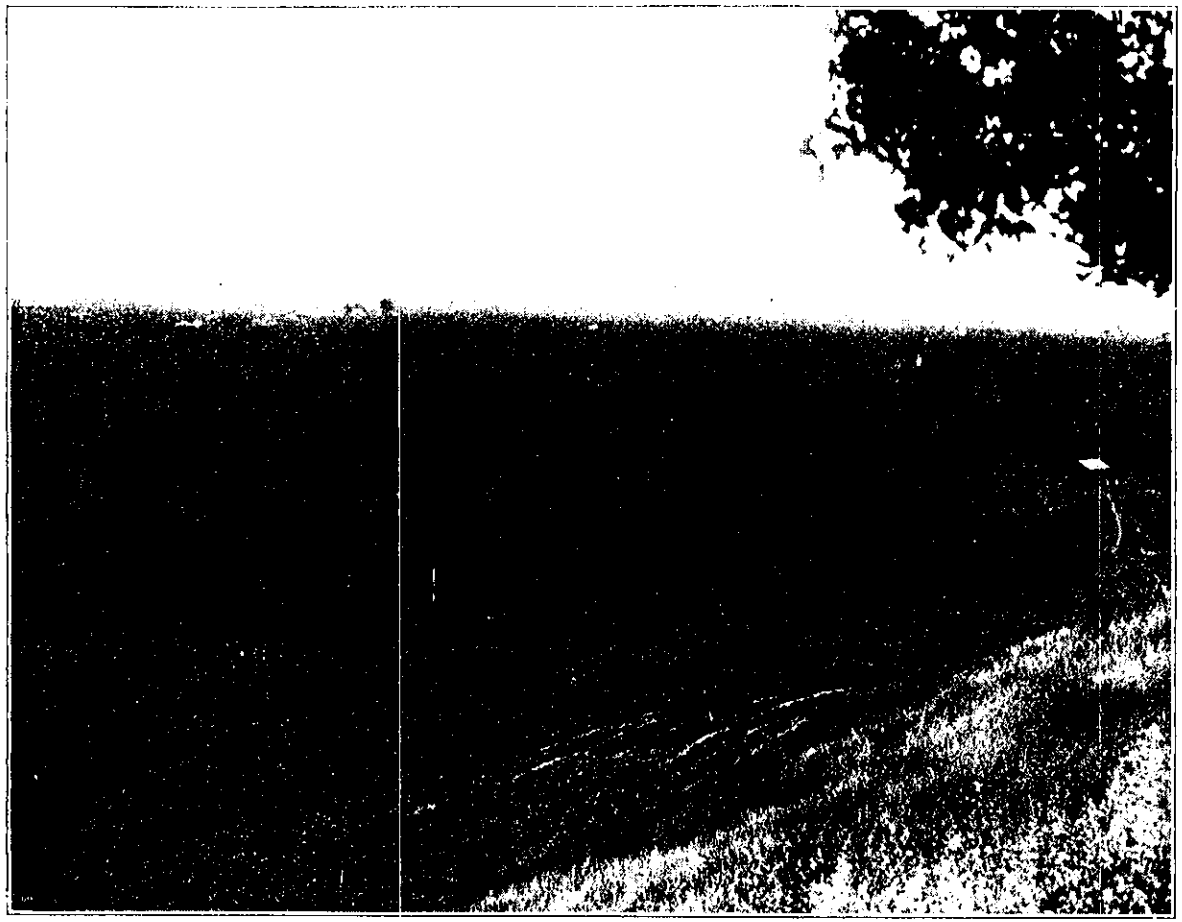
This is the exact condition of affairs in the Pajaro (pronounced Pä-hä-ro) Valley, with the added advantages that the soil here is of unexcelled fertility, and the rainfall always adequate for the production of the most wonderful growth of vegetation.

The Pajaro Valley, the smaller part of which is on the south side of the Pajaro River, and in Monterey County, comprises, with adjacent foothill and mountain valley land, about fifty thousand acres. It is of comparatively circular form, the west side fronting the Bay of Monterey, the foothills of Aptos to the northwest, Loma Prieta looming up darkly to the north, the Santa Cruz Mountains, with redwood cañons and live-oak-covered foothills

east, and the Gabilan Range of mountains and foothills of Monterey County to the south. Standing on an elevation of the Santa Cruz Mountains and looking out toward where the horizon dips in the Pacific, one perceives the Pajaro Valley in all its beauty of form and dress. Near the foothills is a chain of beautiful lakes, and useful, too, in that they furnish water for irrigating berry fields and garden products requiring an excess of moisture. Beyond them one sees the vari-colored fields of wheat, barley, corn, hops, beets, potatoes, and beans, orchards and vineyards, presenting the appearance of a wonderful mosaic. To the left the Pajaro River, with its wide bed of shining sand, winds its sinuous course to the bay. In the greater distance is Watsonville, coolly shaded by many trees, above whose green foliage the white church spires glisten in the sunlight. In the background of the town one sees the dense volume of smoke which pours from the numerous smoke stacks of one of the largest sugar-beet factories in the United States. But a short distance farther the white surf line of the Bay of Monterey marks Camp Goodall; and as one looks down at the pretty picture, in the silence of contemplation he catches the sound of the surges of the sea "as the waves tell their story to the smooth pebbles of the beach," and recede to the embrace of the ocean.

But if this valley is beautiful, and calculated to inspire the lover of the pretty and picturesque, as a fertile and productive locality, appealing to the practical and matter-of-fact individual, it is even more wonderful. Here grows and thrives nearly every variety of product. In the days of wheat and barley, the yield of those cereals in this valley was equal to the crops on the islands of the Sacramento River, where more than one hundred bushels to the acre have been harvested. But the period of the cereal growth in California is rapidly passing away, owing to the greater profits to be obtained from orchards, and in this valley from various kinds of vegetable products. Fields of beans, of potatoes, of sugar beets, and of corn, and of strawberries, have to a great extent taken the place of barley and wheat. Numerous young orchards, and a few of an older growth, attest the fact that the residents of this favored section have been brought to a realization of the adaptability of their soil and climate to horticulture.

The Pajaro Valley is a country of small farms, and not less conspicuously a country of wealthy and well-to-do people. The



PAJARO VALLEY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R L

county records show that there are fewer mortgages on the property in Pajaro Valley than upon any other property in Santa Cruz County. The people are industrious, but thrift does not always follow industry. Something more than a superficial observation of their condition, and the circumstances by which they are surrounded, leads one to believe that their prosperity is due in a greater measure to the wonderful fertility of the soil, small landholdings, and the consequent thorough cultivation of the land, than to anything else.

The people of the valley have a common interest, and the free exchange of ideas and opinions relative to the common good has no doubt been a valuable auxiliary to the prosperity-producing conditions before noted. Among other things, and a paradox in California, Pajaro has an annual fair without a horse race or any kind of gambling.

Such is Pajaro Valley, such is Santa Cruz County, the twin brother of Monterey County in natural advantages and enterprise. Both counties are bound to go far in the coming years. They have already become a great credit to golden California.

INDEX

Monterey and Santa Cruz Counties

A

Page

Abalone ---- 331
Abalone Cove ---- 147
Abrego, Don José ---- 339
Abrego Home ---- 339
Additional Relics of the Natalie ---- 340
Administrators for Missions ---- 210
Agricultural Products ---- 300, 303
Alarcon, Hernando de ---- 59
Alberni, Pedro de ---- 169
Alemany, Rt. Rev. Joseph ---- 343
All stock marked ---- 223
Alta California, first discovered ---- 64
Alvarado has Graham and others arrested ---- 233
Alvarado, Juan Bautista ---- 229, 291, 432
Amador, Rafael, in phenomenal journey ---- 205
American colors hoisted at Custom-house ---- 263
Americans aid insurgents ---- 179
Americans surprised and angered ---- 250
Amesti House ---- 343
Anderson, Dr. C. L. ---- 414
An Era of Changes—The Coming of the "Whites" ---- 52
Anxious to start work on new city ---- 170
Anza and Font ate well ---- 124
Anza a skilled frontiersman ---- 124
Anza leaves Monterey amid tears ---- 129
Anza's mettle tested ---- 122
Apples ---- 411
Apricots ---- 411
Aptos ---- 490
Arguello shows many courtesies ---- 166
Arguello warned of the "Columbia" 165
Argument and bribery tried ---- 206
Arista, General ---- 267
"Army" provided with uniforms ---- 235
Army proceeded to Monterey ---- 229
Arrillaga, José Joaquin de ---- 167
Artesian Wells ---- 303
Arts and Crafts Club, Little Theatre 366
Asilomar ---- 389
Attack on mission arranged ---- 126
Authors, Prominent ---- 370
Avery, Captain ---- 219
Ávila, José Maria ---- 202
Azanza, Viceroy Miguel José ---- 173

B

Bancroft in tribute to Lasuên ---- 162
Bank deposits, Largest ---- 379
Baptisms at Missions ---- 119
Barbarity against Indians ---- 214
Bartlett, J. R. ---- 98
Bathing Beauties ---- 464
Battlefield ---- 387
Battle of Cahuenga Pass ---- 237
Bear Flag is Raised, The ---- 239
"Bear Flag Republic," The ---- 240
Bear Flag Revolt, The ---- 228
Beauty Contests ---- 463
Beauty Pageant ---- 463
Bechdolt, F. R. ---- 150
Before the white man came ---- 41
Begging for their own ---- 134
Ben Lomond ---- 485
Benton, Senator T. H. ---- 251
Big Basin, The ---- 484
Blackburn Gulch ---- 488
Blood fertilized harvest of change ---- 239
Big Trees, The ---- 486
Books and teachers could not be afforded ---- 111
Borica, "Gentleman and Scholar" ---- 168
Borica, Governor ---- 160
Bouchard, Hippolyte de ---- 179
Boulder Creek, Ben Lomond and Felton ---- 486
Bradley ---- 33, 389
Branciforte ---- 403
Branciforte gets views of Fathers ---- 169
Brush with Klamath Indians ---- 252
Bucareli, Viceroy ---- 115
Buelna found buildings vacant ---- 157
Bulb Industry ---- 417
Burroughs, Charles ---- 275

C

Cabrillo, Juan Rodríguez ---- 61
Cahuenga Capitulation ---- 278
California a distinct nation ---- 239
California Grays, The ---- 220
California Powder Works ---- 471
California, origin of name ---- 56
"Californian," first newspaper, The 292
Call, Daniel ---- 188
Campaigns in the '50s ---- 439
Cannon thunders welcome ---- 177
Capitola ---- 483
Captain Pray ---- 221
Capture horses of enemy ---- 253
Carmel ---- 374
Description of ---- 376
Carmel-by-the-Sea ---- 27
Carmel Company organized ---- 219
Carmel Highlands ---- 389
Carnegie Library ---- 474
Carñicer, Fr. Baltasar ---- 172
Carrillo army slips away in darkness ---- 232
Carrillo, José Antonio ---- 228, 271

Page

Carrillo persuaded to disband troops 232
Carrillo plot discovered 237
Carson, Kit 259, 277
Casanova, Angelo 100
Casks of wine reported "spilled" 186
Castro, General 245
Castro, J. B. 390
Castro, José 228
Castro seized Rincon Pass 231
Castroville 34, 389
Catholic Summer Resort 372
Cattle industry grew rapidly 222
Cermenco, Rodriguez 71
Changes, An Era of 52
Chapman, Charles E. 57
Chapman, Joseph 182, 188
Chapman on de Neve 133
Chapman's History of California, the Spanish Period 57
Chapman's picturization 126
Cherries 411
Chico, Col. Mariano 228
Chief Palma gets gift 125
Chiefs had several wives 46
Children in Santa Cruz and Monterey Counties 459
"Chimes of Mission Bells" 100
Chinese in California, The Early 49
Chinese relics unearthed 50
Chualar 32, 393
Churches in Santa Cruz 468-470
Cibola a Myth 60
City of Santa Cruz, The 403
Cleland, Robert Glass 215
Clothing worn at Mission 107
Colonization encouraged 205
Colonization plan for Monterey adopted 288
Colorful Yet Quiet Era, A 138
Colton Hall 343
Colton, Walter, Diary of 281
Appointed Alcalde 292
Establishes first newspaper 292
Summons first jury 293
Colton Hall 343
Commemorating Father Serra's death 146
"Columbia" and "Lady Washington" reach California 165
Commodore Sloat wrote Castro 266
Conquest of Mexico 276
Constansó, Miguel 42
Coñstansó on discovery of Bay of San Francisco 78
Constitution, Version of signing 294
Contemporary developments 164
Continued Work of Father Serra, The 114
Contrast of the times, A 19
Contributions from the Missions 424
Convent 343
Cooper, Captain J. B. R. 347
Cooper Home 347
Coral De Tierra 388
Cordoba laid out the town 170
Corney, Peter 179
Cortés' disappointments 59
Cortés, Hernando 53
County Jail completed 441

Page

County Seat, The 379
Court costs in '55 440
Courts 440
Cows, $4.00 to $5.00 243
Crescent City 421
Crespi, Padre 75, 82
Custom House 347

D

Dahlia City 26
Dairying in Salinas Valley 28
Dana, Richard Henry, Jr. 193
Davenport, Capt. J. P. 219
De Anza, Juan Bautista 120
Description of Mission 102
Diamond in the Gem County, A 473
Diego, Garcia, bishop of the two Californias 211
Die was cast. What would Fremont do? 258
Discovery of Gold 280, 282
Distinguished visitors alike impressed 163
Doak, Thomas W. 188
Doelter, "Pop" Ernest 331
Domestic animals most needed 123
Doña Eulalia's generosity 140
Drake, Sir Francis 65
Drake's departure 67
Duels 439
Durán failed to get prosecution of Vallejo 213
Durán, Father, report of 211

E

Early Chinese in California 49
Early Explorations 59
Early Indians 41
Earthquake and tidal wave, 1840 159
Earthquake disarranged picture 98
Echeandia to be Governor 199
Editorial in San Andreas Independent 282
Emancipation for some Indians 209
England takes a hand 65
Englehardt, Fr. Zephyrin 87, 110
Equipment of trapper 217
Era of tumult, An 197
Estrada, Alférez José 182
Eulalia and children depart 141
Every movable object stolen 157
Extract from letter to Fr. Francisco Palou 287

F

Facts about early Indians 41
Fages and wife reconciled 141
Fages, Captain 115
Fages, Pedro 82, 87
Fages replaced 118
Fages wrote Arguello 165
Family troubles made public 140
Farming 300
Father Iiaz 121
Father Junipero Serra—His Life 72
Father Serra arrives at Monterey 81
Father Serra's Successors 154

	Page
Felipe de Neve	132
Felton	486
Fermin, Padre	163
Ferranti, Peter	152
Ferrelo, Bartolome	63
Ferries	303
Field, Maria Antonia	72
Field, Mrs. Thomas J.	196
Figueroa, José	204
Figueroa makes land grants	206
Final issue of Santa Cruz News	445
Find priestly vestments	159
"Finds" in gold regions	283
Fires	335, 461
First brick house	374
First College in California	388
First "Fourth of July" in history	130
First frame building	348
First Holy Mass sung	83
First hostile act of Bear Flag uprising	253
First legal California pueblo	137
First newspaper in California	292
First ship with American flag to encircle the globe	165
First sight of Monterey, The	61
Five missions were to be located	87
Flores, José Maria	271
Forerunning the Bear Flag Revolt	228
Forest Theatre	366
Foreword	5
Ford, Henry	264
Ford, Lieutenant	258
Foreigners arrive in numbers	234
Fort Romie	34
$45,000,000 for Indian pupils	110
Four hundred persons in 1800	174
Franchise	318
Fraternal organizations in Santa Cruz	470
"Fray Junipero Serra"	149
Free trappers, Facts about	216
Fremont and Bear Flag Revolt	246
Fremont at San Rafael	259
Fremont, John C.	238, 242
Fremont's motley army	258
Fremont's course criticised and praised	253
Fremont's midnight approach	259
Fruit	301
Fruits and Nuts	243
Fruit Trees and Vines	303
Function of the Mission	105
Fur trader always drew the curious	217

G

Galvez, José de	74
Garces, Father	121
Gem County	403
Gila-Colorado junction	121
Gillespie, Lieut. A. H.	188
Gilroy, John	152
Gimeno, José	152
Gold, discovery of	280, 282
Stories of phenomenal "finds"	283
Harrowing tales	283
Boosts California	283
Golden Age of California Missions	175
Golden Gate attracts	123
Gomez, Francisco	75
Gomez, Luciano	182
Gomez, Manuel	182
Gonzales	32
Gonzales, Fr. Francisco	172
Good springs and pasturage found	122
Good wine could be made	243
Governor Fages	138
Governors in Mexican Era	198
Governors of 1836	228
Governor Victoria hurried south	201
Graham, Isaac	229, 432, 437
Grape growing	35
Grasses, List of native	414
Gray, Capt. Robert	165
Gray, Percy	150
Greene, Harry A.	159
Greenfield	32
Grigsby, John	254
Griffin, Allen	221
Guerra, José De la	184
Guinn, Prof. J. M.	54
Gutierrez, Lieut.-Colonel	228
Gutierrez, Nicholas	291
Gypsum in quantities	38

H

Hanna, Archbishop E. J.	152
Hartnell, William	203
Harvesting was laborious	106
"Haunted forest," The	147
Heceta led a small expedition	123
Height of Santa Cruz Mountains	419
Hickson, F. J.	150
Hidalgo goes to war	176
Hide and tallow business important	226
Hide and tallow ships	226
Highland and Skyland	488
Hijar and Padrés cause trouble	205
Hijar's commission revoked	205
Historians disagree	138
Horse Racing	442
Horses	301
Horticulture in Santa Cruz County	410
Hotel Del Monte, location	22
Description	26
Hotels in Monterey	332
Hot Springs	37
House of Four Winds	348
How whales are captured	220
Humpback season	219

I

Ide, William B.	254
Ignacio de Valle	158
Implements very primitive	105
"In and Out of the Old Missions"	155
Incidents of Mexican Era	212
Incorporation	308
Indian revolt of 1824	198
Indians, Articles made by	48
Indians friends of Anza	125
Indians unfriendly to Spaniards	126
Inventories	426
Iron and Coal	38
Iturbide, Don Augustin de	189

J

Page

Jacks, David ---- 372
James, George Whatron ---- 155
Jaunt throughout the County, A ---- 483
Jayme, Father Louis ---- 127
Jiminez, Fortuno ---- 55
Jochmus, A. C. ---- 294
Jolon ---- 34
José, Miguel ---- 72
Juan Bautista de Anza ---- 120
Junipera Serra Festival ---- 149
Jury summoned, First ---- 293

K

Kearney, Stephen W. ---- 276
Kendrick, Capt. James ---- 165
King, C. H. ---- 393
King City ---- 33, 393
Knight, William ---- 254
Kuster, Edward G. ---- 364

L

"Lady Washington," The ---- 165
Laperouse, Comte de ---- 164
Lapérouse describes Mission ---- 94
Larkin appointed Consul ---- 244
Larkin House ---- 351
Larkin saw matter as did Sloat ---- 269
Larkin, Thomas O. ---- 242, 276
Lash was applied ---- 112
Lassoed from Ambush ---- 183
Lasuén acts promptly ---- 155
Lasuén dies ---- 172
Lasuén, Father Fermin de ---- 154, 394
Law to expel friars ---- 208
Layton, Charles ---- 353
Leese, Jacob ---- 245
Leidesdorff, W. A. ---- 251
Letters of Hugo Reid ---- 45
Lezere, Paul ---- 477
Library ---- 302
Live Stock ---- 303
Live Stock breeding ---- 29
Lopez, Fr. Baldomero ---- 424
Los Angeles in 1777 ---- 137
Lost in sand dunes ---- 122
Lure of Spain, The ---- 53

M

McChristian, Pat ---- 255
McGroarty, John S. ---- 132
Mares, $5.00 to $6.00 ---- 243
Marriage Custom, A ---- 46
Marriages at Missions ---- 119
Marshall, James A. ---- 280
Marshall, James W. ---- 259
Medicine Shows ---- 297
Meet the Counties ---- 17
Mendoza, Bercerra de ---- 54
Merritt, Ezekiel ---- 253
Mervine, Captain ---- 274
Mestres, Father Ramon M. ---- 101, 149
Methodist Episcopal "retreat" ---- 372
Mexican Era, The ---- 192
Mexico began hostilities ---- 266
Mexico declares for secularization ---- 209
Mexico to Monterey, three months' voyage ---- 176

Page

Micheltorena capitulated ---- 237
Micheltorena goes to Los Angeles ---- 235
Micheltorena, Governor ---- 211, 292
Miles and Phelps Correspondence ---- 453-457
Minor Resorts ---- 489
Miss California ---- 463, 465
"Miss Santa Cruz" ---- 464, 465
Mission is unique ---- 102
Mission quadrangle completed ---- 95
Mission San Gabriel reached ---- 123
Mission Soledad ---- 394
Mission Statistics ---- 158
Mission story of a later day ---- 212
Missions greatly deteriorated ---- 211
Missions—Table showing work of ---- 119
Moncada, Capt. Rivera y ---- 75, 118
Monterey, climate ---- 22
  Mecca of artists ---- 22
  Landmarks ---- 22
  Fish pack values ---- 25
  Water front ---- 26
  Bay harbor project ---- 36
  Peninsula ---- 148
  Council to select new Governor ---- 167
  Welcomes Governor Sola ---- 176
  Remained capital of California ---- 193
  Whaling company ---- 221
  Surrendered to American fleet ---- 235
  Original county ---- 285
  Selected as capital ---- 288
  Becomes subject to Mexico ---- 288
  Colonization plan adopted ---- 288
  Notable year in annals of ---- 292
  First stage production ---- 293
  Version of Constitution of ---- 294
  Incorporated ---- 295, 308
  Veto reincorporation ---- 307
  Present day ---- 312
  First railroad ---- 312
  Description of ---- 323
  Library association formed ---- 295
Monterey, Conde de ---- 68
Monterey County ---- 285
  Promising communities ---- 389
  Products ---- 19, 30
  Location ---- 20
  Description ---- 20
  Ramble through, A ---- 19
  Industries ---- 26
  Fruit Growing ---- 30
  Highways ---- 36
  Resorts ---- 37
Monterey Peninsula, description ---- 21
  Seventeen-Mile Drive ---- 22
Monterey Presidio ---- 86
Montgomery, Captain ---- 261
Monument of "Old Gabriel" ---- 388
Moraga, Lieutenant ---- 124
Mora, Jo J. ---- 101
More changes—Beginning of discord 172
Mormon Battalion ---- 276
Moss, Capt. Charles ---- 390
Moss Landing ---- 33, 397
Motive of Bouchard Expedition ---- 186
Mountains, Height of ---- 419
Mulligan, John ("Milligan") ---- 188

Page

Munrás, Don Estéban ... 195
Munras Home ... 351

N

Narrative of a Mission Indian ... 426
Neophytes fled ... 158
Neophyte vacations ... 109
Newberry, Perry ... 149
"New Company" of Portuguese Whalers ... 219
New Governor starts trouble ... 200
Newspaper, First ... 292
Nineteen-Mile Valley View Drive ... 482
No fences in the country ... 223
None received wages ... 107
Nuggets of Gold ... 280

O

Offenses to be dealt with ... 112
Oil fell to twenty-five cents ... 219
Olbés, Padre ... 157
"Old Company," The ... 219
Olives ... 412
One shot ends "battle" ... 229
Only Spanish Governor buried in California ... 174
Other visiting ships ... 167

P

Pacheco House ... 352
Pacific Grove, location ... 26
Points of interest ... 26
Founding ... 373
Population ... 374
Pacific House ... 352
Pacific Sentinel ... 446
Paintings on Wood ... 97
Pajaro ... 399
Pajaro Valley Apples ... 31
Pajaro Valley, The ... 491-495
Palou, Father ... 115
Paraiso Springs ... 400
"Patriot" or "pirate" craft ... 179
Peaches ... 411
Pebble Beach ... 27
Peninsula Daily Herald ... 221
People fond of dress and pleasure ... 193
Perez, Juan ... 75
Period from 1782 to 1800 ... 138
Petition ... 317
Petit-Thouars Visits Carmel Valley ... 96
Phelps and Miles Correspondence ... 453-457
Pico, Andrés ... 271
Pico, Pío ... 203
Picturesque free trapper ... 216
Pinnacles ... 401
Pious Fund diverted to Mexican treasury ... 211
Point Pinos Light House ... 353
Point Pinos was sighted! ... 70
Points of Interest in Salinas Valley ... 387
Points of Interest in Santa Cruz City ... 466
Points of Interest in the Old Capital 339
Polk's instructions to Larkin ... 244
Population of Pacific Grove ... 374
Port of San Francisco praised ... 129

Page

Portola, Gaspar de ... 286
Possession formally taken ... 83
Potatoes ... 437
Precious paintings, etc. ... 101
Prepare for revolt ... 271
Present Day Monterey ... 312
Present Day Santa Cruz contrasted with that of yesterday ... 434
"Preserve harmony with Missionary Fathers" ... 115
Presidio ... 352
Pressure put upon Missions ... 207
Priestly robes found ... 159
Proclamation to Sonomans ... 256
Promising Communities of Monterey County ... 389
Pronunciamento ... 271
Provisions dispatched on mules ... 115
Prudon, Capt. Victor ... 254

Q

Quicksilver mines ... 35

R

Railroads ... 312, 449
Rainfall in Salinas Valley ... 28
Read between lines of Benton's letters ... 251
Real, Fr. Jose-Maria del ... 97
Reasons for Bear Flag ... 255
"Reglamento" The ... 132
Remains of oldest missions ... 38
Remarkable scene described ... 144
Removal of mission San Carlos to the new site ... 90
Republic duly declared ... 257
"Republic of California" ... 240
Resolutions ... 298
Resorts, Minor ... 489
Revere, Lieut. J. W. ... 264
Revolt broke out in 1831 ... 201
Revolution broke out in 1844 ... 236
Revolution talk current ... 236
Richardson, William Antonio ... 206
Rivera has change of heart ... 130
Roach, Hon. P. A. ... 329
"Road to Monterey, The" ... 153
Roca, Jose ... 169
Robert Louis Stevenson House ... 353
Roberts, Edmund ... 96
Robinson, Alfred ... 232
Robinson on the "cholos" ... 234
Rodeos held twice a year ... 223
Rogers, Harrison G. ... 225
Roméu, Jose Antonio de ... 141
"Rose of the Rancho" ... 149
Rumors of French invasion ... 169

S

St. Catherine's Academy ... 343
Salazar, Fr. Alonzo ... 424
Salinas ... 31
County seat ... 379
Wealthiest community ... 380
Population ... 380
Description ... 380
Products ... 380, 383
Salinas Burbank potato ... 30

Page

Salinas has yearly Rodeo 224
Salinas Valley 27
Salvatierra, Juan Maria 112
Salvation Army farm colonies 34
Salzar, Father Alonso Isidoro 170
San Andreas Independent, Editorial on Gold 282
San Antonia Arrives, The 80
San Antonio de Padua 401
San Ardo 33
San Carlos Church 360
San Carlos Mission 363
San Carlos Mission—Yesterday and Today 92
San José, The, lost 79
San Lorenzo Paper Mills 452
San Lucas 33
Santa Clara Mission founded 130
Santa Cruz:
- Main shipping point 437
- Incorporated 452
- Industries 452
- Points of interest 466
- Scenery 466
- Population in '79 466
- Churches 468-470
- Fraternal organizations 470
- Residences 470
- Foremost industry 470

Santa Cruz County 403
- Fine beaches 40
- Big Trees 40
- Mountains 148
- Climate 404
- Called Gem County 404
- Location 404
- Vista 407
- Resources 407
- Prominent Businesses 408
- Products 409
- Viticulture 410
- Horticulture 410
- County jail completed 441
- Court costs 441
- Newspapers 444
- Railroads 449
- Population 450

Santa Cruz—Her Birthday 423
Santa Cruz News 444
Sawmills 302
"Santa Rosa", The, and her aliases 180
Schools in 1857 458
Scott, William, brings news 263
Sears, Mrs. Capt. John 255
Seaside 402
- Location 25

Secularization to be gradual 209
Semple, Dr. R. 262
Senan, Father José 170
Señánc, Fr. José 184
Sentinel, The 443
Sequoias 486
Serra buried near Crespi 145
Serra, Father Junipero 72, 357
Serra, Father, realizes end 141
Serra Memorial Chapel 101
Serra Monument 357

Page

Serra Pilgrimage, The 151
Serra's trip successful 117
Seventeen-Mile Drive 22, 25
Sheep, $2.00 per head 243
Sherman and Halleck's Headquarters 363
Sherman, Lt. Wm. T. 363
Shiploads of silks and finery 227
Simoneau, Jules 354
Sister Cities of Monterey 372
Sitjar, Fr. Buenaventura 172
Six hundred lashes and six years on chain gang 184
Skirmishes 275
Skyland 488
Slidell given copy of despatch 245
Sloat, Commodore John Drake 360
Sloat, John Drake, arrived 262
Sloat Monument 360
Slocum, Wm. N. 444
Smith compelled to flog a man 215
Smith, Francis R. 102
Smith's, Jediah, Expedition 215
Soap factory described 225
Soil of the Salinas Valley 27
Sola, Don Pablo Vicente de 176, 189
Sola's reception 176
Soledad 32
Sonoma also founded 206
Soquel 439
Sorentine attempts restoration 99
Spanish fandango contest 152
Spanish landing at Monterey 68
Species of whales found 218
Sportsman's section 35
Spreckels 34
Stage production, First 293
Stanford, Mrs. Leland 100
Stearns, Don Abel 245
Stevenson, Robert Louis 368
Stock and beef cattle 301
Stock raising 413
Stockton, Commodore R. F. 268
Stoddard, Charles Warren 357, 368
Stoddard—His grave 357
Stone Quarries 302
Storm, Peter 255
Story of a "brave" whaler 221
Stratagem to fool the enemy 184
Sugar beets grown 30
Summer Home of Governor Alvarado 388
Sutter, John A. 236
Swift, G. P. 255

T

Tapis, Fr. Estévan 163, 172
Tassajara Hot Springs 402
Tax 296
Taxable Property 304
Taylor, Bayard 370
Taylor, General 267
Taylor, Lieut. William 183
Ten missionaries sent 88
Theatre of the Golden Bow 364
Theatres—Forest Theatre and Arts and Crafts 366
Theatres—The First in California 363

Page
Theatres—The Latest in California 364
Theatrical Companies taxed 297
"There she blows!" 220
Thermometer, 44 to 86 degrees 243
Thompson, B. K. 275
Thompson, William 432
Thoroughbred horses 29
Timber 418
"'Tis Fremont!" 260
Todd, William 264
Towns of Monterey County 32
Tragedy of Santa Cruz Mission 159
Trapping and trading in furs 215
Travel in 1850 434
Trescany, Don Alberto 367
Trouble soon came 178
Turnpike Roads 303
Twelve governors of the period 198
Twenty-four cents in treasury 235
Twin Lakes Park 490
Two bells provided 95
Two pageants 149

U

Under Mexican rule 192
U. S. determined to acquire California 241
Used as a penal colony 205

V

Vallejo appointed Military Governor 233
Vallejo, General M. G., a butcher 212
Vallejo, José 182
Vallejo, Mariano Guadalupe 204
Valley of the Carmelo inspected 90
Vancouver in San Francisco Bay 166
Vancouver pinnacles 37
Varela Serbulo 271
Velasco, Luis de 68
Veto bill reincorporating Monterey 307
Viader, Fr. José 172
Vicente, Augustin Fernandez de San 189
Victorious America 266
Viñals, Father José 172
Vine Hill 488

Page
Viño, Alejo 84
Viscaiño, Don Sebastian 41, 286, 287
Viscaino, Juan 75
Viscaino (Serra Tree) 367
Visiting ships, 1795-1800 167
Viticulture in Santa Cruz County 410

W

Walker found Fremont at Sutter's Fort 249
Walker, Joseph 216
Warner, John 245
Washington Hotel 367
Watson, Judge John 441
Watsonville 34
  Location 473
  Incorporated 473
  Ups and downs 474
  Products 481
Watsonville in 1855 441
Weston, Herb 150
Whale Fisheries 302
Whale fishing fading 218
Whalers bartered for supplies 218
Whalers carried New England made goods for exchange 218
Whaling Station 368
What they wore 107
Wheat produced one-hundred fold 243
Whiskey recipe 296
Why Pico and Castro quit 270
"Winter Paradise" 26
Wines and liquors taxed 296
Wilson, Harry L. 150
Woods, Marcy 150
Wool 302
Work of various missions 119
Writers and Their Landmarks 368

Y

"Yerba Buena" sprang up 206

Z

Zamorano, Augustin 203